

LIST OF
CHARLES
THE FIFTH
EMPEROR



Handwritten initials or signature

1711

T H E
H. I S T O R Y
O F

CHARLES the Vth
Emperor and King of SPAIN, the Great
HERO of the *House of Austria* :

CONTAINING

The most Remarkable Occurrences that happen'd
in the World for the space of 56 Years, all
Nations being in a greater or less measure en-
gag'd in the Contests and Confusions of those
Times; and giving an Account

- I. How the *House of Austria* first came to the Crown of *Spain*,
and whence the present Contests between the Emperor and
King of *France* had their original.
- II. Of the Rebellion of the Commons of *Spain*, and the true
Causes and Success of it.
- III. Of the Wars with *France*, and taking that King Prisoner.
- IV. Of the Sacking of *Rome*.
- V. Of the Reformation, and Wars which ensu'd on that account.
- VI. Of the Revolutions and Troubles in *Denmark* and *Sweden*,
on account of Religion.
- VII. Of the Affairs of *England*, and Marriage of King *Philip* and
May Queen of *England*.
- VIII. Of the Wars with the *Turks*.
- IX. Of the taking of *Tunis*, and other Places on the Coast of
Africk, with the unfortunate Expedition of *Algiers*.
- X. Of the Conquest of the vast Kingdoms of *Peru*, and *Mexico*, in
America. And
Lastly, Of the most Heroick Action of that Emperor's Life, his
voluntary resigning up all his vast Dominions, and retiring
to a Monastery.

Written in *Spanish* by D. F. Prudencio de Sandoval,
Bishop of *Pamplona*, and Historiographer to King
Philip III. of *Spain*; made *English*
By Capt. JOHN STEVENS.

L O N D O N : Printed for R. Smith at the Angel and Bible
without Temple-Bar. MDCCIII.

Robt. Mitchell Post. 15.

To His GRACE

JAMES

Duke of *Ormond*, Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, &c.

My Lord,

I Should be wholly at a loss how to accost your Grace, did I present you a Work of another nature ; but the Martial Spirit that reigns throughout this whole Book, emboldens me to approach so Noble a Person, who has made War his Exercise and Delight. It is my Misfortune to be incapable of giving the World the true Idea of your Grace's Character ; but at the same time my Happiness is, your Name is above it ; and as it were needless to describe the Light of the Sun, so visible to all the Universe ; so will it be to blazon your Actions, so publickly perform'd on the Theatre of Mars, where all *Christendom* have been the Spectators. Where the subject is above Panegyrick, Eloquence is at a loss, and the blunt Language

DEDICATION.

guage of the Camp is as harmonious, as the lofty Figures of the Schools. Mean Souls are the proper Object of Flattery; they have no real Value, and are therefore glad to be sooth'd into some opinion of themselves; the Great, the Noble are rais'd high above it; they are so far from coveting what may seem more than their due, that they can scarce hide their Blushes at the bare relation of their Merit.

I have resolv'd, my Lord, to confine myself to the narrow bounds of an Epistle. I will not run out to play the Historian, your Grace's Life will require a Pen as able as our Author *D. Prudencio de Sandoval*; nor can I presume to act the Orator, your Praises will demand another *Pliny*. Were I fitly qualify'd with Words, I had rather employ them to obtain my Pardon for this Presumption, and yet I come with Confidence, without making that acknowledgment; because, tho' the Volume be small, the Contents are great, noble, and worthy You. No less than *Charles V.* that mighty Emperor, and King of *Spain*, the Honour of the House of *Austria*, the Soul of War, the Conqueror of Kings, the Dread of *Infidels*, and, to be short, the Glorious Hero, who in Person Travell'd over the better part of *Europe* spreading the Terror of his Arms, and by his Commanders into all the
four

DEDICATION.

four parts of the known World, subduing both the North and South *America*; this Glorious, this Renowned Monarch is now presented to your Grace, suing for your protection to these small remains of him, and all his much admir'd Actions.

None so proper a Patron for the Life of *Charles V.* as your Grace, who, despising Dangers, has so often appear'd in Arms, in Defence of his Progeny the House of *Austria*, who has Inherited his Martial Spirit, and who has vy'd with him for Generosity and Greatness of Mind. His Age and this seem to run parallel in all the Bloody effects of War, and You to cope with him in sharing all the Perils and Toils of that Heroick Exercise. No Reading can so well amuze your leisure Moments, as the relation of such great and martial Exploits. Here, like *Alexander*, you may please your self with a greater *Achilles* than the Conqueror of *Troy*. It may be objected, he wants a *Homer* to sing his Praises; but the defect of a fabulous Poet is more than recompenc'd by a faithful Historian; Truth here supplies the place of Fiction; and a glorious Monarch, Born to Empire, and Conqueror of Empires, appears instead of a petty *Grecian* Prince, who has made so great a Noise for subduing one only City.

This, my Lord, may be a subject worthy your Grace's Entertainment, in that

DEDICATION.

little leasure you can procure amidst such great Employments. I dare not mention what is done in translating and contracting this from the Voluminous *Spanish*, being but too sensible how unworthy it is of your Patronage on that account, but must plead the Merit of the Historian *D. Prudencio de Sandoval*, and the dignity of the subject he handles. This alone shall make my Apology, and I shall confide in your Grace's innate Goodness for my Defence, as well knowing that true Generosity looks upon the sincerity of the intention, tho' the performance falls much short of expectation. With this assurance I lay my small Offering at your Grace's Feet, fully satisfy'd your noble Spirit will not deny it a favourable Acceptance, nor me the Honour of calling my self,

My Lord,

Your Grace's most Humble,

and most Obedient Servant,

John Stevens.

THE

T H E

P R E F A C E.

IT seems altogether needless to say any thing in behalf of the subject of this History. The Emperor Charles V. is a Hero too well known not to be welcom in all Languages, and this time seems more particularly to require an Account of him. He was the greatest Monarch of the House of Austria; which, tho' it had long before been in possession of the Empire, without any interruption in Elections, yet in him first came to the Hereditary Succession to the Crown of Spain. The Pretensions to that Kingdom having at this time involv'd the better part of Europe in a Bloody War, the Houses of Austria and Bourbon resolving to decide their Tit'es by the Sword, we shall here see the Original whence the first of them derives its Claim; we shall see the Martial Exploits of many Years betwixt France and Spain on the like Pretensions to the Dukedoms of Milan and Burgundy, and shall find in them the Seeds of all the fatal Fars of those two Nationsever since. And to say the truth, this may pass for a general History of the World during

The Preface.

this Emperor's time ; for under him hapned the great Changes in Religion, which cost many Thousands of Lives in Germany, Sweden, and Denmark ; France never enjoy'd much Rest, taking all Advantages against him ; England at times espous'd both Parties, Italy was wasted on account of Milan, and Hungary was powerfully Defended against the mighty Armies of Solymán the Magnificent ; the Coasts of Asia and Africk were Infested by the Christian Fleets, Tunis was taken, and Argier in vain Besieg'd ; but above all, the noblest part of America was subdu'd in the great Empires of Mexico and Peru, by the Armies of this most Glorious Monarch. The whole course of his Life was a continu'd Series of Noble and Heroick Actions ; but that which crown'd them all, was his last and greatest, when after so many Victories, and such immense Conquests, he overcame himself, and voluntarily resign'd so many Kingdoms he was possess'd of, retiring to live poor in a Monastery among religious Men.

This mighty Prince, so successful in his Life, so happy in his Death, was no less fortunate in an Historian. D. F. Prudencio de Sandoval, Historiographer to King Philip III. of Spain, and Bishop of Pamplona, who undertook to write his Life ; and has perform'd it so successfully, as to receive the applause and approbation of all that are acquainted with him. He had, whilst living, the reputation
of

The Preface,

of a Person of singular Probity of Life. He was excellently qualify'd for an Historian, being a just impartial Man and lover of Truth, and of extraordinary Natural Parts, improv'd by the best Education and abundance of Learning. But the better to enable him to compile his Work, he had encouragement from the King, and by that means the command of all Archives, Records, and Original Papers, that might any ways be a help to him, as sufficiently appears by a vast number of them inserted in his History. Nor was this all, for living under Philip II. and III. the Son and Grandson of Charles V. he was acquainted with several persons of Note, who had liv'd under that Emperour, and were Eye-witnesses to many things he delivers. With these helps, and Writing for Spain, where such a History was much coveted, he compos'd two large Volumes in Folio, a Work universally coveted and esteem'd by most ingenious persons that understand the Spanish Tongue.

There is no doubt but some would have been pleas'd to have seen this Noble History entire in English, but those being the lesser number there was no means of giving them that satisfaction, the Charge of Printing such great Volumes being excessive, and the Buyers at that rate too few. This was the Reason of Abridging, that since he could not appear in his full proportion, we might at least have Charles V. in Miniature. The Case is the same

The Preface

same in this small Volume in respect of the great ones; those treat of things at large, and with the minutest Circumstances; this represents the same in little, but yet as Lively, for here is nothing material retrench'd, but all things brought into a smaller compass. However, for the satisfaction of the Reader it will not be amiss, to show how so small an Abridgment can contain all the substance of two large Volumes. It is therefore first to be observ'd, That the Spanish is Printed in a very large Character, in so much, that one Sheet of this small Letter contains at least four of the other. Besides, Sandoval, as a Learned Man, dilates and runs out upon Actions, for the Ornament of his History, which may be truly represented in much fewer words. He having the advantage, as was said before, of Original Papers and Records, for the greater Authority, has inserted them at length, filling many Pages with them, when the Matter contain'd in them might be comprehended in a few Lines. To instance some particular Matters, either left out or abridg'd, will not be unpleasing; and it must be observ'd, that every Chapter of the Translation contains a Book of the Original. In the very first Book the Matter which is only an Introduction to the Life of our Hero, is brought into much less Room, yet so as to shew the posture of Affairs in the World, before he came to make so great a Figure in it. The Rebellion in Spain is handled at large, yet so that
many

The Preface:

many very minute Matters are pass'd by, and abundance of Letters left out, which would only have serv'd to fill up Paper. In Articles of Peace, or in any other Agreement; as particularly concerning the Ceremony of exchanging the King of France's two Sons, when left Hostages in Spain, for releasing of him, the Matter is briefly compriz'd in few Lines, without inserting the great bulk of Words, which in those Cases are us'd for Form, and would here be of little or no use. Long Speeches, Discourses and Dialogues between great Men, all which, for the most part, having never been penn'd upon the spot, are fram'd into the Language of the Historian, upon a general information of what pass'd on those occasions, are reduc'd to that primitive simplicity of relating the subject Matter discuss'd or deliver'd, without lashing out into formal Harangues. In several Books the description of Triumphal Arches erected at Sevil to receive the Emperor, Reflections on the League between the Princes of Italy and Kings of France and England, long Letters to several Persons, a Treaty betwixt the Emperor, France and England, which came to nothing, tedious proceedings and Letters concerning the Challenge betwixt the Emperor and King of France, and a Discourse of the Duty and Privileges of Heralds omitted, and only hints given of what is in them material. Miracles are every where left out, and in all places

The Preface.

places where there happen to be Repetitions, either through oversight, or to remind the Reader of any Matter, they are quite cut off; as are sometimes long Lists of Names, which would be no advantage to the English Reader. The Justification of the Florentine War, an account of a Spanish Soldier call'd John de Urbina; several solemn Receptions of the Emperor; Reflections on several Persons; Instructions to Embassadors; Relations of Matters somewhat foreign from this History, and many other things too long to mention particularly, are brought into few Words, so that they are intelligible and not tedious. In fine, all possible Care has been taken to omit or retrench nothing of the material and solid part of History. and to lop off only as much as might be spar'd without any blemish to the main Body. It must also be observ'd, that tho' it was said a Chapter of the English had been made out of every Book of the Spanish, yet the 21st Chapter contains not only the 21st Book, which had not substance enough, but part of the 22d Book, which continues the Relation begun in the other, and therefore ought not to be divided.

N. The IId. Book ought to begin at the
Seventeenth Chapter.

The

The CONTENTS.

- Chap. 1. **T**HE latter days of Ferdinand, and Isabel, or Elizabeth, King and Queen of Castile and Aragon; the Queens Death; Philip succeeds to Castile in Right of his Wife Joanna; he Dyes; Ferdinand Governs for his Daughter, who is Distracted; he Dies, and leaves all his Domonions to his Grandson Charles. Page 1
- Chap. 2. The Government of Spain settled; Charles Proclaim'd King; Rebellion in Sicily; War in Navarre; Troubles in Castile; Account of Barbaruffa, and Actions of Spaniards in Africk; the Cardinals Government; who Monsieur de Gevers was; Rise of Martin Luther 16
- Chap. 3. King Charles comes into Spain, holds the Cortes, or Parliament of Castile and Aragon, is Sworn King by those People, the Catalonians and Valencians; is Elected Emperor; original of the Rebellion in Valencia; that in Austria; Actions of the Moors. 30
- Chap. 4. The original of Ferdinand Cortes the famous Conqueror of Mexico; his Rise in the Indies; he lands on the Continent; builds a Town, marches towards Mexico, Wars with the Tlascallans, is receiv'd in Mexico, beaten out again, beseges and takes the City, and subdues all the Country 46
- Chap. 5. The Cortes held in Galicia; His Majesty's Voyage into England, and thence into Holland; Toledo and many other Cities and Towns rebel; Medina del Campo Burnt 62
- Chap. 6. The further account of the Troubles in Castile, till the Rebels attempted to secure the Cardinal Governour and King's Council, with the progress and end of the Rebellion in Valencia 78
- Chap. 7. The Ordinances drawn up by the Rebels for the Emperor to sign; he appoinis the Constable and Admiral of Castile Governours, together with the Cardinal; other Actions of the Rebels 97
- Chap. 8. The Rebels appoint D. Peter Giron their General; then Discard him, and give the Place to John de Padilla; they take Torrelobaton; the Nobility

CONTENTS

<i>bility Tordefillas. Several Treaties of Accommodation come to nothing</i>	Page 108
Chap. 9. <i>The farther Proceedings between the Royal Party and Rebels; the Battle of Villalar, which decided the Quarrel; Valladolid, Toledo, and all the Country reduc'd; Traitors Executed, and a general Pardon</i>	118
Chap. 10. <i>The Emperor's Coronation; his Wars in Navarre, Flanders, and Italy; the French drove out of Milan; Rhodes taken by the Turks</i>	128
Chap. 11. <i>The Emperor in Spain; Rebellion of Majorca suppress'd; a notable Duel; Bourbon goes into the Emperor's Service; Actions of English and Flemish in France; French expell'd Milan; Fuente-rabia recover'd; Marfeilles Besieg'd; the Siege rais'd</i>	144
Chap. 12. <i>The King of France enters Italy, takes Milan, and lays Siege to Pavia; several small Actions of the Imperialists; they are Reinforc'd by 12000 Germans; the Battle of Pavia; the French Routed; King Francis taken, with many Men of Note, and many more Slain</i>	159
Chap. 13. <i>The French quite expell'd Italy; Conditions of Peace offer'd on both sides; King Francis carry'd into Spain; a great Conspiracy against the Emperor disappointed; Discoveries in America, and Conquest of Peru</i>	176
Chap. 14. <i>The Articles of Peace concluded at Madrid betwixt France and Spain; the King of France Marries the Emperor's Sister, and is set at Liberty; the Emperor Marries the Princess of Portugal; proceedings concerning the Morisco's</i>	189
Chap. 15. <i>The War renew'd in Lombardy; Articles of the League against the Emperor; French Apology and Answer to it; Cremona taken by the Confederates; Rome enter'd by the Spaniards and Colonna's; Germans in Italy</i>	203
Chap. 16. <i>The Cortes of Castile refuse the Emperor Supplies; the War in Italy; Rome taken and sack'd by the Imperialists; Imprisonment of the Pope; Actions of Lautrec in Italy; the whole manner of the Challenge between the Emperor and the King of France.</i>	218
	Chap.

CONTENTS.

- Chap. 17. *The French Invade Italy with a mighty Army; lay Siege to Naples, where most of them perish; they are no more successful in Lombardy; Genoa made a free State; Articles of Peace concluded on between the Emperor and France* P. 231
- Chap. 18. *The Emperor goes over into Italy, concludes a Peace with the Venetians, restores the Duke of Milan; the Ceremony of his Coronation; Actions of the great Pyrate Barbaruffa.* 244
- Chap. 19. *A full account of the Florentine War, which City is reduc'd, made a Dukedom, and given to Alexander de Medicis; the Emperor in Germany; Diet at Ausburg; Troubles caus'd by the Lutherans; and two young Princes of France Ransom'd* 257
- Chap. 20. *The Diet at Ratisbon; Solyman Invades Hungary with a mighty Army; the Emperor with 120000 Men at Vienna; nothing done on either side; the Emperor in Italy, and returns to Spain; Doria his Actions in Greece; he relieves Coron. besieg'd by the Turks; Anabaptists at Munster suppress'd* 270
- Chap. 21. *Barbaruffa made Admiral by Solyman the great Turk; ravages the Coasts of Italy, and possesses himself of the Kingdom of Tunes; the Emperor passes over to Conquer that City; an Account of it, and of the Forces on both sides* 285
- Chap. 22. *The particulars of the Siege of the Fort of Goletà, which is taken by Storm; Barbaruffa gives the Emperor Battle; is Routed; flies from Tunes; the Emperor possesses himself of that Place, and restores the Moorish King.* 297
- Chap. 23. *The War betwixt the Emperor and King of France; Actions on both sides in Italy, France and Flanders; Barbaruffa his further Actions; Solyman thinks to Invade Apulia, but turns against the Venetians* 319
- Chap. 24. *Interview of the Pope, Emperor, and King of France; Mutinies; Actions of the Christian Fleet; two pleasant Passages; Death of the Empress; loss of Castelnovo; Emperor's Journey through France; Rebellion at Gaunt punish'd* 331
- Chap. 25. *The Emperor holds the Diet at Ratisbon; his unfortunate Expedition to Argier; his return to Spain;*

CONTENTS.

- Spain; War between him and France; Actions on both sides in Flanders, Italy, and the Frontiers of Spain; the Emperor goes into Italy, Germany, and Flanders; reduces the Duke of Cleves; Turkish Fleet in France 347
- Chap. 26. The Marriage of Prince Philip of Spain; the Emperor holds the Diet at Spire; Actions of the Imperialists and French in Italy; The Emperor invades France; Peace concluded; the end of Barbarossa 365
- Chap. 27. Death of the Princess's Wife of Prince Philip of Spain. The Diet at Worms, the Rise, Progress, and end of the Rebellion rais'd in Peru by Pizarro, and Suppress'd by the Licentiate Galca 378
- Chap. 28. The beginning and Progress of the War between the Emperor and Lutherans of Germany, during this Year 1546; which the Emperor began under great disadvantages and ended much to his Honour 399
- Chap. 29. The remaining part of the War in Germany, against the Lutherans: Saxony reduc'd, and the Elector taken; Rebellion in Naples Suppress'd; the Diet at Ausburg; Conspiracy against Genoa disappointed 404
- Chap. 30. The Intreim publish'd in Germany, touching matters of Religion; the Emperor's Instructions to Prince Philip, who comes into the Low Countries; Actions of Dragut the Pirate, and taking of the City of Africa from him 429
- Chap. 31. War with France carry'd on in Flanders and Piemont; Further Actions of the Turks; War with the Lutherans in Germany, and peace concluded; Siena revolts and is reduc'd, Philip Prince of Spain, Marries Queen Mary of England 31
- Chap. 32. Death of the Emperor's Mother and the Pope; the War with France; a Truce concluded for five Years; the Turks take Bagia; the Emperor resigns up all his Dominions to his Brother and Son, and retires to a Monastery in Spain 445
- Chap. 33. The Monastery of Juste, where the Emperor retir'd describ'd, his Majesties pious and virtuous Life there, together with his holy end, and some Heads of his Last Will and Testament 456

THE

THE INDEX.

A

Abstract of the Emperors Will Page 463.
 —Of the Codicil 464.
 Actions against the Moores 9.
 —Of the Moores 37.
 —Between the Rebels and Loyalists p. 74.
 —In the Mountain Country of Spain 113.
 —Between the two Armies 168.
 —In Lombardy 234.
 —In Flanders 325.
 —In Italy and Flanders 355.
 —In Flanders and Italy 446.
 Admiral of France drove out of Italy 154.
 Adrian Pope 136.
 Affairs of Italy 10.
 Africa City, on the Coast of Baibary, Besieg'd by the Imperialists 426.
 Prosecution of the Siege, and the City taken 428.
 Albertus Duke of Brunswick routed, and Duke Maurice of Saxony Kill'd 441.
 Alexander Duke of Florence Murder'd 324.
 Alexandria City taken 135.
 Anabaptists 185. Their Actions 282.
 Andrew Doria at Sea 328. He kills Muley Hassan 353

Armies in Rouffillon and Piemont 357
 Armies in Castile go into Winter Quarters 111.
 Armies Engage 170.
 Articles propos'd to the King by the Cortes, and his Answer 33.
 Articles of Peace betwixt France and Spain 194.
 —Betwixt the Emperor and King of France 242, & 372.
 Articles of the League call'd Most Holy 205.
 Avarice of the Flemings 26.

B.

Barbarussa the Lame. 23
 Barbarussa II. takes Pencn, goes to Constantinople 285. His Actions on the Coast of Italy 287.
 He takes Tunes 290. His strength and preparations there 293. Comes out to meet the Emperor 310. Is Routed 311. Flies to Tunes 312. Is drove from Bona 316. His farther Actions 523. He with the French takes Niece 363. His last Actions and Death 374.
 Battle of Pavia 169.
 Bayard Routed 154.
 Birth of the Emperor Charles V.

INDEX

- Bishop of Zamora* **D. Lewis de Acunha** 83. *He is Executed* 126.
- Bohemians* *subdu'd* 418.
- Bugia* *taken by the Turks* 448.
- Burgos* *reduc'd* 113.
- C.
- Cardinal Ximenes's great power* 26. *He Dies* 31.
- Cardinal Governor* *withdraws from Valladolid* 87.
- Castelnovo* *taken by the Christians* 335.
- Castle of Segovia* *defended for the King* 71.
- Cause of the Turkish War* 271.
- Causes of the Rebellion in Castile* 62.
- Centeno* *a Loyalist in Peru* *Routed* 386.
- Challenge between the Emperor and King of France* 228.
- Charles the Emperor* *his Education* 4. *He is contracted to the Daughter of France.* 5. *Governs Flanders* 13. *Is proclaim'd King* 18. *Comes into Spain* 30. *Is govern'd by others* 31. *Is Elected Emperor* 33. *Sworn in Catalonia* 39. *He departs Spain* 62. *His condescensions to pacify the Rebels* 82. *His Declaration* 118. *His Forces draw together in Castile* 119. *His Mercy* 127. *His Coronation* 128. *His Behaviour upon the News of the Victory of Pavia* 176. *Marries Elizabeth of Portugal* 198. *Goes to Granada* 200; *thence to Valladolid* 218. *Goes into Germany* 253. *He comes into Italy* 244. *Goes to Colonia* 247. *His Coronation* 248. *Departs for Italy* 275. *Returns to Spain* 279. *Prepares against Barbarossa* 280. *His Fleet and Land Forces; he Lords in Africk* 292. *His Army before Goëto* 298. *He marches towards Tunex* 309. *Enters that City* 113. *Goes into Lombardy* 320. *Invaides France* 321. *Returnsto Italy* 322. *His Journey through France* 343. *His Progress into Holland* 345. *in Germany* 348. *His Fleet for Argier* 350. *He retires from before Argier* 352. *Goes into Italy* 359. *Into Germany* 360. *Conquers the Duke of Cleves Dominions* *ibid.* *Marches with an Army towards Picardy* 370. *Takes S. Disier and other places* 371. *Designs to reduce the Lutherans* 378. *Marches towards the Rebels* 394. *Takes Newburg* 398. *Takes Donawert* 399. *Marches towards the Lutherans* 407. *His Instructions to his Son Philip* 421. *He returns to Germany* 424. *Is press'd by the Rebels, and in danger* 436. *Returns into Spain* 454. *Travels directly to his Monastery* 455. *His Poverty and Humility* 457. *His Piety and Religion* 458. *His Death* 459. *His Body depos'd in the Monastery* 461.
- Christian Fleet* *worsted by Barbarossa* 332.
- Clement the VIIth Pope* 153. *His Ingratitude* 208. *Proceeds against the Colonnas* 215. *Is secur'd* 224. *Dies* 281.
- Corno City* *taken* 135.
- Complaints made to the Emperor* 42.
- Concessions to the City Burgos* 114.
- Conditions of Peace offer'd by the Emperor* 178, 179.
- Conspiracy against Cortes* 54.
- *Against the Emperor* *disappointed* 183.
- Constable of Castile* *enters upon the Government* 103.
- Convention in open Rebellion* 84.
- Coron Resig'd by the Turks* 279.
- *The Siegerai. d* 182.
- Cortes

INDEX.

- Cortes of Castile at Valladolid** 32.
 —At Toledo 337. In Galicia 66. At Valladolid again 219. At Palencia 149.
Cortes of Aragon their proceedings 36.
Cortes, the Conqueror of Mexico his Original and Rise 45. He sets out towards Mexico 47. Rout's 40000 Indians 48. His March to Mexico 51. Fights 150000 Indians 52. Comes to Mexico 59. Besieges and takes that City 60. His Death 419.
Ceplona surrender'd to the Emperor 140. Taken by the Confederates 214.
Count Buren joins the Emperor 397.
- D.**
- Defeat of the Spaniards near Pavia** 165.
Defeat of the Marquis del Gasto in Piemont 367.
Diet at Spire 366. At Worms 322 139. At Ausburg 263. It breaks up 264. At Ratisbon 270.
Discoveries in America 186. In South America 187.
Doria comes over to the Emperor 336. His Affairs in the Morea 277.
Dragut the Pyrate his Actions 425. —He attempts to relieve the City Africa, but fails 428. Is employ'd by the Turk 430. Puts to Sea again 432.
Duel remarkable 6, & 147.
Duke of Albany expell'd Italy 176.
Duke of Cleves against the Emperor 356. Is pardon'd by him 361.
Duke of Milan Wounded 150. Retires 247.
Luke Maucic's practices against the Emperor 433.
Duke of Bourbon 150.
Death of the Emperor 340
- E.**
- Earthquake** 147.
Electors of Saxony recovers his Country 404. Is taken prisoner 411. Resigns his Title and Dominions 412.
Embassy to the Turk 38.
 —From Persia 156.
Empresses Death 340.
English take Bologn 373.
English and Flemings in France 151.
Expedition to Argier 347.
- F.**
- Factions in Segovia** 105.
Ferdinand, the Emperors Son, afterwards Emperor 6. His Character 14. Is chosen King of the Romans 267. Over-runs Saxony 40.
Ferdinand King of Spain Mar 159. —His Will 13. His Death 14.
Florence surrender'd 261.
Florentine War 257.
Fonseca the Kings General goes away to Flanders 79.
Form of the Emperors Abdication 449. The same continu'd 451.
Francis, the first King of France, marches into Italy 159. Is taken at Pavia 172. Carry'd into Spain 180. His Sister comes into Spain 181. Attempts to escape 182. Marries the Emperors Sister 193. Is set at Liberty 199. Declares War against the Emperor 209. His Letter to the German Princes 213. Drive out of the Low-Countries 435.
French Ambassador to the Turk Kill'd 347.
French return to Milan 181.
French take Luxemburg 362.
French Fleet Defeated 375.

INDEX.

French Apology 211. <i>The Answer to it</i>	212.	D. Hugo de Moncada enters Rome with his Forces	215.
French in Italy take Genoa, Alexandria and Pavia	226.		
French Princes how kept in Spain	240.	I.	
French routed in Navarre 131. <i>Again in the Dukedom of Milan</i>	138..	Imperialists in France	157.
Fuenterabia Besieg'd by the Spaniards	146	Imposter call'd El Encubierto	92.
G.		Insolency of the Cities of Valladolid and Toledo 63. <i>Of D. Peter Giron</i>	65.
		Instructions to the Army of the Rebels in Castile	100.
		Insurrection at Madrid	73.
		Interim for matters of Religion in Germany	420.
		Interview of Princes	331.
		Introduction	16.
Gasca sent to govern Peru	383.	Ioanna Heirefs of Spain 5. <i>Sworn Queen</i>	7.
<i>Marches against Pizzaro and routs him</i>	387.	John Avias his great Loyalty	75.
Genoa taken and plunder'd	141.	John de Padilla General of the Rebels	119.
<i>Made free</i>	237.	<i>Journal of a Siege</i>	303.
Germans 12000 came to the Emperors Camp	166.	Iron Crown	249.
Germans come into Italy	216.	Julius the IIIId. Pope Dies	445.
Sold Crown	250.	K.	
Goleta on the Coast of Atrick describ'd 295. <i>Storm'd. and taken</i>	336.		
Government of Spain settl'd	17.	Kings Council apprehended by the Rebels	86.
Gozo Island, and City Tripoli taken by the Turks	432.	Kings of Tunez	286.
Gran Besieg'd	273.	L.	
Great Sally at Florence	259.		
Great defeat of the Infidels at Goleta	301.	Lady Mary Pacheco a Ringleader of Rebels	114.
Great Storm	302.	League between France and England	225.
Great Snow	358.	Lantgrave submits and is secur'd	413.
Grounds of new War betwixt the Emperor and France	319.	Lodi Fortify'd	161.
H.		Loyal Genry take Torre sillas	410.
<i>Heads of the Rabble in Spain</i>	78.	Luther	
Henry VIII. King of England his Death	419.		
Heslin levell'd with the Ground	442.		

I N D E X.

Luther 28.
Lutherans' commence the War in Germany 392. *Cannonade the Emperors camp twice* 396. *Fly before the Emperor* 401. *Routed at Milburg* 409. *They and the French begin the War again with the Emperor* 434.
Luxemburg taken by the Imperialists 359.

O.

Oran taken and Bugia 9.
Order of the Imperial Army 167.
—Of the Siege of Tuncz 297.
Ordinances sent by the Rebels for the Emperor to sign 98.

M.

Magazine of Michlic blown up 396.
Malta Island given to the Knights of Rhodes 193.
Manner of proclaiming the King of Spain 433.
Marquis del Gasto Commands in Italy 326.
Marquis Albertus taken by the Saxons 405.
Marseilles Besieg'd 157.
Mazalquiver taken 7.
Medina del campo Burnt 76.
Melza surpriz'd 162.
Mighty Mutinies 21.
Milan describ'd 133. *Taken by the Confederates* 135.
Miserable inundation 269.
Monastery of Juste describ'd 456.
Montezuma and his people seear Allegiance to Spain 56. *His Death* 58.
Moriscoes of Granada petition the Emperor 201.
Muley Hassem the depos'd King of Tuncz comes to the Emperors Camp before that City 303. *Is restor'd to his Kingdom* 316.
Mutiny at Toledo 67. *In the Emperors Camp* 262.

N.

Naples Besieg'd by the French 232.

P.

Palatine pardon'd 403.
Parma Besieg'd and Reliev'd 134.
Parties of Rebels surpriz'd 112.
Peace between France and Spain 25.
—With the Venetians 246.
—Between the Turks and Venetians 345.
—Between the Pope and Parma 433.
—Between the Emperor and the Lutherans 436.
Peace broke in Milan 203.
D. Peter Giron made General of the Rebels 108.
Peter of Navarre's Death 238.
Petition full of Insolency presented the Emperor 69.
Philip and Ioanna King and Queen of Spain, come thither. 6.
Philip Dies 8.
Philip II. of Spain Born 223. *Marry'd to the Infanta of Portugal* 355. *Comes into Flanders* 422. *Marryes Queen Mary of England* 443.
Pizzarro Heads the Rebels in Peru 380. *Makes himself Governor* 383. *His proceedings* 385. *Is Routed, taken and Executed* 388.
Plague at Rome 222.
Preparations against the Turks 272.
—Against Tuncz 290. *For War* 391.

Pretensions.

INDEX.

<i>Pretensions of the Rebels</i>	88.	<i>Rome taken and Sack'd</i>	220.
<i>Prince of Orange Kill'd</i>	261.	<i>Rout of the French</i>	173. Books
<i>Princes of France better treated</i>		<i>Prisoners and Slain</i>	175.
<i>243. Ransom'd</i>	265.		
<i>Princess of Spain Dies</i>	379.		
<i>Prior of Capua shot by a Peasant</i>		S.	
	439.		
<i>Proceedings of the Convention in</i>		<i>Sally from Naples</i>	230.
<i>Castile</i>	97.	<i>Sedition at Burgos</i>	79.
<i>Progress of the Siege of Tunes</i>	299.	<i>Segorbe Duke defeats the Rebels</i>	
<i>—Of the Rebellion of Toledo</i>	68.	<i>of Valencia</i>	90.
<i>—Of the Rebellion of Castile</i>	101.	<i>Several places submit to the Emper</i>	
<i>—Of the War of Italy</i>	231.	<i>ror</i>	401.
<i>Protestants in Germany</i>	262.	<i>Several Exploits in Castile</i>	121.
<i>Punishment of the Rebels at Gant</i>		<i>Sickness in the Emperors Camp</i>	60.
	344.	<i>fore Tunes</i>	304.
<i>apropos pag 225</i>		<i>Siege of Pavia</i>	163.
		<i>Solemn Baptism</i>	4.
Q.		<i>Solyman the great Turk in Hun-</i>	
		<i>gary 274. Turns against the</i>	
<i>Queen Ioanna the Emperors Mo-</i>		<i>Venetians</i>	329.
<i>ther dies</i>	445.	<i>Sorolla a Rebel of Valencia routed</i>	
		<i>the Viceroy</i>	91.
		<i>Spaniards slain in Africk</i>	22.
		<i>Spaniards enter France</i>	155.
R.		<i>—Mutiny in Milan</i>	
<i>Rebellion in Sicilly</i>	19.	<i>—At Goleta and in Sicily</i>	333.
<i>—In Valenciac and its Original</i>	40.	<i>State of Christendome</i>	129.
<i>and 88. The end of it</i>	94.	<i>—Of Germany</i>	350.
<i>—In Segovia</i>	70.	<i>Storm destroys the Emperors Fleet</i>	
<i>—In Valladolid</i>	79.		351.
<i>—In Majorca</i>	145.	<i>Streights of Magellan</i>	187.
<i>—Of Moores and their Conversion</i>		<i>Strozzi Commander of the French</i>	
	185.	<i>Forces in Italy Route'd</i>	440.
<i>—In Gant</i>	342.	<i>Subject of this History</i>	5.
<i>—In Peru</i>	379.	<i>Success of the Loyalists in the</i>	
<i>—In Naples 414. Suppress'd</i>	417.	<i>Kingdom of Toledo</i>	120.
<i>Rebels take the Castle of Madrid</i>			
	74.	T.	
<i>—Take the Field in Castile</i>	116.	<i>Terouenne taken and destroy'd</i>	442.
<i>—Gain Torrelabaton ibid. Are</i>		<i>Tilting and several persons Kill'd at</i>	
<i>Routed</i>	123.	<i>it.</i>	35.
<i>Revo't of several places</i>	80.	<i>Flaccallans submit to Cortes</i>	53.
<i>—Of Siena and its Reduction</i>	437.	<i>Toledo submits</i>	125.
<i>Renunciation of the Crown of Spain</i>	452.		
<i>Rhodes taken by the Turks</i>	141.		

Traflic

I N D E X.

Traffic with the Indians of new Spain 49.
Treachery of Count Petiliano 438.
Treaty for release of Francis King of France sworn to 195.
Truce for five Years betwixt the Emperor and France 447.
Tumults in Austria 42.
Tunex describ'd 295, and 315.
Turkish Fleet at Naples 441.
Turks take Castelnovo 341.
Two notable Men 268.
Two pleasant Adventures. 338.

V.

Valladolid reduc'd 124.
Velasques Governor of Cuba sends Forces against Cortes. 57.
Vera Cruz on the Coast of New-Spain, built by Cortes. 50.

W.

War in Venice II. In Navarre 21, and 130. *In Italy* 136. 219, and 443. *In Spain* 136. *In Flanders* 135, and 444.
—Betwixt the Emperor and France 354. *Renew'd* 431.
William de Croy 24.
Witbes discover'd 224.
Wonderful Eruption 339.

Z.

Zamora City Mutinies 72.

THE
HISTORY

OF THE

Most Victorious and Mighty

Monarch,

CHARLES the Vth.

Emperor, &c.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

The latter Days of Ferdinand, and Isabel or Elizabeth, King and Queen of Castile and Aragon, the Queen's Death, Philip succeeds to Castile, in Right of his Wife Joanna, He dyes, Ferdinand governs for his Daughter who is distracted, He dyes and leaves all his Dominions to his Grandson Charles.

I Write of Empires, Crowns, and Scepters, Things highly esteem'd and glorious in the Eyes of worldly Men. I treat of Wars, the Slaughter of 500000 Men; the Martial Exploits of 50 Years, the Taking of
B Kings;

The HISTORY of

Kings, the Plundering of *Rome*, the Insolencies committed against all things, as well sacred as profane, the Challenges and angry Words betwixt Princes, the Leagues, Oaths, and Treaties broken and violated, the Burning of Towns and whole Provinces, the Discovery of a new World, and Conquest of vast wealthy Kingdoms never before known, or hear'd of. Such were the Accidents, that attended the Reign of the Renowned Emperor *Charles* the Vth. Honour of the *Austrian* Family, which in him was rais'd to the Crown of *Spain*, and Sovereignty of the *West Indies*, tho' it had long before been possess'd of the Empire. Yet this glorious Diadem fate so heavy upon the head of our Hero, that in the very prime of his Age, at 33 Years, it sunk his Body into many Distempers, & at 50 he who had commanded so many Armies, and so great a part of the World, had no Command of his own Body, and yet in this weak condition, he perform'd the most glorious of Actions, by voluntarily resigning up all those Dominions, he had for so many Years defended with such unspeakable Fatigues, and Perils, which are the Subject of this History.

1. The Yoak of the *African Moors*, who had reigned in *Spain* for near 800 Years, being at length shaken off by their Catholick Majesties, *Ferdinand*, and *Isabel* or *Elizabeth*, they by this means became Sovereigns of the greatest Part of that Continent, which is circumscrib'd by the Ocean, *Mediterranean* Sea and *Pyrenean* Mountains. Their only Son, and Heir to this Monarchy was Prince *John*, who being marry'd to the Lady *Margaret*, Daughter to *Maximilian* the Emperor, and Arch-Duke of *Austria*, by his Wife *Mary* Empress, and Sole Heiress to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*; dy'd in the Flower of his Youth at *Salamanca*, on *Wednesday* the 24th. of *October*, 1497. and in the 20th. Year of his Age, to the unspeakable Grief of his Parents, and the whole Kingdom.

2. This Lady *Margaret* Princess of *Spain* was unfortunate, being in her Infancy contracted to *Charles* King of *France*, but without effect, and afterwards marry'd as has been said, to Prince *John*, which Match, the very Elements seem'd to predict, would prove unhappy; for in her Passage from *Holland* to *Spain*, she was toss'd by 10 furious a Tempest, that several of the Ships attending

tending her peris'h'd, and she had ty'd to her Arms her Jewels, and an Account in Writing, who she was, that when cast upon any Shore, she might in respect to her Quality be decently interr'd. Yet she landed safe at *Santander*, and as has been mention'd, was marry'd at *Burgos*, but had little joy of her Husband. When left a Widow, she return'd to *Flanders*, and was marry'd to the Duke of *Savoy*, but had no better Fortune with him than with her first Husband, and so retir'd again to *Flanders*, which Country she govern'd many years.

3. Besides Prince *John*, their Catholick Majesties had four Daughters, *Elizabeth* the Eldest born in 1470. *Joanna* in 1479. *Mary* in 1483. and *Catharine* in 1486. The Princess *Elizabeth* was marry'd to *Alfonso* Eldest Son to *John* the 2d. King of *Portugal*, to the intent that if Prince *John* fail'd the Crown might fall to a Native, and that Kingdom, which, only remain'd separate of all that had been set up in *Spain*, might be annex'd to the rest. The Princess *Joanna* was marry'd to *Philip*, the Fair Arch-Duke of *Austria*, Son to *Maximilian* the Emperor, and the Empress *Mary* Dutche's of *Burgundy*. Thus the Prince and Princess of *Spain* marry'd the Emperor's Son and Daughter, and by this Matching of the Sons and Daughters of *Castile* and *Austria*, the Dominions of *Austria*, *Burgundy* and *Flanders* came to be annex'd to *Spain*, because Prince *John*, as has been said dy'd without issue; and the Princess *Elizabeth*, Widow of Prince *Alfonso* of *Portugal*, and marry'd to King *Emanuel*, who was to inherit the Crown of *Spain*, and had been sworn Heire's, dy'd; leaving one only Son, call'd *Michael de la Paz*, or of the Peace; because his Father and Mother marrying, brought Peace to *Spain* and *Portugal*, and he also dy'd an Infant, as shall be shown hereafter.

4. But in the Year of Grace 1500. of the World, according to the *Hebrew* Computation, 5461. since the Flood 3805. since the Arrival of *Tubal* to people *Spain* 3663. of the *Aera* of *Cesar* 1538. since the coming of the *Goths* into *Spain* 1086, and Lastly, since the Conquest of the *African Moors* 786. *Alexander* the 6th. being Pope, in the 26th. Year of their Catholick Majesties Reign, when the *Moors* of *Alpujarras* had receiv'd the Faith, and converted their *Mosques* into Churches, the Kingdom being cleans'd of Synagogues and *Jewish*

Birth of
Charles
the Vth.

Superstition, in the great Year of the *Jubilee* at *Rome*, then to comfort *Spain* in Tears for the Loss of its Princes, Prince *Charles* of ever-glorious Memory, whose Life and Actions I have undertaken to write, was born at *Gant* upon a Monday the 25th. of *February*, and Feast of St. *Matthias*, it being *Leap-Year*, he having been begotten in *Spain*, whence his Parents went away to *Gant* not long before.

Solemn
Baptism.

5. The City of *Gant* to express its Loyalty to its Princes, built a Gallery reaching from the Palace to the Church of St. *John*, being 3500 Feet in length and 7 in breadth, supported upon abundance of stately Pillars, gilt and painted, with 40 Triumphal Arches at distances, like stately Gates, every one of them bearing the Name of a Kingdom, or State, the new born Infant was like to be Heir to. This Gallery was lighted by 700 Flambeaux artificially distributed. Besides this there was another pendent Gallery, from the Top of St. *Nicholas's* Church, and the Tower they call *Belfort*, full of Lights, as also a Ship full of Musick, and 350 Flambeaux which made the Night like Noon-day. The whole was finish'd in 13 days, at the end of which, the Prince attended by all the Nobility and Magistrates, was carry'd through this Noble Gallery to the Church by the Lady *Margaret*, Sister to *Edward* the 5th. King of *England*, and 2d. Wife to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, Great Grand-father to the Infant. He was nam'd *Charles*, in Honour of his said Great Grandfather *Charles* of *Valois*, Duke of *Burgundy*, and created Duke of *Luxemburg*.

His Edu-
cation.

6. The Lady *Margaret*, Widow to Prince *John* of *Spain*, and the Lady *Margaret* of *York*, Widow to Duke *Charles* call'd the *Combatant*, had the Charge of Educating the young Duke. At 7 years of Age he was committed to the Care of *Adrian Florentius*, a Man of low Extraction, but rais'd by his Virtue, and afterwards Pope, to be instructed by him in Literature, as his Preceptor. His first Governor was the Bishop of *Besancon*, after him *William de Croy* Marquess of *Arscot*, and others.

7. *Adrian* his Preceptor could not make him apply himself to Learning, because his Inclination was altogether bent upon Arms, and *William de Croy* his Governor is said to have indulg'd his Humour, that he might

might gain his Affections. He caus'd him to read the Histories of *France* and *Spain* in those Languages, but in an old uncoth Stile. Duke *Charles* spoke *Flemish*, *High-Dutch*, *French* and *Italian* well, but *Spanish* indifferently, till he was a Man. Some *Latin* he understood, but imperfectly, which he often repented. His youthful Exercises, besides handling of Weapons, were Wrestling, Tennis, Hunting, and all that inures the Body to hardship and makes it fit for War.

8. *Michael* Prince of *Spain* dy'd before he was two *Joanna* Years old, in 1500. and was bury'd in the Royal *Heirefs of* Chappel at *Granada*. By his Death the Right of *Spain*. Succession devolv'd upon the Princess *Joanna*, second Daughter to their Catholick Majesties, Wife to *Philip* Arch-Duke of *Austria* and Earl of *Flanders*, and Mother to the Glorious Prince *Charles* Duke of *Luxemburg*.

9. The Lives of Kings and Princes, as generally *Subject of* written, contain the Publick Acts in Peace and War *this Histo-* of their Dominions, rather than their own natural or *ry*. private Employments. Therefore reckoning the Life, and Reign of *Charles* the Vth, from this Year, I will briefly relate what concerns the Dominions of *Castile*, because it would be improper to pass over in silence all that pass'd between 1500 and 1518, when he came into *Spain*. This History shall reach from 1500 till 1556, when he resign'd up his Hereditary Kingdoms, and then will briefly conclude with the exemplary and penitent Life, he led in his Retirement for two Years after.

10. There was no settled Peace betwixt *Maximilian* *Charles* the Emperor, and *Lewis* King of *France*, but the latter *contracted* covering the Dukedom of *Milan*, and Kingdom of *so she* *Naples*, desir'd to join in League with the former, by *Daughter* contracting his Daughter *Claudia*, then a Child, to *of France*. Duke *Charles*, as yet but a Year old. The Emperor and Duke *Philip* lik'd the Match, because *Claudia* was *Lewis's* Only Daughter, and Heirefs to the Dukedom of *Brittany*. Queen *Isabel* of *Spain* was sickly, and the People earnestly desir'd to see *Philip* and *Joanna*; who were next Heirs to the Crown, and they accordingly, this Year 1501. came through *France*, where they were entertain'd by King *Lewis*, and concluded the Match for the two Children, one of the Articles of which Con-

tract was; that in case the Marriage took not effect, through Default on the King of *France's* side, then the Emperor should grant the Investiture of *Milan* to his Grandson Duke *Charles*. Now the Match being afterwards broke off by King *Lewis*, it follows the Crown of *Spain* has thereby a just Title to *Milan*.

An. 1502. Philip and Joanna in Spain. 11. The Princes *Philip* and *Joanna* arriv'd at *Fuen-terabia*, on the 29th. of *January* 1502. and were there receiv'd by *D. Bernard de Sandoval y Rojas*, Marquess of *Denia*, and many other Persons of Note. Their Catholick Majesties were then at *Sevil*, contriving how to clear the Kingdom of *Moors* and *Jews*. On the 7th. of *May*, the Prince and Princess arriv'd at *Toledo*, where they were met by the King and Queen, and on the 22d. of the same Month, they were sworn Heirs to the Crowns of *Castile* and *Leon*, in the Cathedral of *Toledo*, the King and Queen with many of the Nobility and Prelates, being present. Here they receiv'd the News, that the Prince of *Wales*, who had marry'd the Princess *Catherine*, was dead. After taking a Progress thro' the Country, their Majesties and Highnesses, who had parted, met again at *Madrid* in *October*.

A Duel. 12. This Year the *French* in *Naples* made War on the *Spaniards* about the Borders, but it cost them dear, and then the famous Challenge hapned at *Trana*, between eleven *French* and as many *Spaniards* a horseback, because the *French* reported, that the *Spaniards* were no good horse, but only foot. The Judges were the *Venetians*, and could not decide who had the better. The Castle of *Saulses*, destroy'd six years before by the *French*, was now rebuilt.

1503: P. Ferdinand born. 13. King *Emanuel* of *Portugal*, become a Widower by the Death of the Princess *Elizabeth*, marry'd *Mary*, Daughter to their Catholick Majesties, and Sister to his former Wife, by whom he had several Children, the first of which born at *Lisbon* on the 25th. of *October*, and call'd *Elizabeth*, was afterwards Empress, and Queen of *Spain*. On the 10th. of *March* 1503. the Princess *Joanna* was deliver'd at *Alcala de Henares* of Prince *Ferdinand*, who was Emperor after his Brother. The *French* this Year laid siege to *Saulses*, which was rais'd by *Frederick* Duke of *Alva*, and *D. Bernard de Sandoval*, Marquess of *Denia*, left Governor there with 6000 Horse and Foot. Arch-Duke *Philip* return'd

turn'd to *Flanders* through *France*, and in his way at *Lyons*, concluded a Peace betwixt the Emperor *Maximilian*, King *Ferdinand* of *Spain*, and King *Lewis* of *France*, further ratifying the Contract of Marriage between his Son *Charles*, then not full four years of Age, and the Princess *Claudia* of *France*, not yet five.

14. On the 31th. of *March*, the Peace concluded with *France* for three years, was solemnly sworn at *Mejorada*, a Monastery of *S. Jerome* near *Olmedo*. There were great Earthquakes upon *Good-Friday*, particularly at *Sevil*, *Zamora*, and other Towns of *Castile* and *Andaluzia*, which ruin'd and overthrew many Houses, and seem'd to be a Fore-runner of the Queen's Death, who fell sick on the 26th. of *July*, and dy'd on the 17th. of *November*, at *Medina del Campo*. She was bury'd in the Royal Chappel at *Granada*. That very Day she dy'd, after Noon, *Joanna* in her own Right, and *Philip* as her Lawful Husband, were Proclaim'd King and Queen of *Castile*, in the Presence of King *Ferdinand*, whom the Queen had appointed Governor.

15. In 1505. King *Ferdinand* being at *Toro*, many of the Nobility and Commons met there by way of *Cortes*, or Parliament, and took their Oath to the Princess *Joanna*, as Queen of *Spain*, and to her Son *Charles* as next Heir to the Crown, which put a Stop to the Troubles then growing in the Kingdom. Queen *Joanna* receiv'd the News of her being Proclaim'd in *Spain*, when she was newly deliver'd of the Princess *Mary*, afterwards Wife to the unfortunate *Lewis* King of *Hungary*, who being kill'd by the *Turks*, she govern'd *Flanders* many years.

1505.
Joanna
sworn
Queen.

16. *F. Francis de Ximenes* Archbishop of *Toledo*, being zealous to promote the War against the *Infidels* having receiv'd some Supply from King *Ferdinand*, sent *James Fernandez de Cordova* with Forces, who landing on the Coast of *Africk*, in three Days made himself Master of *Mazalquivir*, a good Port in the Kingdom of *Tremezen*, and remain'd Governor of the Place. King *Ferdinand* pass'd the Winter at *Salamanca*, & King *Philip* was with his Wife *Joanna* in *Flanders*, yet at that distance there broke out such Discontents between them, that *Ferdinand*, to exclude *Philip* the Crown, sent into *Portugal* to demand the Princess *Joanna*, only Daughter to *Henry* King of *Castile*, and Rightful Heirefs of that

Mazalquivir taken.

Crown, whom he himself had before excluded her Right, intending now to marry and set up her Title. But the King of *Portugal* would not comply nor indeed would she her self being a very holy Woman and despising Earthly Crowns. Being disappointed there he took to Wife the Lady *Germana*, Daughter to *Gascon de Foix*, by a Sister of King *Lewis* of *France*, upon which a Peace was concluded between *France* and *Spain* for 101 years; but lasted not so many weeks.

K. Philip
in Spain.

17. The *Castilians* press'd to have their King and Queen in *Spain*. They set Sail from *Flanders* in *January* 1505, and after suffering much by Tempest at Sea, and being forc'd into *England*, where they were well entertain'd by King *Henry*, at length arriv'd safe at *Coruna* on the 26th. of *April*. On the 20th. of *June*, the two Kings and Queen met, and conferr'd together, but parted dissatisfy'd. Most of the Nobility and Gentry forsook *Ferdinand*, and follow'd the new King. One of the Causes of disagreeing was, about the manner of signing Orders, and at last, they agreed to sign *Ferdinand*, *Philip*, and *Joanna*, but this lasted not long, because *Philip* dy'd soon after at *Burgos*, whether he went against his Will to please the Queen. The Cause of his Death was, feeding too plentifully at an Entertainment, given him by *D. John Manuel* his Favourite, and using too much Exercise after it, for that very day he found himself indispos'd, and departed this Life the 7th. Day after, having reign'd in *Castile* not full five Months; and but one Year and ten Months since he was proclaim'd. He was of Person handsome, somewhat fat, witty, loving, and bountiful to Excess; so that after his Death, an Order came out in the Name of Queen *Joanna*, to recall and make void all Grants of Revenues in *Spain* made by him since his Accession to the Crown. He left Issue by his Queen *Joanna*, *Charles* of whom we are to treat, and *Ferdinand*, both Emperors; *Eleanor* first Queen of *Portugal*, and next of *France*, *Catherine* Wife to King *John* the 3d. King of *Portugal*, and *Mary* Wife to *Lewis* King of *Hungary* and *Bohemia* Queen *Joanna* being distracted, was kept up at *Tordesillas* as long as she liv'd, so that her Son *Charles* his Reign may be allow'd to have begun at this time, tho' under Governours, for he was in *Flanders* under the Tuition of his Aunt *Margaret*, and scarce six years of Age.

1506.
His Death.

18. This

18. This Year on the 18th. of *March*, old King *Ferdinand* marry'd the young Queen *Germana*, she was not handsome, but lame, and a great Lover of Feasting. King *Ferdinand* not agreeing with his Son in law *Philip* had retir'd to his own Kingdom of *Aragon*, and thence sail'd over to *Naples*; on the way, whether he receiv'd the News of King *Philip's* Death, yet would not return presently to *Castile*, being offended at some of the Nobility, which was the Cause that great Disorders were committed in that Kingdom, and it was divided into Factions. Cardinal *Ximenes*, the Constable of *Castile* and Duke of *Najara* were appointed Governours. They summon'd the Cortes, and sent to invite King *Ferdinand* to return to the Government, which he did as soon as possible. This Year 1507. *Francis* Duke of *Angoulesme* marry'd *Claudia* Daughter to *Lewis* King of *France*, who, as has been said, was contracted to the young Prince *Charles*. In *May*, *Christopher Columbus* first Discoverer of the *West-Indies*, to whom *Spain* is indebted for those Conquests, dy'd at *Valladolid*.

K. Ferdinand marry's.

1507.

19. King *Ferdinand* return'd into *Spain* in *August*, where he punish'd the Marquis *del Pliego*, who in his Absence had broke open the Prisons of the Inquisition, and seiz'd all the Duke of *Medina Sidonia's* Estate because he fled into *Portugal*. The Corsairs of *Barbary*, holding Correspondence with the *Moors* in *Spain*, did much harm upon the Coast of *Barbary*. Count *Peter Navarro* drove them back to their own Coast, where he took *Penon de Velez la Gomera* their place of Refuge, and built a Fort there putting a *Spanish* Garrison into it. This done he sail'd away to *Arzila* then besieg'd by the Infidels, whose Camp he cannonaded with such fury, that they were forc'd to raise the Siege. On the 3d. of *May*, Queen *Germana* was deliver'd of a Son, who dy'd within an hour; yet on *Midsummer-day* there was great Rejoicing upon the News, that the Princess *Catherine* the King's Daughter, Widow to Prince *Arthur* of *England*, had marry'd his Brother *Henry* the eighth King of *England*. Cardinal *Ximenes* having with the King's Consent and Assistance rais'd 7000 Men, went over with them in Person to *Africk*, and took the important Place of *Oran*, on the 17th. of *May* 1509. where he left a good Garrison, and return'd to *Spain*.

Aliens against Moors. 1508.

1509.

Oran taken Peter and Bugia.

The HISTORY of

- Peter Navarro*, who had commanded under him went away to winter at *Formentera*, and having recruited his Troops, sail'd over again, and landed at *Bugia* upon the first Day of the Year 1510. and having made a breach in the Walls, took the Place by Assault, then
1510. marching up the Country defeated King *Abderhaman*, who was fled from the Town with a good Body of *Moors*, killing 5000 of them, and taking a greater Booty than had been found in the Place. This Success caus'd *Argier*, and some other Places of less Note, to deliver up the Christian Captives they had, and submit to pay an Acknowledgment to his Catholick Majesty. The Fleet being again refitted, the Count sail'd to *Tripoly* of *Barbary* with 15000 Men, who gave so furious an Assault with only scaling Ladders, that they gain'd the Walls, then broke open the Gates, and made themselves Masters of the Place, with the Slaughter of 6000 (some say 10000) Infidels. Only 300 *Spaniards* were lost. These Successes ended in a Disaster; for the Count landing 15000 Men on the Island of *Gelves*, 30 Leagues from *Tripoly*, receiv'd there a great Overthrow with the loss of 2 or 3000 of his Men, and had the Infidels pursu'd them, few or none had escap'd, because the Ships were off at Sea, and there were no Boats to carry the Men off. Nor was this the only Misfortune, for returning to *Tripoly*, he lost four Ships, and putting thence to Sea again after refitting 9 or 10 more, then landing 400 Men in
- 1511: February 1511. at a Place call'd *Querquenes*, an Ensign who had been affronted by his Colonel deserted to the Infidels, and bringing them down with him cut off the whole Party. This Misfortune, and want of Water, oblig'd the Count to make for *Gelves*, where the *Moors* suffer'd him to take what he wanted, and here Orders came to him from the King, to pass over with Speed into *Italy* to the Assistance of the Pope.
- Affairs of Italy. 20. The *French* being at this time possess'd of the Dukedom of *Milcn*, and State of *Genoa* in *Italy*, Pope *Julius* entred into a League with the *Venetians*, and King *Ferdinand* to expel them. In Order to it, the united Forces of the Confederates, gave the *French* Battle near
1512. *Ravenna* on the 12th. of *April* 1512. but were defeated; yet so that it is thought the Victors lost most Men, and amongst them, their young General Monsieur *de Foix*, and a Body of *Spanish* Foot march'd off in the Face of

of the Enemy, who could never break it. The Confederates recruiting, not only drove the *French* from *Ravenna*, but, the Country joining with them, out of all *Italy*, where they had nothing left them but the Fort of *Genoa*, and Castle of *Milan*. At the same time, King *Ferdinand* marching to invade *France*, as he had agreed with the Pope, caus'd his Army to take its way through the Kingdom of *Navarre*. King *John d' Albret* was in League with *France*, and therefore refus'd the *Spanish* Forces passage through his Country, but he having no Troops to oppose them, they not only made good their way, but conquer'd and subdu'd the whole Kingdom, without the least opposition. This done, the Duke of *Alva* the *Spanish* General, march'd into *France* by the way of *S. John de Pied de Port*, thinking to join the *English* sent to his Assistance, but they pretending a Mutiny put to Sea, and return'd home. The *French* under the Command of *Monsieur de la Palisse* entred *Navarre*, hoping to recover that Kingdom, but having lain 27 Days before *Pamplona* and lost many Men, return'd home in *November*, without doing any thing. Thus the Kingdom of *Navarre* was subdu'd, and in the Year 1515. the Cortes of *Castile* annex'd it to that Crown.

21. The warlike Pope *Julius* the 2d. dy'd in *February* 1513. Cardinal *Medicis* succeeded him, by the Name of *Leo* the 10th. and renew'd the Confederacy with the Emperor and Catholick King; but the *Venetians* broke off and join'd with the *French*. King *Ferdinand* fell sick in *March*, as is thought of a Potion the Queen his Wife gave him in hopes to get Children, but prov'd his Bane, for he never recover'd it. The *French* again attempted the Recovery of the State of *Milan*, but were beaten out of *Italy* by the *Swissers*. *Henry* the VIIIth. of *England* who was in League with *Ferdinand* came over into *Flanders* with an Army, and took from the *French* *Tournay* and *Terovenne*. Mean while *D. Ramo* de *Cardona* carry'd on the War in *Italy* against the *Venetians*, and having in vain besieg'd *Padua*, travers'd all the rich Dominions of that Republick on that side, burning and destroying whatsoever was in his way, till he came to the opposite Bank to the City of *Venice*, from whence he cannonaded it for some time, and tho' he did little harm, yet the Terror and Disgrace was great. Whilst the *Spanish* Army lay there, that of the *Venetians*

com-

The HISTORY of

commanded by *Bartholomew Alviano* posted it self on the other side the River *Brenta* to cut off the *Spaniards* return home, but *D. Raimund de Cardona* finding a Ford above them, pass'd it in the Night, and escap'd that Danger. *Alviano* failing of his first Design, drew back to *Vinzenza* then ruin'd by the War, and working with incredible diligence broke up the Ways, and entrench'd his Army, securing all the Passes, through which the *Spanish* Army must of necessity march to *Verrona*, planting his Cannon so advantagiously, that when they came up, he play'd upon them as long as the day lasted; which oblig'd the Foot to lye down upon their Faces, and the Horse to retire to hollow Grounds and the Shelter of Trees. The Viceroy as soon as it was dark, drew off in silence, designing to turn back, and make his Way over the Mountain of *Bassano*, but being got out of the narrow Passes, which were near the Enemy, he halted in an open Plain. *Alviano* had no mind to follow the *Spaniards*, knowing their own wants would destroy them in their March over the Mountains, but the *Venetian* Proveditor *Loredano* did so insult, saying, he would suffer the Enemy to escape, that he was forced to march after them contrary to his own Judgment. He sent his light Horse before, to attack them in the Rear if they continu'd their March, who fell upon the *German* Horse, and were bravely repuls'd by them, till *Alviano* coming up with fresh Troops the *Germans* were beaten back in their turn. Then the main Bodies of Foot came to the Charge, which was so furiously given by the *Spanish* and *German* Infantry, that the *Venetians* were broke the first shock, and the Horse being forsaken by their Foot, tho' they show'd extraordinary Bravery were forced to fly. Of the *Venetians* 5000 were kill'd, and 24 Field-pieces taken. This Battle was fought on the 7th. of *October*, 1513.

1514. 22. In 1514. a Truce for a Year was concluded betwixt *France* and *Spain*. *Henry* King of *England* press'd to have Prince *Charles* marry his Sister *Mary*, he being then but 14 Years of Age, but the Match being put off, she was given to *Lewis* King of *France*, who enjoy'd her not long, for he dy'd within a very short time. Howsoever this Match produc'd a Peace betwixt *France* and *England*. *Francis de Valois*, who had marry'd the Daughter of King *Lewis*, succeeded him, and presently propos'd
to

to give his Sister in law *Renata* in Marriage to Prince *Charles*, to gain his Friendship by this Alliance, but it came to nothing.

23. Prince *Charles* being now in his 15th. Year, and of a pregnant Wit, and excellent natural Parts, his Grandfather *Maximilian*, and Aunt *Margaret* surrendered up the Government of the *Low Countries* into his Hands, which was presently notify'd to all Christian Princes. Mean while, the Catholick King never rested in one Place, tho' very sickly, for it had always been his Custom to be moving up and down. It being known in *Flanders*, that the Catholick King was dangerously ill, Prince *Charles* sent *Adrian*, Dean of *Lovain* his Preceptor, and a Man of singular Virtue and good Parts into *Spain*, with full Commission to have a share in the Government of *Castile*, in case *Ferdinand* happen'd to dye, before he came over himself. The Catholick King was much displeas'd at his Coming, and could hardly be brought to consent to see him, so jealous was he of keeping his Power, when dropping into the Grave: In *January* 1516. he was with much difficulty convinc'd that his End drew nigh, for he was so fond of Life, that till then he could not be prevail'd upon to prepare for Death, nor would he so much as see his Father Confessor, who often endeavour'd to get Admittance. At last God touch'd his Heart, he sent for his said Confessor, and receiv'd the Sacraments and Rites of the Church, the Consequence whereof was, that he sent for many wise Members of his Council, and desir'd them to advise him, whether he had not better leave the Dominions of *Spain* to his Grandson *Ferdinand* who was present, then to Prince *Charles*, who perhaps would not come over to govern himself. They all unanimously beg'd of him, that he would not go about to put Prince *Charles* by his Right, which must produce great Disorders, Wars, and all the Calamities that attend them. Then by their Advice he made his Will, by which he left his Bastard Son *D. Alonso of Aragon* Archbishop of *Zaragoza*, Governor of the Kingdom of *Aragon*, and Cardinal *Ximenes* of the Dominions of *Castile*, during the young King's absence. The Mastership of the three Military Orders, which he had design'd for Prince *Ferdinand* he also left to Prince *Charles*, giving the

1515.
P. Charles
governs
Flanders.

K. Fer-
dinand's
Will.

the other in lieu thereof a Revenue of 50000 Ducats a Year in *Naples*.

1516. *His Death.* 23. All things thus settled, he dy'd on the 23th. of *January* 1516. in a poor Inn of the Village of *Madrigalejo*. His Disease was a Dropsie, tho' many believ'd, the Potion Queen *Germana* gave him to make him get Children, had destroy'd the Constitution of his Body. He was short and thick, skilful at his Weapons, particularly a horseback, wise, patient in Hardship, of a clear Judgment and sedate Understanding, fortunate, a Lover of Justice, mild, easie of Access, and courteous. He order'd his Body to be bury'd at *Granada*, forbid the People wearing Serge on their Heads for Mourning, and letting their Beards grow, order'd 10000 Masses to be said for him, 1000 poor to be cloath'd, 5000 Ducats to be distributed among his Servants, 6000 Ducats for Redemption of Captives, Marrying of Fatherless Maids, and Relief of poor that could not beg, left Assignments to pay his Debts, gave the Crowns of *Aragon*, *Sicily*, *Naples*, *Navarre*, and other Dominions to his Daughter Queen *Joanna*. Much more his Will contain'd, the principal Matter whereof was mention'd before, the rest being Legacies and Things of small moment, not worth enlarging upon. An Astrologer or Wizard, had told him he should dye at *Madrigal*, for which Reason he would never go to that Town, tho' he had two Bastard Daughters there Nuns, whom he lov'd entirely. The Prediction was fulfill'd at *Madrigalejo* in the 64th. Year of his Age, and 42th. of his Reign.

P. Ferdinand.

24. In regard there is much to be said in this History concerning Prince *Ferdinand*, it will not be amiss in this Place, to give some short Account of him at once, that the Reader may be better acquainted, when he shall find mention of him in the Sequel. He was born at *Alcala* in the Year 1503. thence was remov'd to be bred at *Segovia*, and then to *Arevalo*, where he continu'd but till the following Year 1504. when his Grandmother dy'd, and left the Government to her Husband, King *Ferdinand*; who gave him able Governours, and Servants, and settled his Abode at *Simancas*. There he was kept till his Father King *Philip* dy'd, when they, who had the keeping of him, carry'd him away to *Valladolid*, where he was receiv'd

receiv'd with great Joy. King *Ferdinand* being restor'd to the Government after the Death of his Son-in-law *Philip*, he took the Prince to him, being very fond of the Child, as generally Grandfathers are, and carry'd him about, wheresoever he went. Nay, he once design'd and had so order'd it, to leave him all the Dominions of *Spain*, excluding his Elder Brother the Rightful Heir, but that he was dissuaded from it at his latter End. The Prince was of a graceful Presence, a good Complexion, well-shap'd, straight, and upright, his Hair very fair, and orderly, his Lips thick, his Face full, his Nose short but handsome, his Eyes large and beautiful, his Countenance pleasing. His Wit and Quickness of Apprehension was above his Age, his Memory extraordinary. He would bear Hardship, could dissemble, lov'd Hunting, was a strict Observer of Justice and Truth, but no way generous, affected some Arts, as Painting, Graving, and above all casting, particularly of great Guns, and trying of them. He delighted to hear History read, especially Feats of Arms, was so bold that he fear'd nothing, would eat too much, delighted in mad People and strange Birds, was rather weak than strong, and had such witty Expressions when a Child, that all Persons admir'd him, yet when grown up a Man he had nothing of it. His particular Actions we shall treat of upon occasion, as they concern the History we have in hand.

C H A P

C H A P. II.

The Government of Spain settled, Charles proclaim'd King, Rebellion in Sicily, War in Navarre, Troubles in Castile, Account of Barbaruffa, and Actions of Spaniards in Africk, the Cardinal's Government, who Monsieur de Gevers was, Rise of Martin Luther.

1596.
*The Intro-
duction.*

I. AS soon as King *Ferdinand* was dead, such of his Council and Principal Officers as were present; met in the same Monastery, and sent two of their Number, to acquaint the Dean of *Lovain* the Prince's Embassador, and bring him thither. They travell'd all Night, and return'd with him in the Morning to *Madrigalejo*, where the Catholick King's Will was open'd, and the Embassador demanded a Copy of it, which was given him, and he sent it away by an Expres to *Flanders*. Then the King's Body was convey'd to *Granada*, nobly attended, and there bury'd, as became so great a Prince. I have hitherto set down many things, which seem not particularly to belong to this History, but serve as a Foundation, for the better understanding what follows, yet it has bin done with all possible Brevity, because the Matter was somewhat Foreign. Now we shall treat more at large of those things, which peculiarly belong to this Mighty Prince, and endeavour as much as may be, without swelling into too great a Volume, to display his Glorious Actions. I have spar'd no Cost or Labour, to get Original Papers and Records for ascertaining the Truth of what I write, which others, who have handled the same Subject had not, yet will I not, as some do, pretend to dive into the Hearts of Princes to discover their Intentions, and the Secrets of their Thoughts
our

out of Affection or Malice, without any other ground for what they say, but their bare Conceits and Imaginations.

2. The Catholick King's Body being interr'd, those of the Council that continu'd together, sent Orders to all the Magistrates to follow their Employments and secure the Peace till the Prince's Mind were known, and to acquaint Cardinal *Ximenes* that he was constituted Governour till his Arrival. This done, the Cardinal, the Embassador and Concil. met at *Gualupe*, where some Difference arose concerning the Government, the Embassador pleading Prince *Charles's* Commission, and the Cardinal King *Ferdinand's* Will, which agreed with the Queen's, as also *de Deans* being a Forreigner, and therefore unfit to govern by the Fundamental Laws of the Nation. At last they agreed they should both govern jointly with equal Power, and sign all Orders, and that their Residence should be at *Madrid*, a Town belonging to the Arch-bishop, because all the Kingdom was full of Tumult and Disorder, which was accordingly done. The Grandees were offended, that a Friar inferior to them in Birth, and a Stranger, of no greater Quality than he, had possess'd themselves of the Government, and therefore deputed the Duke *del Infantado*, the Constable, and Earl of *Benevente* to go to the Cardinal and ask of him by what Authority he govern'd the Kingdom, he answer'd, By the Catholick King's; and they replying, It was not in his Power to appoint a Substitute; the Cardinal carry'd them out to a Balcony, and causing some Cannon that was about his House to be fir'd, said, "By this Commission the King gave me I govern, and will continue so to do till our Sovereign Lord the Prince comes to discharge me." This Answer did not please them, and the Affairs of the Kingdom seem'd to carry an ill Aspect. *D. Peter Portocarrero* had rais'd some Troubles at *Llerena* in order to make himself Master of the Knights of *Santiago*, and the *Alcalde Villafania* was sent against him by the Council. At the same time *D. Peter Giron* eldest Son to the Earl of *Urena* who had marry'd the Lady *Mencia de Gusman*, Sister to the last Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, and to the present Duke, with the Assistance of his Father and of the Duke of *Arcos* rais'd Men and besieg'd

sieg'd the Town of *San Lucar*, pretending that Estate belong'd to him in Right of his Wife, because the present Duke was born of a second Wife, who *D. Peter Giron* said was not lawfully marry'd, being too near akin to him. Forces were sent against him, but it was needless, for having lain but 3 or 4 Days before the Town without doing any thing, he drew off and dismiss'd his Troops. Yet there were many Tumults in *Sevil* betwixt the two Parties. These and such like Disorders oblig'd the Council to write a Letter to the Prince, desiring his speedy coming over to put a stop to the growing Evils, and assuring him of their Fidelity. As soon as the Prince receiv'd the News of his Grandfather's Death, he caus'd his Obsequies to be perform'd with great Solemnity, which being ended, he was by a King at Arms proclaim'd King, together with his Mother Queen *Joanna*.

Charles
proclaim'd
King.

3. The Prince writ to the Council of *Castile*, assuring them he would come over with all possible speed, and exhorting them to be assisting to the Cardinal in the publick Administration, and to give intire Credit in all things to his Embassador *Adrian Dean* of *Louvain*. He also writ to the Cardinal recommending the Care of the Government to him, to Queen *Germana* comforting, and assuring her of all Honour and Respect, and to Prince *Ferdinand* with Promise that he would be to him a Brother and a Father. The Council answering Prince *Charles* his Letter, acquainted him with the Infurrection of *D. Peter Giron*, and how it was suppress'd, desiring that he will not countenance, or pardon such Offenders, but make Example of them, and then advise him not to take the Title of King, as long as his Mother lives. While this was transacting by Letter, the Cardinal suppress'd many Employments at Court, and retrench'd Pensions for the Increase of the King's Revenue. This he did with such absolute Power that many withdrew dissatisfy'd from Court, and some ambitious Persons went over to *Flanders*, to gain the Prince's Favour. Those Men made it their Business to persuade him to take upon him the Title of King, so did the *Flemmings* and Emperor *Maximilian*, who prevail'd with the Pope to give him that Stile. Hereupon Prince *Charles* wrote a Letter to the Governours, and Council, and to all prime Magistrates requir

requiring them to proclaim him King, since the Pope and Emperor own'd him as such, and thought it most convenient he should be so call'd. The Cardinal, and Dean of *Lovain* upon this assembled all of the Council and Nobility that were then at *Madrid*, and Doctor *Carvajal* one of the Council made a Speech urging several Reasons, why it was of absolute necessity to proclaim him King, tho' his Mother was living, she being quite distracted. The Admiral and Duke of *Alva* were against his being stil'd King whilst his Mother liv'd. The Marquess *de Villena* said, That since the King did not ask their Advice, he would not give him any. Others follow'd the Cardinal's Opinion, who almost in a Passion, said, they had as good quite disown his Power as refuse him the Title of King, and therefore immediately order'd the Corregidor, or Supream Magistrate of *Madrid* to Proclaim him, which was accordingly done, and Orders sent to all Cities, Towns Courts, and Noblemen throughout the Kingdom to own him as such. Tho' all Persons whatsoever submitted to this Order, yet very many were against it in their Hearts, some because they favour'd Prince *Ferdinand*, others because they mislik'd a Prince who had never been in *Spain*, and others for more private Ends. It was a great Mercy of God, that the *Grandeas* did not countenance any Rebellion, for if they had, the young King had met with many Difficulties before he had been settled in the Throne. Prince *Ferdinand* tho' young was not void of Ambition, and if any Body had supported him, would not have refus'd to stand up for King, 'or at least for Governour. Besides, tho' the Queen was distracted, yet several Persons resorted to her, and inculcated so much that she conceiv'd great Displeasure against her Son, and as long as she liv'd would never call him any thing but Prince.

4. When King *Ferdinand* dy'd *D. Hugo de Moncada* was Viceroy of *Sicily*; and resided at *Palermo*. There the Earls of *Camerosa* and *Golisano* incens'd the multitude against him, and having done it slipt away out of the Town. No sooner were they gone, but the Rabble rose and besieg'd the Viceroy in his Pallace, which stood upon the Edge of the Sea, and he having no means to defend himself, got into a Boat, and so aboard

Rebellion
in Sicily

The HISTORY of

a Ship, which carry'd him to *Messina*. The multitude after his Departure finding no opposition, broke into the Pallace, plunder'd it, and let loose the Prisoners. King *Charles*, who was then in *Flanders*, hearing of this Mutiny, sent the Earl of *Monteleon* Viceroy into *Sicily*, but the Rebels convey'd 40 Armed Men into a Church to murder him, and conceal'd another Man in the Bellfrey to ring the Alarm Bell. The Viceroy having Notice of it, took the Man that was to ring the Bell, forbearing to go to Church, but durst not execute the 40 Men, as Friends advis'd him. After Even Song, those 40 Men went away to the Cathedral, where they murder'd an old Citizen before the High-Altar, then shouting along the Streets, and gathering a great Rabble, they came to the Pallace, plunder'd it, kill'd *John Thomas Pater-nion*, and secur'd the new Viceroy. This done, they ran-sack'd many Houses, and murder'd several Persons. Seven Days after they releas'd the Viceroy, as standing no longer in fear of him. All the Heads of the Mutineers met every Day, and consulted how to make themselves Masters of the Castle upon the Sea; but some of the Nobles seeing the Disorders daily encrease, took up Arms, and breaking in upon them, kill'd three, and secur'd one, which encourag'd others to joyn with them; so that about 30 more were apprehended, and the Mutiny ceas'd. As soon as Prince *Charles* was inform'd of the Rebellion in *Sicily*, he order'd the Earl of *Potencia* and *Ferdinand Alarcon*, to go over from *Naples* into *Sicily*, with 5000 Foot and 200 Horse, which they did, and marching from place to place, executed above 30 of the Heads. The Duke of *Sessa*, Embassador at *Rome*, understanding that Cardinal *Volterre* had sent *Francis Imperatore* to *France*, with Letters to that King, in order to deliver up *Sicily* to him, had him seiz'd by the way, and sent to the Viceroy of *Sicily*, who having examin'd him on the Rack, found that Cardinal *Volterre*, the Earl of *Camarata*, the Treasurer *Vincencio*, *John Vincencio*, and others, had agreed to betray *Sicily* to the *French*. All the Conspirators were secur'd, convicted and executed, and Complaint being made to the Pope against the Cardinal, he was apprehended, and kept close Prisoner in the Castle of *St. Angelo*. The Earl
of

of *Camarata* dy'd very penitent, and his Son soon follow'd him, for grief of his Father's Disaster.

5. In *March*, the Governors of *Spain* receiv'd In-^{War in} War intelligence, that some Forces of King *John d' Albret* ^{Navarre.} Navarre, were marching towards *Navarre*, which put them into much Confusion, because that Kingdom was not in a Condition to oppose the Enemy, and the Viceroy there had no Interest among the People, After many Debates, several refusing it, the Duke of *Naxara* accepted of that Command, which disoblig'd the Constable of *Castile*, who was of another Faction. Mean while, the Marshal *D. Peter of Navarre*, who was in the Service of King *John*, entred *Navarre* by the way of *Valderroncal*, with 1000 Foot and some Horse, but Colonel *Ferdinand de Villabva* meeting him with a much less number, routed and took him Prisoner. He was close confin'd for some years, and at last, is said, to have murder'd himself. King *John d' Albret* and *Catherine* his Queen dying soon after, the Troubles on that side were at an End, with much more Ease than had been expected.

6. King *Charles* was impatient to go over into *Spain*, but was forced to defer it, because there was no settled Peace with *France*, as well on Account of what had hapned in *Navarre*, as because the Emperor *Maximilian* had invaded *Milan*, then in the Hands of the *French*, tho' he return'd without doing any thing. This oblig'd the young King to retard his Journey, and in the mean time, the Nobility at his Court, seeing him inclin'd to Warlike Exercises, endeavour'd to divert him with Tilting, and such like Sports. Whilst they liv'd thus pleasantly in *Flanders*, there grew many Discontents in *Spain*, the Grandees disdain'd, as has been said, to obey a Friar and Clergy-Man, not so well born as they. The Cardinal to curb them, resolv'd to arm the Commonalty, and order'd that every City and Town, should keep a certain number of Horse and Foot well disciplin'd; granting them that serv'd some Priviledges upon that Account. He also attempted to cut off the Revenues and Pensions, the Knights of Military Orders enjoy'd from their said Orders, and would have coin'd Money, had he not been dissuaded by the Council. This Order at first sight

*Mighty
Musinics.*

appear'd beneficial, but was afterwards found pernicious, because all idle Persons betook them to Arms, and committed many Outrages, and the Taxes they were exempt from paying, fell the heavier upon others. Several Cities foreseeing this Inconveniency, petition'd against the Ordinance, among them were *Salamanca*, *Burgos*, *Leon*, and above all *Valladolid*, which not only petition'd, but insisted on it, and openly resisted. A Captain being sent thither to raise 600 Men, all the People mutiny'd, and would have murder'd him, had he not hid himself in the Monastery of *S. Francis*, whence he made his Escape to *Madrid*, and acquainted the Cardinal with it. At *Salamanca*, *Avila*, *Segovia*, *Toledo*, and other Places, the Captains rais'd their Men quietly, but the News coming of what was done at *Valladolid*, the People turn'd them out, and sent the Cardinal word, they would do as *Valladolid* did. The Cardinal gather'd what Forces he could, with a Design to reduce *Valladolid* by force, which the Citizens hearing they all arm'd themselves, rais'd the Country about them, kept Watch and Ward, and fill'd up their Muster Rolls to 30000 Fighting Men, breaking into open Rebellion, and so continu'd till the following Year. Many of the Nobility, as the Admiral of *Castile*, the Earl of *Benavente*, the Constable of *Castile*, Marquess of *Astorga*, Duke of *Alva* and others, openly supported the Rebels, which was the occasion this Ordinance was recall'd afterwards, to the good Fortune of *Spain*, for had the People been us'd to handle Arms, when the next Rebellion broke out in 1519. and the following Years, it had been a difficult Matter to quell them.

Spaniards
slain in
Africk.

7. In *September* this Year, the *Spaniards* who guard-
ed *Penon* in *Africk*, sent Advice that *Barbarossa* had
possess'd himself of *Argier*, and therefore they desir'd
Succours, being apprehensive he would fall upon them.
James de Vera, an old Souldier, was sent with 8000
Men, either to take *Argier*, or bring it to composi-
tion, as it was before. He landed, summon'd the Place,
and encamp'd, but observing no Discipline, *Barba-*
russa, who had taken Notice of his Negligence, fell up-
on him so unexpected, that he slew 3000 of his Men,
took 400, and the rest got aboard as fast as they could.

Having

Having made mention of *Barbarussa*, it will not be amiss, to give some short Account of his Original and Rise. (One Mahomet, an *Albanese* Renegado, who had serv'd the *Turk*, fled for some Crime to *Mesilene*, where he marry'd a Christian Woman, by whom he had *Barbarussa*, and bred him a Seaman. He left his Father, and went away to *Constantinople*, where he was made Boatwain of a Galley, which was taken by the Knights of *Rhodes*, and he return'd naked and poor to the *Port*. There he went aboard a small Galley, sent out by private Men a Pirating, and having murder'd his Commander, ran away with the Galley, and a small Brigantine that follow'd it. Having committed this Villany, he durst not stay in the *Turk's* Dominions, but touching at *Misilene*, took his three Brothers aboard, making *Haradin* Captain of the Galliot. Sailing thence near *Negropont*, he took a *Turkish* Galliot, and near *Lippari* a *Spanish* Ship, in which were 330 *Spaniards*, 30 of them Horse, then a rich *Dutch* Fly-boat, and after it one of the Pope's Gallies, and four Fishing-Boats, and one Galliot on the Coast of *Spain*. Then sailing over to *Barbary*, he laid his Design against the strong Town of *Bugia*, being assisted by the King of *Tunis*, but as he was viewing the Place, a Cannon Ball took off his Arm, for which Reason, he was ever after call'd, *One Arm'd Barbarussa*. This oblig'd him to quit the Siege at that time, but he soon return'd again stronger, and batter'd the Place many Days, before which he lost 500 Men, and at last was forc'd to desist. He had burnt his Fleet when he landed, and being now in a desperate Condition, poor and abandon'd, *Benaicadi*, a *Moor*, took Compassion of him, and carry'd him to a Village of his, where he continu'd, till the *Algerines* weary of their Subjection to the *Spaniards*, sent and invited him to their Town, to deliver them from that Slavery, which he accepted, and being come thither was immediately proclaim'd King. Soon after he took the City of *Tunis*, and so came to be King of *Algier* and *Tunis*. The City of *Tremezen* was divided into Factions, the weaker call'd *Barbarussa* to their Assistance, and he laying hold of that Opportunity made himself Master of the Place, murder'd those that had call'd him in, and tyranniz'd over the others.

The HISTORY of

Nine Months after, fearing some Conspiracy, he gave out he would resign the City to its right Owner, and upon that pretence, got together about 70 of the Principal Men into his House, put them all to Death, plunder'd many Houses, and said, he did it, that they might not rebel against him, as they had against their lawful Sovereign. Those that fled, had recourse to the Governour of *Oran* for Succours, who lent them 300 *Spaniards*, with which Supply they besieg'd *Barbarussa*, and he seeing himself distress'd, sent to his Brother *Haradin* at *Algier* for Relief. *Haradin* sent him 600 Men, which being known at *Oran*, 600 *Spaniards* were sent out against them. They made the Infidels retire to *Alcalde Bennarax*, where the Christians kept them in, but were by them surpriz'd, and 400 of them kill'd and taken. Upon the first Notice of this Disaster, Colonel *Argote* marched from *Oran* with 2000 Foot and some Horse, the *Turks* submitted themselves to him, but some Quarrel arising, they were all cut off to a Man, and among them *Barbarussa's* Brother *Mahomet*. The Colonel immediately march'd to *Tremezen*, and so hotly press'd the Siege, that *Barbarussa* with his Friend *Benalcadi*, a number of *Turks* and all his Treasure, stole out of the Town at a Postern. *Argote* understanding it, pursu'd him 30 Leagues, took all his Treasure, kill'd him, and brought away his Head to *Oran*. Thus ended that cruel Enemy of *Christendome*, in the Year 1518. His Brother *Haradin*, what by Force, and what by Art, establish'd himself in *Algier*, and was receiv'd as King, what further relates to this barbarous Corsair, who became the Terror of all those Coasts, shall be said in its proper place. page 545 more of Barbarussa

Benalcadi

8. Kingdoms are often ruin'd, because Kings rely too much on their Favourites, as may appear by the Rebellion that hapned in *Spain*, through the excessive Avarice of *William de Croy*, Lord of *Gevers* and Duke of *Arscot*, Governour to the young King *Charles*, and his great Favourite. This *William de Croy* was descended from the Kings of *Hungary*, and gave their Arms with only a small distinction. As to his Person, it was graceful, his Judgment clear, well-spoken, vigilant and industrious in Business, very sedate,

William de Croy.

sedate, and patient, excessively ambitious, and above all measure given to Avarice. He bought the Place of Chamberlain of Prince *Chimay*, and being once about the young Prince's Person, omitted nothing that might gain his Favour, so that when Prince *Charles* took upon him the Government of *Flanders* he had the whole Ascendant over him. Yet he ever made it his Business, to use the Prince to the Affairs of Government, and render him capable of them. That very Year, Prince *Charles* entred upon the Government of the *Netherlands*, he perswaded him to hold a Chapter of the Order of the Golden Fleece, where many undeserving Persons were admitted to that Honour, which brought much Odium and Disgrace upon *William de Croy*, of whom we shall have much Occasion to speak hereafter, and therefore the Reader will not be displeas'd with this short Digression, to show who he was. At the Beginning of the Year 1517. the Emperor *Maximilian* came into *Flanders* to visit his Grandson *Charles*, and settle Affairs that he might come over into *Spain*, where his Presence was much wanted. In order to secure all behind, Peace was concluded with the *French King* at *Noyon*, whereof the Principal Conditions were, 1. That the Difference about the Kingdom of *Naples*, should be left to Arbitration. 2. That King *Charles* should pay the King of *France*, 100000 Ducats yearly, on Account of *Naples*. 3. That King *Charles* should marry the Lady *Louisa* then a Year old, or if she dy'd, any other that should be born to the King of *France*, or in default of them his Sister-in-law *Renata*. 4. That the Emperor should deliver up *Verona* to the *Venetians*, they paying him 200000 Ducats at two Payments. The young King accepted of this Peace, to facilitate his Journey into *Spain*, as did the Emperor, as well to finger so much Money, as because he could not maintain *Verona*; yet it lasted not long through the Fault of the *French King*, as will appear in its place. All things being settled on that Side, the Emperor return'd to *Germany*, and the King leaving his Aunt *Margaret* to govern *Flanders*, went away to *Middleburg*, where he had a Fleet of 80 Sail to carry him to *Spain*, but the contrary Winds kept him there many Days.

1517.

Peace
betwixt
France and
Spain.9. *Valla-*

Valladolid 9. *Valladolid* still continu'd in Rebellion at the
reduc'd. Beginning of the Year 1617, the other Cities had

*The Cardi-
 nal's great
 Power.*

submitted, and suffer'd the Men to be rais'd, that Mutiny began about. But the King himself writing to them, and the Governour's consenting they should be exempt from those Levies, and granting others their Demands, they at last laid down their Arms, and submitted themselves. The Dean of *Lovain* sent Complaints, that the Cardinal allow'd him no share in the Government, therefore in Order to lessen his Power, the King sent over *Monsieur Lassau* with Commission to be a third Governor, that so the two might counterbalance the Greatness of the other. Yet the Cardinal valu'd not both of them, but rul'd all with absolute Authority, and tho' afterwards a fourth Commissioner was sent, he carry'd it from them all; so that he alone sign'd all Orders, and they could not prevail to have any part in the Authority, which was highly resent'd in *Flanders*, as afterwards appear'd. About this time, there hapned a great Contention between *D. James de Toledo*, Son to the Duke of *Alva*, and *D. Antony de Zuniga*, Son to the Duke of *Bejar*, about the Grand Priorship of the Military Order of *St. John*, both of them pretending Right to it. The King order'd the Governors to give it for *D. Antony*, but the Duke of *Alva* and his Party prepar'd to stand upon their Guard, and openly rail'd at the Cardinal, who would execute the King's Orders. The Cardinal prevented him, sending Forces which secur'd the Town of *Consuegra*, and deliver'd it to *D. Antony*. This put not an End to the Quarrel, which continu'd till the King came into *Spain*, and divided the Priorship between the two Competitors, giving *D. Antony* a Recompence for what he took from him. For all this, the Order own'd no Prior but *D. James*, and the Enmity increas'd daily between the two Houses, till *D. James* being at his Command on the Frontiers about *Perpignan*, dy'd suddenly, which put an End to their Strife.

*Avarice of
 the Flem-
 ings.*

10. Before the King came into *Spain*, many *Spaniards* went over to him into *Flanders*, either to get Employments where they were not known, being of base Extraction, about private Business, or else to rise by doing others ill Offices, and railing. These, first stirr'd

stirr'd up the Avarice of the *Flemmings*, exciting them to expose all Places to Sale. Nay, some of them would have perswaded the King to create a new Council in *Castile*, and remove the old, which consisted of Wise and Experienced Persons, bred under that subtle King *Ferdinand*. And tho' *Monsieur de Gevers* was against it, yet many Places of great Note were bought. *John Savage* the Chancellor, manag'd all this Affair underhand, by means of one Doctor *Suquette* his particular Friend. The King was wholly ignorant of it; yet by the by to secure his Favour, they supply'd him with part of the Profit. This ran so high, that some of the great Offices of the Kingdom, and Seats in Council were sold, and a Privy Councillor went about in *Monsieur de Gevers* his Name, to perswade all that had considerable Employments at Court, to compound to be continu'd, which many to save Trouble did, and 20000 Ducats were rais'd for *Monsieur de Gevers*. The Council understanding it, writ at large to the King, complaining of that irregular Proceeding, and begging his Majesty would put a Stop to it, before the Consequences grew fatal. This good Advice took no effect, for when Princes are led away by their Favourites, they neither see nor hear; and Petitions are generally referr'd to those very Men, against whom they are presented. The Chancellor abated nothing of his Avarice, and when the King came over to *Spain*, he expos'd all things to Sale, insomuch, that it was reported, he had gather'd, and sent into *Flanders*, 50000 Ducats in four Months stay he made, which occasion'd the Troubles that ensu'd in *Spain*. But at this time, the King's absence was of very dangerous Consequence, for the Earl of *Urena* was at variance with the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, and would not try his Cause according to Law, but by the Sword; because his Son *D. Peter Giron* was a Man of Courage, bold and resolute. They had abus'd his Majesty's Officers, and were in open Rebellion, therefore the Council writ to his Majesty at large, pressing his speedy Coming, because the State of Affairs requir'd his Presence, and particularly the Practices of the Earl of *Urena* in *Andaluzia*, call'd for a speedy and powerful Redress. This Letter came to the King, when he

was

The HISTORY of

was ready to set forwards, and made him hasten his Journey. The Governors of *Spain* continu'd at *Madrid*, but could not agree among themselves, and the Cardinal was indispos'd. The *Marquess de Villena* seeing the Kingdom in such Disorder, came to *Madrid*, pretending to assist the Cardinal, but in reality to sollicite for the Earl of *Urena*, which he did so effectually, that he reconcil'd the Cardinal and him; the Earl came to Court, and all his past Offences were put up. At this time Pope *Leo* the Tenth created 20 Cardinals, of which number was *Adrian* Dean of *Levain*, one of the then Governors of *Spain*, and afterwards Pope.

11. *Martin Luber*, an *Augustin* Friar, began this Year to spread abroad his new Doctrine, and because he and his Followers occasion'd mighty Trouble to the Glorious Monarch *Charles* the Vth. and have a great Share in this History, I will not think much to give some short Account of him at once, till the time, that the spreading of his Principles embroil'd the Empire and all *Europe*. He was born at *Eisleben* in *Saxony*, on the the 11th. of *November* 1485. being *S. Martin's* Day, of whom he took that Name. Having study'd his Philosophy, he apply'd himself to the Law, but being terrify'd by a Thunderbolt, or Flash of Lightning that fell just by him, he quit- ted the World, and became a Friar of the Order of *S. Augustin*; where he study'd Divinity, and always affected to start new Opinions. He was subject to Convulsion-Fits, or the Falling-Sickness, but some, who knew him well, said, he was possess'd, and he seem'd to own it, when preaching one Day, he said, he knew the Devil, and had eaten above a hand- ful of Salt with him. After this, he was remov'd to *Wittemberg* to teach Philosophy, and having taken his Degree of Doctor, by the Duke of *Saxony's* Fa- vour, was promoted to be Professor of Divinity, and, having a pleasant Knack of Preaching, rather Wit and Raillery than sound Doctrine; he gain'd great Applause. *Luber* being now in such Esteem, it hapned, that Pope *Leo* the Xth. granted certain Indulgences, and appointed the Cardinal *Albertus* Archbishop of *Mentz*, his Commissary General throughout *Germany*. The Cardinal, for what Reason

son is not known, committed the Preaching and Publishing of these Indulgences to the *Dominican Friars*; whereas before that time, those of *S. Augustin* always had the Preaching of the Crusade. This so incens'd them, that *John Stapucius* Vicar General of that Order, and *Martin Luther* began to rail openly at the Cardinal, and at last *Luther* with the same Liberty, inveigh'd against the Indulgences themselves. Then he set up 95 Propositions offering to maintain them, and not content with that, writ a Book in Defence of them, dedicating and submitting it to the Pope. This was his beginning, and *John Frederick* Duke of *Saxony* took his Part so obstinately, that he lost his Dominions on that Account, but his great Motive was the seizing the Revenues of the Church, as the Rabble's was the rifling of Churches. I will say no more of *Luther* in this Place, because we shall often have Occasion in due time, to speak of his farther Progress.

C H A P.

C H A P. III.

King Charles comes into Spain, holds the Cortes or Parliament of Castile and Aragon, is sworn King by those People, the Catalonians and Valencians, is elected Emperor, Original of the Rebellion in Valencia, that in Austria, Actions of the Moors.

¹⁵
Charles
comes into
Spain.

I. IN August 1517. the Governors with Prince Ferdinand remov'd from *Madrid* to *Aranda*, where they receiv'd Orders from the King, to dismiss all the Servants about the Prince, and put others in their Places, for that they encourag'd him to aspire to the Crown, and made Interest for him: The Prince let fall some Words when his Servants were remov'd, that declar'd his ambitious Thoughts, and the Servants put away, were most of them afterwards engag'd in the following Rebellion. On the 12th. of August, the King went aboard, and had an indifferent good Voyage, but that by the way, the Ship that carry'd his Horses took Fire, and in it were burnt 22 Pages and the Yeoman of the Stirrup. The 13th. Day, the Fleet put into *Villa Viciosa* in *Asturias*, the King was nobly entertain'd by the Gentry there, but the Country being barren, he went away to *S. Vincente de la Barquera*, where he continu'd some Days. Cardinal *Ximenes* was indispos'd at the Monastery of *Aguilera*, and there being some Difference betwixt him and the Council, they left him. The King order'd them to return to him, which they did. Several Persons of Note set out an Order to attend the King at *S. Vincent*, but he order'd them to come no further than *Aguilar del Campo*, because the Country being poor could not supply the Company that re-
forded

sorted to him. Those that came out of *Flanders*, endeavour'd all they could to retard the King's Journey, fearing the Cardinal and *Spanish* Nobility would govern the King, and put them by; therefore they kept him back, hoping the Cardinal would dye, and they should be deliver'd of that Danger. At *Agnilar del Campo*, the Nobility petition'd the King, to be admitted to serve the Employments they had in his Court, but he put them off till they came to *Valladolid*. In his way thither he visited his Mother at *Tordesillas*. Being near *Valladolid* he sent two Letters, one to the Cardinal and the other to the Council, ordering them to meet him at *Majados*; and in that to the Cardinal he said, he would then give him his *Quietus*; which Affront after such faithful Service, so affected the Cardinal, that his Fever increasing, he dy'd a few Days after, and was buried at *Alcala* in the Colledge of *S. Ildefonsus*, founded by himself. He erected many other Structures, and was a Man excellently qualify'd, and just, tho' he might err as Man. There is a particular History of his Life, as he has well deserv'd.

2. At *Majados* the Council met the King, and were admitted to continue in their Places, and on the 18th of *November*, he made his solemn Entry into *Valladolid*. Upon the Death of Cardinal *Ximenes*, the King confer'd the Archbishoprick of *Toledo* upon *William de Croy* Bishop of *Cambray*, which was much resent'd, it being the best Jewel of the Crown. But the King was now not above 17 Years and a half old, tho' of an excellent Disposition, yet others govern'd him, and particularly Monsieur *de Gèvres*, who in what related to *Spain*, was guided by the Bishop of *Badajoz* and other *Spaniards*, who had more Ambition than Honesty. About the latter End of this Year 1517. *Adrian* Dean of *Lovain* receiv'd his Cardinal's Cap, sent him by Pope *Leo*. At the same time, the Cortes or Parliament was summon'd, to meet at the Beginning of the ensuing Year. Embassadors came now from all Courts in *Christendom*, to Congratulate the King's Happy Arrival, but the *French* went further, and demanded the Restitution of the Kingdom of *Navarre* to *Henry d' Albret*, Son to King *John d' Albret*. The King answer'd them in general

general Terms to gain time. About *Christmas* there was an extraordinary Tilting, at which several Gentlemen were wounded, and 12 Horses kill'd ; these Sports and Pleasures ended in a Plague, whereof 30 or 40 dy'd in a Day, and whatever House it got into the whole Family was swept away.

Cortes of Valladolid 3. By the 4th. of *January*, 1517. all the Members of the Cortes or Parliament were come to *Valladolid*, and met in the Monastery of *S. Paul*. Their chief Business was to consider, whether Prince *Charles* should be admitted as King whilst his Mother liv'd, and in case he was, that the Oath of Allegiance should not be taken to him, till he had sworn to the Articles pass'd in the Cortes in the Year 1511. The first Day they met, the *Flemish* Chancellor, and another *Flemish* Doctor sat there by Commission, which was ill taken, and the whole Assembly declar'd against Foreigners sitting among them. Whereupon one *D. Zumel* who was their Speaker was threaten'd, and ill us'd by the Chancellor and his Creatures ; but the whole Assembly resent'd it, and petition'd, that the King would swear to keep the Priviledges of the Kingdom, and that their Members might not be molested. After this, the King went in Person to the lower House, where the Bishop of *Badajoz* made a Speech for him, giving an Account of his whole Life, and what Leagues he had made with Christian Princes, and Lastly, requiring them to take the Oath of Allegiance to him. *Dr. Zumel* as Speaker for the rest, return'd Thanks for the Speech, and said, they were ready to take their Oath, provided his Highness would first swear to preserve their Liberties. After which, most of the Members took the Oath of Allegiance, but some still refus'd. Then the King swore to preserve their Ancient Rights and Priviledges ; but did not mention that Article about not giving Employments to Strangers. *Dr. Zumel* several times urg'd to have that Article particularly express'd. The King answer'd, This is it I swear, meaning what he had sworn before ; so that Matter remain'd undecided. Then the Nobility was requir'd to take their Oath, but among them all, only the Duke of *Najara* offer'd to do it presently, the rest refus'd, being affronted, that it had been first tender'd the Commons ;

mons, whereupon the Business was put off till the Sunday following. Mean while Doctor *Zumel* solicited those that had not taken their Oath, to stand out till the King had sworn to the Articles insisted upon. The Business was bandy'd with much Heat on both sides, and at last, the King promis'd to keep his Oath in the Sense they desir'd it. Some would have this Compliance recorded, but he grew angry and said, What he had done was enough. With this all the Lords Spiritual and Commons submitted, and took the Oath of Allegiance. This done, the Commons made a florid Speech to his Majesty, expressing the Duties of the Regal Authority, recommending the strict Execution of Justice, and good Choice of Ministers under him. Then they begg'd his Royal Assent to these following Proposals. 1. That his Mother Queen *Joanna*, should be serv'd and attended as became her Dignity. To which his Answer was, that he thank'd them, and they should find he made that his chief Care. 2. That he would be pleas'd to marry as soon as might be, to continue his Succession in the Kingdom. *Answ.* That he would consider of it, and do as was most for his Honour and the good of the Kingdom. 3. That Prince *Ferdinand* might not depart the Kingdom, till he was marry'd and had Children. *Answ.* That he would take care of his Brother, as was most for the Benefit of the Kingdom. 4. That he would confirm the Laws, Customs and Liberties of the Countrey, and lay no new Impositions. *Answ.* That he would keep his Oath, and lay no new Taxes. 5. That he should not bestow Preferments on Strangers, or naturalize them, that he should recall any Letters of Naturalization already past, and command the Archbishop of *Toledo*, to come over and spend the Revenue of that Church there. 6. That all Embassadors should be Natives. 7. That his Servants should be *Spaniards*. 8. That he would be pleas'd to speak *Spanish*. 9. That he would not alienate the Revenues of the Crown, and would do Justice to any that shall ask it. 10. That he would press the Pope about a particular Affair, relating to the Church of *Murcia*. 11. That he would make no Governour of the Fortres of *Lava*, because it belong'd to the City of *Burgos*.

D

12. That

12. That he would order the *Moneros* of *Espinosa*, to have their Priviledge of guarding his Perion secur'd to them. 13. That he would not suffer *Arevalo* and *Olmedo* to be alienated from the Crown. 14. That Towns which had compounded for their Taxes should continue in that Nature, and others might be allow'd to compound, at the Rate they then pay'd. 15. That no Reversions of Places be granted. 16. No Money carry'd out of the Countrey. 17. That the Law of Appeals be granted in all cases. All hitherto were granted, save this last Proposition which was rejected. 18. That no Horses be carry'd abroad. 19. That playing at Dice be prohibited. 20. That all *Nali prosequi's* be surceas'd. 21. That all Courts and their Officers be oblig'd to receive no more than the establish'd Fees, and that they be call'd to account every two years for the Execution of their Offices, and Complaints hear'd against them. All granted. 22. That no Lodgings might be taken up by the Harbingers where the Court was. This rejected. 23. That he would order the Clergy should have Liberty to make Wills, else the Pope would have all the Wealth of the Kingdom. 24. That no Person should give any Estate real to the Church. 25. That the Kingdom of *Navarre* may continue annex'd to the Crown of *Castile*. 26. That no Cattle be carry'd out of the Kingdom. 27. That the New Taxes be taken off. Many more Articles there were to the Number of 74, besides private Requests, all too tedious to insert, and not material, to which the King answer'd very graciously. *F. Antony Guevara* says, the Subsidy the Cortes granted his Majesty was 150 Millions of *Maravedies*. *Peter Mexia* says 600000 Ducats. The first Sum amounts but to 78125 Pounds English, the second to 180000. *Moneros de Espinosa* mention'd in the 12th. Article are as ancient as Earl *Sancho* of *Castile*, who being deliver'd from a Conspiracy by two Servants in his Family, gave them and their Heirs for ever, the Priviledge of being the King's immediate Guards about his Person and Bed. The last Thing the King did at the Cortes, was to appoint the Marquis of *Denia* Governor of the Queen's Family, and of the Town where she resided, in which Employment he continu'd as long as he liv'd, which was

was till the Year 1537. and then the Marquess his Son succeeded him. This done, the Cortes were dismiss'd.

4. On the 14th. of *March*, there was a Royal Tilt-
 ing at *Valladolid* of 25 *Spaniards* of Quality against as *A Feast of Tilt-
 ing.* many *Flemmings*; many were thrown and 7 kill'd, which makes good the Saying, *That this Exercise is not sharp enough to be practis'd in earnest, but too rough in jest.* The King himself ran against *Charles de Lanoy* his Master of the Horse, and at four Courses broke 3 Lances, tho' not full 18 Years of Age. It is reported, that *Charles* the Vth. was so Excellent a Horseman, and so notably Expert at handling his Weapons, that when in Process of Time he would come disguis'd to share in some of these Sports he was presently known. Having visited his Mother, and paid all Respect due to Queen *Germana*, he resolv'd to set forwards towards *Aragon*, to hold the Cortes of that Kingdom, and cause them to take the Oath of Allegiance to him. At the same time he took Order for sending his Brother *Ferdinand* into *Flanders*, not thinking it safe to keep him in *Spain*, and accordingly he was sent away in a few Days, with an Honourable Retinue. Then the King set forward, and arriv'd at *Zaragoza* on the 15th. of *May*, where he was receiv'd with all possible Demonstrations of Joy. The People mutter'd, because Prince *Ferdinand* was sent away before the King was marry'd and had Children. Many complain'd that Monsieur *de Gevres* and the Foreigners govern'd the King, and accus'd that Favourite of Avarice. They said the King was harsh, and no Lover of *Spaniards*. Much more shall be said on this Subject, as the Cause of the ensuing Rebellion. Neither Favour nor Prejudice shall prevail with me to deviate from the Truth, but I shall impartially relate what I find upon undeniable Proof, and in *Peter Mexia* the Emperor's Historiographer, Monsieur *de Gevres* was a Wise Man and Faithful to his Prince, and did him considerable Service, but this does not exempt him from the Imputation of Avarice. Yet I shall not follow *Mexia*, because he seems to be somewhat partial, but rather the Account left by *F. Antony de Guevara*, who was a Person of Quality and a Religious Man; and therefore, it is to be sup-
 pos'd,

pos'd, he spoke the Truth without Partiality. The King can't be blam'd because he was young, and when he came to riper Years, gave sufficient Demonstrations of his Affection to the *Spaniards*, besides that he never had any Favourite, but what well deserv'd to be so.

Cortes of
Aragon.

5. Some time after the King's Arrival at *Zaragoza*, the Cortes were open'd, and kept the King there eight Months. The *Flemmish* Lord Chancellor dy'd there, much hated by the *Spaniards*, and *Mercurino de Gattinara*, a great Civilian succeeded him. Many dy'd of the Plague this Year in *Spain*. The Cardinal of *Viterbo* sent by the Pope as Legate had Audience at *Zaragoza*, and propos'd to His Majesty to enter into a League against the *Turk*, and having receiv'd a satisfactory Answer return'd well pleas'd. A Match was here concluded between *Ellenor* the King's Sister, and *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*, and accordingly the new Queen was sent into that Kingdom in *November* this Year. At the same time the Peace between *France* and *Spain* was ratify'd anew, and in pursuance to it, the King paid the *French* 150000 Florins in Gold, and as a Demonstration of sincere Friendship His Catholick Majesty wore the Collar of the Order of *S. Michael* on the Feast of that Archangel, and the *French* King that of the *Golden Fleece* on *St. Andrew's* Day. But all these Demonstrations of Friendship ended in mortal Animosities. The *Aragonian* Nobility refus'd to take their Oath to the King, unless he would suffer his Brother to be sworn Heir at the same time conditionally if he had no Heir, at which he was so displeas'd that he answer'd not a Word; but the Earl of *Benavente* said, It were fit to raise an Army and conquer them; to which the Earl of *Aran-da* reply'd in such Terms, as set the whole Palace into an Uproar, and the King had much ado to part them. The King confin'd the Nobles to their Houses, but they broke their Confinement, and meeting that Night in the Streets with their Followers 27 Men were wounded, and more Harm had been done, had not the Archbishop, and 8 of the *Grandeas* that were with him gone out and parted the Fray. After all this, the *Aragonians* comply'd, follow'd the Example of *Castile*, and took their Oath to the King together with his Mother.

6. Here

His Kings sister
marries

6. Here the King receiv'd the News of the Death *Actions* of One-arm'd *Barbarussa*, and of his Brother *Haradin* the Moors. posseſſing himself of *Argier*, as was said before. Therefore he sent Orders to *D. Hugo de Moncada* Vice-king of *Sicily* to gather a sufficient Fleet and Forces, and passing over into *Africk* to expel that Usurper *D. Hugo* gather'd 4500 old *Spaniſh* Soldiers, and having taken in some Recruits at *Bugia* and *Oran*, landed before *Argiers*, where he took *Serrezuela*, and might have made himself Master of *Argier* had he attack'd it presently, but delaying 7 or 8 Days to expect the King of *Tremezen*, who was to come to his Assistance with a Body of Men, a sudden Storm rising beat 26 Ships to pieces upon the Shore, and in them 4000 Men were lost. *D. Hugo* gathering the small Remains of his Wreck went to winter at *Ibisa*, where his Men mutinying for their Pay plunder'd the Island. *Haradin* enrich'd with the Booty of the *Spaniards*, sent out some Vessels under the Command of one *Hassan* to scour the Coast of *Valencia*. *Hassan* plunder'd the Town of *Ampoſta*, and return'd with a good Booty, yet *Haradin* cudgell'd him, suspecting he had conceal'd something of Value. Soon after *Benalcadi*, the great Friend to the first *Barbarussa*, having been ill us'd by *Haradin*, came with what Forces he could raise against *Argier*, and *Hassan* who was sent to oppose him, joining with him to revenge the Strokes he had receiv'd, they took *Argier*, forcing *Haradin* to save his Life to put to Sea with his Wealth aboard such Vessels as he had. In this Condition he scour'd the Seas joining other Pirates, and robbing all he met, till being grown strong he fate down before *Argier*, and *Benalcadi* being betray'd to him, entered the Place, and made himself King of it and of *Tunis*. As soon as settled, he sent out the Pyrate *Cachidiablo* with 17 Sail of small Vessels, who plunder'd some Towns on the Coast of *Valencia*, and took several Ships. *D. Hugo de Moncada* after his Loss at *Argier*, thought to revenge himself on the Pyrats of *Gelvez*, but meeting them near *Sardinia* lost two Gallies, and was himself wounded. Rather exasperated than dismay'd by this Misfortune, he got together 13 Gallies, 70 Ships, and other Vessels, in which he had 10000 Foot, 800 Men at Arms, and 500 Light Horse.

*this is misplac'd
it should be a
6 out the page 37*

With this Force he landed at *Gelves*, and being wounded in the Shoulder, was very near to be routed, the *Spaniards* and *Italians* flying, but the *Germans* stood till they rally'd, and then made the *Moors* turn their Backs. The *Xeque* or King submitted himself, promising to pay to the King of *Spain* 12000 Doubles a Year. This hapned in 1520, but I have joyn'd it together, that I may have no more Occasion for some time to speak of *Africk*, *Barbarussa*, or the Coast of *Spain*.

7. This Year 1518. dy'd the Lady *Claudia*, Daughter to the *French* King, to whom King *Charles* was contracted. She had a Sister not full a Year old, whom the *French* would have the King stay for, according to the Articles of Peace concluded at *Noyon*, which they themselves broke. The Popes Legate press'd for the Fleet *Spain* was to furnish for the Security of *Italy*, because *Selim* the *Turk* putt up with his Success against the Sultan of *Egypt*, threatned *Christendome*. *Maximilian* the Emperor growing old, summon'd the Electors in order to choose a King of the *Romans* to succeed him, and thought to propose his Grandson *Ferdinand*, but was dissuaded from it by the Pope and others, who favour'd his Brother. The King of *France* oppos'd him with all his Power, and stood Candidate himself; but nothing was concluded at that time. From *Zaragoza* the King sent *Garzi Jofre de Loaysa*, a Knight of *Rhodes*, his Embassador to *Selim* the Great *Turk*, desiring he would not suffer the Pilgrims that went to *Hierusalem* to be molested, but the main Design was to discover the Designs of that Infidel, who answer'd, It should be done, provided the *Greeks* were not wrong'd in *Italy*, and other Parts of his Majesties Dominions.

1519.
Charles
elected Em-
peror.

8. About the Beginning of the Year 1519. the Cortes of *Aragon* breaking up, the King went away to *Barcelona*, and design'd thence for *Valencia* and other Ports, but was prevented by the News of the Death of the Emperor *Maximilian* his Grandfather, who departed this Life on the 12th. of *January* in the 63th. Year of his Age, and 25th. of his Reign. The Archbishop Elector of *Menix* summon'd the Electors to meet at *Frankfort*, where there was mighty Contention between the Parties of the two Kings of *France*

France and Spain, which retarded the Election, so that the *Interregnum* lasted 5 Months and 17 Days. During this time to determine the Strife, the Electors voted for *Frederick* Duke of *Saxony*, but he refusing to accept of the Dignity, and giving his Vote for *Charles* King of *Spain*, the rest of the Colledge follow'd him, and accordingly the said King *Charles* was declar'd Emperor on the 28th. of *June*, 1519. The new Emperor's Embassadors were immediately acquainted with his Election, and *Frederick* Duke of *Bavaria* appointed by the Colledge to bring his Majesty the News. But some private Persons were so expeditious, to gain the Reward of being the first Messengers of so great Joy, that they came in nine Days from *Francfort* to *Barcelona*, which is about 300 Leagues.

9. In *March*, the King held a Chapter of the Order of the *Golden Fleece* at *Barcelona*, and bestow'd that Honour on the Constable of *Castile*, the Duke of *Alva*, the Duke of *Vejar*, the Admiral of *Castile*, the Marquess of *Astorga*, the Duke of *Cardona*, and Prince of *Biffignano*. The Duke of *Benavente* proudly refus'd it, saying, He was too much a *Castilian* to accept of Foreign Honours. Queen *Germana* following the Advice of the Apostle, thought it better to marry than burn, and accordingly took to Husband the Marquess of *Brandenburg*, Brother to the Elector of that Name; for which she was very much censur'd; yet the King honour'd the Wedding with his Presence, to gain that Elector's Voice. The *Catalonians* not only refus'd to take their Oath to King *Charles*, but scoff'd at the *Aragonians* and *Castilians*, for having admitted him as King, whilst his Mother was yet living, but at last they submitted as well as the others. Nevertheless their Cortes or Parliament was very troublesome to the King, and much more to Monsieur de *Geuvres*, upon whom they were so severe, that he wish'd himself out of *Spain*. The *French* still insisting that the Kingdom of *Navarre* should be restor'd to *Henry d'Albret*, Commissioners met at *Montpelier* to adjust that Matter, but soon broke up without concluding any thing. On the 22th. of *August* this Year Duke *Frederick* of *Bavaria*, Brother to the Elector *Palatine*, came to *Barcelona*, and deliver'd his Message from the Electors to the King, by which they conferr'd the Imperial

The King
sworn in
Catalonia

rial Honour on him. He return'd his Thanks to each of them in particular, and richly presented their Embassador. This his Exaltation was the *French King's* greatest Grievance, Envy, and Jealousie possessing his Heart, so that he could no longer suppress these prevailing Passions, but soon broke out into War, and there are sufficient Grounds to believe, he underhand blew the Coals of Rebellion, which afterwards broke out in *Spain*. Order was immediately taken throughout all *Spain*, about the manner of Writing the Emperor's Style in all publick Acts, and it was settled to be thus, CHARLES, *By the Grace of God, King of the Romans, Emperor Elect, always August, and JOANNA His Mother, with the same CHARLES, by the same Grace, King and Queen of Castile and Leon, &c.* And at bottom, *By His Majesty's Order, N. Secretary to His Imperial, and their Catholick Majesties.* The same Month Charles was chosen Emperor, *Soliman* Emperor of the *Turks* ascended that Throne, his Father *Selim* dying of the Plague.

Original of
the Rebel-
lion in Va-
lencia.

10. The Emperor had not Leisure to visit the Kingdom of *Valencia*, because his Affairs call'd him away into *Germany*, and yet he pres'd to have the People there take the Oath of Allegiance to him. For the better understanding the miserable Relation we shall give of that Kingdom, it is necessary to look some years back. In the Year 1503, a *Turkish* Pirate had plunder'd a Town call'd *Cullera* on the Coast of *Valencia*, and carry'd away abundance of Captives. To prevent the like for the future, King *Ferdinand* order'd that the Commonalty, who before were unarm'd, should have Arms given them and be disciplin'd by ten and ten, under Officers of their own. Before this the Gentry only bore Arms, and oppress'd the multitude. But now the Commons being us'd to handle their Weapons, and the Gentry giving themselves up to Pleasure, the inferior sort hated them mortally, because they ravish'd the *Moorish* Women, and abus'd the Tradefinen instead of paying them. The Populacy seeing themselves thus oppress'd, advis'd with one *John Lorenzo* a Cloth-worker, a Crafty old Man, that dealt much in Prophecies and Predictions, and particularly had one, that said the *Moors* should be Masters of the Kingdom. For this reason they

they resolv'd to send to the Emperor to beg leave, that they might be exercis'd in Companies of 50 Men under a Captain, to defend themselves against the *Moors* and bad Christians. The Emperor at this time was at *Barcelona*, preparing for his Departure to *Germany*, and not having time to go to *Valencia*, sent a Message to the three Estates, desiring them to take their Oath to him, because he could not come himself. The Nobility would not so much as hear of it, saying they were as good as the *Aragonians* and *Castilians*, and he might as well stay among them two Months, as he had been with the others two Years. *John Lorenzo* the Clothier, and a Weaver led all the People, and stirr'd them up to Mutiny. These two went to *Barcelona*, were well receiv'd by Monsieur *de Gevres*, and had leave to associate, and they further desiring leave to choose 13 *Sindics* to be Heads of the Association, the Emperor assign'd them *Mizer Garzes* of *Zaragoza*, and of the Council of *Aragon* to go with them to *Valencia*, and see whether what they demanded was fit to be granted. He, when there, whether through Corruption, or by Intreaty caus'd 13 *Sindics* to be chosen in his Presence. This Election was the Cause of much Mischief, for the People wanted them not to redress Grievances, but to head them in their Mutinies against the Nobility. This *Mizer Garzes* was a wicked Fellow, who rais'd a Tumult the first time the Emperor was at *Zaragoza*, and did this Mischief at *Valencia*, and was afterwards, as he deserv'd, hang'd by the Emperor's Order. Before he left *Valencia* the People associated, chose their Officers, and exercis'd on *Sundays* and Holy-Days. The Gentry complain'd to the Emperor, but Monsieur *de Gevres* thinking he had secur'd the Commons, made no Account of them, being angry that they would not take their Oath to the Emperor, who sent Cardinal *Adrian* to *Valencia* to have them swear to him, but they positively refus'd; whereupon he approv'd of the Association of the Commons, and went away, leaving the City in an Uproar. What Mischiefs ensu'd of this Association shall be related, when we speak of the Rebellion of *Castile*.

Complaints made to the Emperor. 11. It was decreed at the Cortes at *Valladolid* that Foreigners should not be employ'd, nor the Revenues of the Crown rais'd. Neither was observ'd, Money was publickly carry'd out of the Kingdom, and *Flemmings* had Places bestow'd on them, which they sold. These things exasperated the People, who mutter'd with more Liberty than became them. The Farmers of the Revenue contrary to what was enacted at *Valladolid*, presently fell to advancing the Revenue. The City of *Segovia* resolv'd to oppose it, and therefore acquainted that of *Avila* with its Resolutions. That Place drew in *Toledo*, and in short, all the Towns that had Right of sending Representatives to the Cortes, resolv'd to petition the Emperor, and gave their Instructions to their said Representatives. The Earl of *Palma* Corregidor, or Supream Magistrate of *Toledo*, sent the Emperor a particular Account of what was in hand, and he immediately writ to all Towns, ordering them to defer what they had to communicate to him till his coming thither, which would be very speedily. This Advice came time enough to stop the Representatives of all Places except *Toledo*, who were already at Court, and presented their Request, notwithstanding the King's Order to the contrary. They not only represented the Grievance of advancing the Revenues, but complain'd that the King had been at no other Place in *Castile*, but only *Valladolid*, and was known to be going away for *Flanders*. His Imperial Majesty told them, he would send an Answer to the City of *Toledo* by a Messenger of his own, and so this Affair ended for that time. At the same time, that the Laity oppos'd the advancing of the Duties payable by them, the Clergy no less hotly stood up against paying the Tenths of all Ecclesiastical Revenues, granted by the Pope in Order to carry on the War against the *Turks*. Thus this turbulent Beginning of the Emperor's Reign, seem'd to presage how little Quiet he was like to enjoy, as long as it lasted.

Tumults in Austria.

12. The Emperor's Affairs in *Germany* were in no better Posture than in *Spain*, for as soon as *Maximilian* dy'd, there began to be Tumults in *Austria*, for finding that in his Will he had order'd all Publick Officers, and Magistrates to continue in their Employments, till one of his Grandsons came into the Country and

and remov'd them, those whose Ambition led them to aim at more than they had, concluded King *Charles* would never come out of *Spain*, and made little Account of *Ferdinand*, because he was but 17 Years of Age. Upon this, the disaffected Persons in *Vienna*, drawing the multitude after them, took upon them in a riotous manner, to put down those that were in Places of Trust, and Magistrates, the lower sort hoping by this means to be prefer'd. The Example of *Vienna* was follow'd throughout all the Country, the Supream Magistrates having no Power to curb the Popular Fury, because the Gentry who should have assisted them, sided with the Mutineers, and thus the Loyal Party was crush'd and many of them forced to fly. The Rabble having got the upper Hand in *Vienna* banish'd their Governors, seiz'd their Prince's Revenues, bestow'd Places of Honour, and conferr'd Benefices, and in short confounded all human and divine Laws. The chief Ring-leaders were about 60 Men of Note, as well of the Clergy as Laity, and one of them a wicked Friar, Prior of the *Carthusians*, who breaking his Inclosure became a Captain of Rebels, stirring up the People to all manner of Villanies. Some of the Common Council of the City join'd those 60 Heads, railing against their Sovereign, in all manner of brutal Language. Neither the Loyal nor Disaffected Party took up Arms, but us'd all manner of opprobrious Language against one another, and this lasted almost two Years; so that the Rebellion in *Spain* and that in *Austria* were much about the same time, tho' the latter began first. The *Austrians* had the Impudence to send to the Emperor then at *Barcelona*, to confirm all they had done. His Answer was such, as made them sensible he knew his Authority, as Duke of *Austria*, and when they heard he was chosen Emperor their Hearts began to fail them, and the Loyalists took Heart, till being inform'd of the Rebellion in *Spain* these last were somewhat dismay'd, and the others grew insolent again. They hop'd the Rebels in *Spain* would prevail and keep the Emperor off from them, which prov'd very fatal to *Austria*; for all things were there in Confusion, and no honest Man durst say his Soul

was

aplague

was his own. But tho' there was no Power on Earth to chastise them, God sent such a Plague among them, that multitudes dy'd and whole Towns were left desert. There was no sowing, and the Corn they had rotted, and was devour'd by Vermin. No place was free from the Plague, and yet their hardned Hearts did not relent. They continu'd in Rebellion, till the Emperor went into *Germany*, and from *Wormes* sent them new Governors, and a Letter, which alone so terrify'd them, that they submitted themselves to his Will ; he ordering some of the Heads to be executed, and their Estates confiscated. This Rebellion lasted from the Year 1519 till 1521. Sure some Dæmon stirr'd up the Emperor's Subjects, for *Spain* and *Austria* were in Rebellion at once, *Sicily* before them, and others after.

13. It was always foully suspected, that the King of *France* stirr'd up the Rebellion in *Spain*, tho' never made out, but it plainly appear'd, he endeavour'd to do the Emperor all the ill turns he could. For when *D. Hugo de Moncada*, had got together a Fleet of 13 Gallies and 60 Ships, to attempt something on the Coast of *Barbary*, he sent Count *Peter Navarro*, who had taken Service under him since he was made Prisoner at the Battle of *Ravenna*, with a Fleet, to land Men near the Kingdom of *Naples*, which oblig'd *D. Hugo* to turn back to secure those Coasts. The Emperor wink'd at it rather than break the Peace with *France*, because he was press'd to go over into *Germany* to be Crown'd, and the *Spaniards* resented losing of their King so soon. He set forwards from *Barcelona*, and came to *Burgos* on the 19th. of *February*, 1520, where he was receiv'd with all imaginable Grandeur, it being the first time of his Coming thither. From this Place he issu'd his Orders, for the Cortes to meet at *Santiago* in *Gallicia* on the 20th. of *March*, that being his way to *Corunna* where he was to embark. The Favourites us'd all Endeavours to have such Representatives chofen, as would condescend to all the Emperor should propose ; but the People began to be mutinous, and there was little Compliance. The King of *France* understanding the
Em-

CHARLES *the Vth. Emperor, &c.* 45

Emperor was on his Way, order'd his Embassador to demand Hostages of him, for performance of the Article concerning marrying his Daughter, then but a Year old, and that he would restore *Navarre* to *Henry d' Albret*, Son to King *John d' Albret*, and in case he did not, declar'd the Peace of *Noyon* to be void. The Emperor being sensible this was only to pick a Quarrel, return'd a Courteous Answer, endeavouring by fair Means to preserve the Peace. He came to *Valladolid* on the first of *March*, where many of the Nobility met him, begging he would not leave the Kingdom, and *D. Peter Giron* Son to the Earl of *Urena*, a Daring Man, had the Boldness to speak to him in a disrespectful Manner, as we shall see in its Place.

C H A P.

C H A P. IV.

The Original of Ferdinand Cortes the Famous Conqueror of Mexico, his Rise in the Indies, he Lands on the Continent, Builds a Town, Marches towards Mexico, Wars with the Tlascallans, is Receiv'd in Mexico, Beaten out again, Besieges and Takes the City, and Subdues all the Country.

I. **T**O comfort the Emperor in the midst of all these Crosses, of a War threatned from *France*, Rebellion in *Spain*, and present Tumults in *Austria*; at *Barcelona* he receiv'd the happiest News that ever Prince did, that is, of the Discovery and Conquest of *Mexico* by *Ferdinand Cortes*, whereof, because it is so Glorious a Part of the Emperor's Life, I will give the more particular Relation. Some *Spaniards* went over to the *West Indies* after their Discovery, only to enrich themselves, and return home with their Wealth, others went to preach and convert those Infidels, and others, who had more ambitious Thoughts went to gain Honour and render their Names immortal. Among these last, the most Bold Adventurer, who with more than Manly Courage, durst attempt the Conquest of the Continent, (for till then only the Islands were subdu'd) was *Ferdinand Cortes*, afterwards deservedly Created *Marqueis del Valle*, of whom we are now to speak.

Cortes his Original and Rise,

2. *Ferdinand Cortes* the Son of *Martin Cortes de Monroy*, a Gentleman of good Extraction but poor, was born at *Medellin* in the Year 1485. His Parents sent him to *Salamanca* to be bred a Schollar, but he having no Inclination that way, within two Years

re-

return'd to *Medellin* very little advanc'd. For which reason they us'd him so severely at home, that he resolv'd to seek his Fortune in the World, and accordingly in the Year 1504. went over to the *West Indies*, where *Nicholas de Ovando*, who was his Acquaintance and Governor, entertain'd him. There having behav'd himself well in some military Expedition, he was made a Town-Clerk, which, tho' he did not well understand, was bestow'd as a Reward to get Money, in which he continu'd 5 years, gathering Wealth. After the Conquest of *Cuba*, he had Land assign'd him there, and was the first that bred Cattle, which together with the Gold he found, increas'd his Substance considerably. At this time, the Governor *James Velazquez* resolving upon the Conquest of *Yucatan*, pitch'd upon *Cortes* to command in that Expedition, and they joyn'd and became Partners in it, but soon after *Velazquez* thinking to get all to himself, would have hindred *Cortes* his Voyage, but he borrowing Money bought Ships, rais'd Men, and setting out declar'd the Undertaking was his own, and *Velazquez* had no Share in it. At the Island *Guanigamico* he muster'd his Men, found 500 *Spaniards* under Arms, besides some *Indian* Servants, and divided them into 11 Companies, calling himself Captain General. He had 11 Ships, in which he set up his own Arms, which were White and Blew Flames, and in the midst of them a Cross Gules with this Motto, *Friends, Let us follow the Cross, for if we have Faith, in this Sign we shall overcome.* With this handful of Men he conquer'd vast Countries, overthrew incredible multitudes, and open'd the way to Prodigious Riches. And to say the Truth, his Actions were so wonderful, that had they been told us of any Ancient Commander, we should look upon them as Fabulous. After encouraging his Men to undertake the Work they were about, rather for the Glory of God, than Desire of Wealth, he set sail from *Guanigamico* on the 28th. of *February* 1519. and making some Stay at *Auczamil* where he touch'd, brought all the People of that Island to embrace the Christian Faith. Thence he went over to *Yucatan*, but was forc'd back because one of his Ships leak'd. Whilst he was there a Canoo, or Boat made of one piece of Timber, came

*He sets out
towards
Mexico.*

over

over to him bringing a *Spaniard*, whose Name was *Hierom de Aguilar*, and who having been cast away on that Shoar, had liv'd among the *Indians* ever since the Year 1511. This Man was of great use to *Cortes* as knowing the Language, and serving him afterwards for an Interpreter. Leaving *Acuzamil*, they put into the River *Tabasco*, and *Cortes* run up it with the lesser Vessels, because there was not Water enough for the greater. He discover'd a Town enclos'd with Wood, and loope Holes to shoot Arrows through, and many Canoes came down to fight. *Aguilar* the Interpreter offer'd Peace, but they would not hearken to it, and therefore the Place was entred by Force. It was call'd *Potonchan*. *Cortes* with his Men lay that Night in a Temple, and sent some *Indians* he had taken, to invite the *Cazique* or little King of the Place to him, but he could not be perswaded to come. The next Day *Cortes* landed 500 Men, 13 Horse, and some Pieces of Cannon. He met 40000 *Indians* and overthrew them but not without Difficulty, for 60 *Spaniards* were wounded. The *Indians* submitted, brought abundance of Provisions, and about 400 Crowns in Gold. *Cortes* preach'd to them, thousands came to see the Solemnity of *Palm Sunday* kept, expressing much Satisfaction, and owning the King of *Spain* for their lawful Sovereign. *Cortes* call'd the Town *Victoria*, and it keeps the Name to this Day. He did not like that Countrey to plant a Colony in, and therefore sail'd forward and upon *Maunday Thursday* came to *St. John de Ulva*. Before they anchor'd, two Canoes came out, enquiring who was the Commander and his Business. *Cortes* us'd them well, and bid them tell *Teudilli* the Governour of that Coast, that he came as a Friend, and brought him good News. The next Day the Men landed, and lay upon the Strand, whither the *Indians* brought Gold, Feathers, and Things of Value, which they exchange'd for Pins, Knives, Glafs, and other Baubles. *Cortes* order'd, that no Man should take any Gold, that the *Indians* might not think they came only for that. On *Easter Day* *Teudilli* came to the Camp with 400 Men, well clad after their manner, and loaded with Provisions, which he presented to *Cortes*, with some Things

40000 *Indians* routed.

of

of Gold of Value. *Cortes* gave him a Velvet Coat and some Pedlary Ware, which they made great Account of. *Aguilar* the Interpreter understood not his Language, but one of 20 Women the Lord of *Potonchan* gave *Cortes*, turning Christian and converting the rest, she was call'd *Murina*, and understanding the Language, supply'd that Defect. These were the first Christians baptiz'd on the Continent. *Tendilli* was a Subject to King *Montezuma*, the Mighty Lord of the Vast City of *Mexico Tenyshtlan*. They din'd together, and *Cortes* order'd *Marina* to acquaint him, that he came as Embassador from the Great Emperor of the World, King of *Spain*, to convince King *Montezuma* and his People of the Error they were in, in adoring more than one God. *Tendilli* answer'd, He was glad to hear of so great a King, but could not think him equal to *Montezuma*, to whom he would send an Account of what he had seen and hear'd. He caus'd *Cortes* his Men, Ships and Horses to be painted on Cotton Cloths, and sent them to *Montezuma* with such Expedition, that he had them in 24 Hours, tho' 70 Leagues distant. The Messengers return'd with a Present of Gold and Cotton Cloths worth about 20000 Ducats, and this Answer, That *Montezuma* was glad to be Friend to so great a King, but that *Cortes* could not come to see him, because all the Way was through fierce and barbarous Nations, Enemies to the Kings of *Mexico*. This he did to put off *Cortes*, but it only serv'd to make Desire more eager, and therefore he reply'd, he must of Necessity see him. Whilst the Messengers went and came, he enquir'd into the Affairs of the Country, and discover'd there were great Discontents among the Great Ones, because *Montezuma* kept them under, which was no small Satisfaction to him, knowing his Siding with either Faction would be the Means to destroy them both. At length *Montezuma's* second Answer came, which was, that *Cortes* must not think of seeing him, for it was not to be done, and upon this *Tendilli* call'd away his People, and left the *Spaniards* alone.

3. *Cortes* resolv'd to conquer that Country, and therefore with 400 Men, march'd several Leagues about, finding many Villages, which tho' forsaken by

Traffick
with the
Indians.

E

the

the Inhabitants were well stor'd with Provisions. With this Encouragement he call'd his Men together, and let them know his Design was to build a strong Town, and call it *Villa rica de la Vera Cruz*, and that he renounc'd any Power given him by the Governors of the Islands, or *James Velasquez*, taking Possession himself of that new Discovery for King *Charles*. With this the Magistrates of the new Town were appointed, and they again desir'd *Ferdinand Cortes* to be their Captain General, which he with some Counterfeit Reluctancy accepted, for he aim'd at nothing else: He march'd by Land with 400 Men, and the rest went with the Ships to the Place where the Town was to be built, which was ten Leagues distant. *Cempallán* was a City in the Way, the Lord whereof sent the *Spaniards* an hundred Men loaded with Fowl, and desir'd them to come speedily to him, for he was very fat, and not able to meet them. *Cortes* found generous Entertainment, and the *Cazique* acquainted him, how they were oppress'd by *Montezuma*, and would be glad to take part with the great King of *Spain* against him, for tho' he was powerful, he had many Enemies, and the mighty Cities of *Tlascallan* and *Guezozinco*, would be glad to join in League against him. *Cortes* embrac'd these Overtures with much Satisfaction, and having settled Friendship with that *Cazique* went away to find his Ships, carrying along with him 8 young Maids presented him by that *Indian* Prince, one of which was his Neice. He went to another Town, where securing some of *Montezuma's* Officers, he encourag'd the People to rebel, and they sent about to stir up others, all of them choosing *Cortes* for their General, and promising to raise 100000 Men. This done, he left *Chiabuitlan*, so the last Town was call'd, and went away to the Place where his Ships lay, where they fell to Work with all possible Diligence. Here four Messengers came, with a Present worth 4000 Ducats from *Montezuma*, desiring him to release his Officers he had secur'd, and that he would have a little Patience; and Care should be taken for them to meet, as he desir'd. *Cortes* return'd an Answer by the same Messengers, and sending for the Lord of *Chiabuitlan*, show'd him how he had *Montezuma* in much Awe already; and therefore bid him be of good Cheer, and

Veracruz
built.

and pay no more Tribute, for he would stand by him. It hapned, the People of a Town call'd *Tuzá-pazincó*, subject to *Mexico*, made War upon *Cempoallá*, but *Cortes* coming to the Assistance of the latter, not only repuls'd them but took their Town, yet suffer'd no Wrong to be done to any of the Inhabitants, because he would not exasperate *Montezuma*; thus all the Country thereabouts, refus'd to pay any more Tribute to *Montezuma*, and the *Spaniards* grew into great Esteem. When *Cortes* return'd to *Vera Cruz*, he found there 60 *Spaniards*, and nine Horses and Mares, newly come to recruit his Forces. He press'd the Building of the New Town; and having taken out the 5th. of what they had gain'd, which was due to the King, sent it into *Spain* with a full Relation of what he had done, and his further Designs. The King receiv'd the Message at *Barcelona*, and confirm'd *Cortes* in his Cominand, as he had desir'd. The Troubles of *Castile* taking up the Years 1520, 21, and 22. I will in this Place continue the Success of this Enterprize, tho' before its Time, till the Compleating the Conquest of *Mexico*.

4. *Cortes* being resolv'd to proceed to *Mexico*, many Cortés his oppos'd his Design, thinking it a Madness for 500 March 16 Men, to run so far into the Country among Mil- Mexico: lions of barbarous Enemies, but all they could say did not move him. Therefore to prevent any further Opposition, he broke to pieces all his Ships but one. This done, he told his Men, he did not believe any of them so great a Coward, as to refuse to follow him to *Mexico*, yet if any were so, they might go on board the Ship that remain'd and return to *Cuba*, where he did not doubt they would soon repent them of their Folly. These Words so excited them, that they all unanimously promis'd to follow him wheresoever he would. The Towns that had revolted from *Montezuma*, engag'd upon Occasion to bring 50000 Men to defend his Town of *Vera Cruz*. In that Place he left 150 Men, and with the rest set forward towards *Mexico*. At *Cempoallán*, which he call'd *Sevil*, he cast down the Idols in the Temples, and taking Hostages for their Fidelity, and 1000 Men to carry Burthens, march'd forwards on the 16th. of *August*, 1519. His Force consisted

of 400 *Spaniards*, 15 *Horse*, 7 small *Guns*, and about 1300 *Indian Soldiers*. He travell'd three *Days* thro' a *Friendly Country*, and was as well supply'd with all *Necessaries*, as if he had been in *Castile*. The three following *Days* *March* was thro' a *desert Country* without *Water*, where they suffer'd very much till they came to a *Town* call'd *Zoaclatan*, which they call'd *Castelblanco*. The *Cazique* by *Montezuma's* Order entertain'd him well, and for more *Grandeur* sacrific'd 50 *Men*. This *Cazique* being ask'd by *Cortes* told him, That *Montezuma* was *King* of all the *World*, had 30 *Tributary Kings*, every one able to raise 100000 *Men*, that he every year sacrific'd 20000 *Men*, and more to this purpose. From this *Place* he sent *Messengers* to *Tlascallan*, to inform them of his *Coming*, thinking those *People* being *Enemies* to *Mexico*, would receive him kindly. The *Messengers* not returning, he set forwards, and advanc'd through a *Gate* he found in a *Stone-wall* that cross'd a *Valley*. Three *Leagues* beyond it, six advanc'd *Horse* spy'd 15 *Indians* with *Swords* and *Bucklers*, who kill'd two of their *Horses*, and were therefore all of them cut to pieces. Five thousand more appear'd to relieve those 15, but they soon fled. Next *Day* they met 1000 *Indians*, who charg'd and retir'd in good *Order*, till they drew the *Spaniards* into an *Ambush* of above 80000 *Men*, where they were hard set, and many of them wounded, but none kill'd. That *Night* they lodg'd in a small *Village*, and the next *Day* were inform'd, that above 150000 *Men* were marching towards them, with a *Resolution* to make a great *Sacrifice* of them. The *Indians* seeing so small a *Number*, in scorn sent them *Fowl* and other *Provisions*, bidding them eat, that they might not say they had been starv'd. When they had eaten the *Indians* fell on, but not all together, 20 or 30000 charging at a time, so that in two *Days*, the *Fight* lasted, an infinite number of them were slain, and not one *Spaniard*; which made those *People* believe they were *Gods*, and therefore the third *Day*, they sent *Cortes* a *Present* of 5 *Slaves*, *Frankincense*, *Corn* and *Fowl*, with this *Message*. *If thou art a fierce God, eat those 5 Slaves; if a mild God, accept of that Frankincense; and if thou art a Man, receive that Bread,*

Fowl

Fights
150000
Indians.

Fowl and Cherries. He answer'd, he was no God. yet they were much in the wrong, not to accept of his Friendship, as they had found to their Cost. Nevertheless, the next Day 20000 of them gave another Charge. On the 6th. of *September*, 50 Men came to him loaded with Provisions, and being inform'd they were sent as Spies, he cut off all their Hands. The *Indians* astonish'd that he should discover their Designs, would oppose him no more, for hitherto the *Tlascallans* had done it, supposing him to be a Friend to *Montezuma* their mortal Enemy, but afterwards when undeceiv'd, they serv'd him very faithfully.

5. These Difficulties being overcome, Messengers came to *Cortes* from *Montezuma*, offering to pay the King of *Spain* such Tribute as he should propose, provided he would come no further. He would not presently dismiss the Messengers, but order'd them to go along with him, and see how he punish'd the Enemies of *Montezuma*. One Night from their Camp the *Spaniards* discover'd very great Fires, and *Cortes* going out with 200 Men to discover what they meant, surpriz'd and took the City *Cimpantzinco*, in which were 20000 Houses, and suffering no harm to be done to the Inhabitants, they in return promis'd to reconcile the *Tlascallans* to him. Accordingly soon after, the General of the *Tlascallans*, whose Name was *Xicomencali*, came to *Cortes* with 50 Men of Note, and submitted themselves to the King of *Spain*, tho' as he said, they so lov'd their Liberty, that rather than be subject to *Montezuma*, they endur'd Cold, having no Cotton in their Country, and wanted Salt. *Cortes* receiv'd them with all Shows of Kindness, being extremely glad of their Friendship, and promis'd to be at *Tlascallan* as soon as ever he had dismiss'd the *Mexicans*. *Montezuma's* Embassadors did all they could to dissuade him from joining with the *Tlascallans*, but yet he went to that City, and was receiv'd with all Expressions of Joy, that People believing he was the Man would deliver them from the Oppression of *Montezuma*. There he stay'd 20 Days, and the Men were entertain'd with such kindness, that they gave them their Daughters, to get a Race like themselves upon them. *Cortes* finding they were a politick civiliz'd People, began to advise them to forsake Idolatry,

Tlascallans submit to Cortes.

Conspiracy
against
Cortes.

and embrace the Christian Religion, but nothing of Moment was done at this time. Before his Departure thence the City of *Huexocinco*, a Republick like *Tlascallan*, sent Messengers desiring to be admitted to the Friendship of the *Spaniards*. At the Perswasion of the *Mexicans*, but contrary to the Advice of the *Tlascallans*, *Cortes* went away to *Cholulla*, where it was contriv'd to murder him and all his Men, but the Conspiracy being discover'd by a Woman, they stood upon their Guard, and breaking out slew 6000 of the Inhabitants, burnt many Houses and plunder'd the rest. In a moment there was not an Inhabitant to be found, only some Prisoners, who promis'd if they were dismiss'd to bring home the rest; which was done, and the next Day the Place was as full as if nothing had hapned. The People beg'd Pardon, laying the Fault upon *Montezuma*, and join'd in League with *Cortes* and the *Tlascallans*. *Cholulla* was a Place of 40000 Houses, and had as many Temples as there are Days in the Year, because Pilgrims resorted thither from all Parts. *Cortes* charg'd *Montezuma's* Embassadors with this Treachery, but they went to him, brought fresh Presents, and lay'd all the Blame upon the People of *Cholulla*. The 2d. Day after *Cortes* march'd from *Cholulla*, he pass'd over a Mountain cover'd with Snow, where a few Men might have hindred his Passage, thence he discover'd the Lake in which *Mexico* stands, and many other fine Towns. By the Way he receiv'd other Presents from *Montezuma*, yet wherever he came they contriv'd to destroy him, but could not find the means. After two Days more, he came to a Noble Cauſway which parts the two Lakes, one of fresh the other of salt Water, the former running into the latter. On them stands the City of *Mexico*, and as he drew near it, *Cacamac* Nephew to *Montezuma*, was brought on Men's Shoulders to meet him. *Cacamac* alighted, and Men went before him, taking away the Stones and Straws that lay in the Way. He receiv'd *Cortes* civilly, but would fain perswade him to turn back.

Cortes
comes to
Mexico.

6. A wonderful Company of great Men attended *Cortes*, who lay that Night at *Ixtacpalapan*, from whence to *Mexico* is two Leagues over a broad Cauſway, on which

which 8 Men may ride abreast, as strait as an Ar
row, with small Towns on the sides and Draw-
bridges. Being come to a Fort near *Mexico*, 4000
Men of Note came out to receive him, and bowing
pass'd by. Advancing further, near the Draw-bridge,
where the fresh Water runs into the salt, they met
Montezuma a foot, led for the more State by his Ne-
phews *Cacamac* and *Cuilaunc*; over him was carry'd
a Rich Canopy of Gold and Green Feathers, born
upon the Heads of four Noblemen. *Montezuma* and
his Nephews were clad alike, save that he had Gold
Shoes set with Pearl and Jewels. His Servants
went before, spreading Carpets for him to tread up-
on, and he was follow'd by 3000 Gentlemen well
clad, but barefoot, who rang'd themselves in two
Ranks close to the Walls. When *Cortes* drew near
he alighted, and would have embrac'd the King,
but was not suffer'd, because they look upon it as a
Crime to touch him. They complimented one another
and *Cortes* put about the King's Neck a Collar of Glas
Beads that made a gaudy Show. They return'd to-
gether to *Mexico*, and to *Montezuma's* stately Pallace,
where he put two Rich Collars about *Cortes's* Neck,
and said, *Rest and Eat, for you are in your own House,*
and I will return presently. This was on the 8th. of *No-*
vember, 1519. Some Days he spent in viewing that vast
City, but could not be very easie, considering into
what a Labyrinth he had run himself, it being so easie
to destroy him by breaking the Causeway, which would
cut off all possibility of Escaping. At last he resolv'd
upon one of the boldest Attempts that ever entred in-
to the Heart of Man, which was to secure *Monte-*
zuma in his own House, and among 4 or 500000
of his Subjects. Soon after some *Indians* gave him
Intimation, that *Montezuma* design'd to break the
Bridges, in Order to cut off all his Men. This made
him resolve to hasten the Execution of his Design,
and therefore, having plac'd his *Spaniards* in several
small Guards between his Apartment and *Monte-*
zuma's Pallace, he went to give him a Visit, where
after some time familiarly spent, he began to com-
plain of the many Plots laid to destroy him and his
Men, and particularly of the last of cutting the
Bridges. The King storm'd, and said it was all false,

but *Cortes* soon stopp'd his Mouth, telling him he was his Prisoner, and must consent so to be, for if any Violence were offer'd his Men, he must expect to suffer for it. They argu'd it four hours, and at last he consented, and was carry'd on Men's Shoulders, the People, as he went, weeping, and beginning to mutiny, but that he commanded them to be still, for he was no Prisoner. He was not kept so close, but that he went a Hunting and to his Temples, yet always under a Guard of *Spaniards*, and return'd to lye at their Quarters. After some time, *Cortes* bid him forbear to sacrifice Men and eat Man's Flesh, and began to cast down the Idols, which made such a Commotion, that the People threatned to kill their King, and the *Spaniards* seeing the Danger were forced to desist. Yet *Cortes* made a Speech to the *Indians*, telling them, that he and his Companions were come thither, to teach them the Worship of the true God, and not for the sake of their Wealth, or Pleasures, as they might see in that they had taken nothing but what was given them, and never had to do with any of their Women. This Discourse somewhat pacify'd the People, and *Montezuma* promis'd no more Men should be sacrific'd whilst he continu'd there. During his Stay, *Cortes* us'd all possible Means to be inform'd of the State of the Country, its Wealth, how far it was to the *South* Sea, and whether there were any better Ports in the *North*.

Montezuma and his People swear Alliance to Spain.

7. *Cacamac*, *Montezuma's* Nephew, rais'd a Mutiny to cut off the *Spaniards* and release the King, who by his own Authority, caus'd him to be apprehended, and deliver'd to *Cortes*. *Montezuma* having now resolv'd to become a Christian, call'd all his great Men together, and in few Words told them, that since the Gods had decreed the Kingdom of *Culva* (so they call'd that of *Mexico*) should have an End, he was resolv'd to submit himself to the great King of *Spain*, and advis'd them to follow his Example. He could not utter this without abundance of Tears, which mov'd all the Assembly to weep, however he presently did homage to the King of *Spain*, and so did all his Nobles there present. This the *Indians* were the more ready to do, because the Devil had often told them, that *Montezuma* should be the last of their Kings:

This

This done, *Cortes* desir'd *Montezuma* to give him some Gold in token of Vassallage to the King, which he willingly did, and brought an inestimable Quantity of Gold, Silver, and Jewels of great Valæ. *Cortes* his next Care was the Conversion of the *Indians*, of whom some few were baptiz'd, and *Montezuma* was willing, but the *Spaniards* delaying it from day to day, he prov'd so unfortunate, as to fail of it at last. This Prosperity of the *Spaniards* was not lasting, for *Montezuma* soon repented what he had done, and having privately arm'd 100000 Men, call'd *Cortes* to him and told him, he must of necessity depart his City, because the People would not allow him any longer stay there. *Cortes* was surpriz'd at this Resolution, but recovering himself, answer'd he was willing to go, but had no Ships to carry him off, those that brought him being broke up. The King answer'd, he would not press so hard, but that he should have time till other Ships were built, and thus they parted. This put all the *Spaniards* into a mighty Consternation, and their Commander was not a little troubl'd. However, he comforted his Men, bidding them not doubt but God would relieve them before any Ships were built.

8. Whilst these Things hapned at *Mexico*, *James Velasquez* Governor of *Cuba*, envying *Cortes* his Prosperity, set out a Fleet of 9 or 10 Ships, in which were 900 *Spaniards*, many Horses, and Cannon, whereof he gave the Command to *Pamphilus de Narvaez*, ordering him to go over to *Yucatan*, and take or kill *Cortes*, on pretence that he had invaded his Right, and usurp'd the Title of Captain General. The Government of *Santo Domingo* endeavour'd to dissuade *Velasquez* from this Enterprize, but to no Effect. As soon as ever this Fleet arriv'd at *Vera Cruz*, *Montezuma* had notice of it, and calling *Cortes*, bid him be of good Cheer, for now he had Ships to carry him away. *Cortes* answer'd, they could not be built in so short a time, but the King told him, he had receiv'd Advice, that 11 were then upon the Coast. This rejoyc'd *Cortes*, believing they were Friends come to his Assistance, but being better inform'd, that they were sent by *James Velasquez*, it touch'd him to the Heart. However, hoping to prevail by fair means, he writ to him, desiring

Velasquez
sends Forces
against
Cortes.

The HISTORY of

ring he would not obstruct what was so well begun, but rather joyn with him in carrying on so good a Work. *Narvaez* on the contrary declar'd him a Traytor, Robber and Fugitive among the *Indians*, and sent such Word to *Montezuma*, saying, he was come to punish him for his Offences, and not satisfy'd with this, made a formal Proceſs againſt him, and condemn'd him to Death as a Traytor to his King. Theſe things offended many of *Narvaez* his own Followers, and were laugh'd at by thoſe that were at *Vera Cruz*. *Cortes* having try'd all ways to bring *Narvaez* to joyn with him without Succes, reſolv'd to go to him, acquainted his Men with his Deſign, and told *Montezuma*, he was going to take Care the new Comers ſhould do him no harm in the Country, and diſpoſe things for his Departure, but that he muſt continue with the *Spaniards* that ſtay'd behind for their Security. He left 150 in his Quarters, and march'd away with 250 and ſome *Indians*. Such was the Diligence he us'd in his March, that he ſurpriz'd *Narvaez* at *Cempoallon*, took him with the Loſs of only two Men, and ſent him Priſoner to *Vera Cruz*, and all *Narvaez* his Men joyning with him he return'd to *Mexico* with 1000 *Spaniards*, and 100 Horſe, making all the ſpeed imaginable, to relieve thoſe he had left there, as hearing the *Indians* were revolted, and had deſtroy'd them but for *Montezuma*.

Death of
Montezuma.

9. *Cortes* return'd to *Mexico* on *Midſummer-day*, in the Year 1520. where he found all quiet, but no kind Reception, and the very next Day the City was in an Uproar, and Hoſtilities began, the *Indians* attacking the *Spaniards* Quarters daily. One day above the reſt the Aſſault was ſo furious, that *Cortes* was forc'd to get *Montezuma* to look out at the Window of a Tower, to bid his People forbear, which he readily did, but ſo unfortunately, that the moment he look'd out a ſtone ſtruck him on the Head, of which he dy'd in three Days. He was of a mean Stature, lean, and tawny, his Hair long, a thin Beard about a Nail long, a great Lover of Juſtice, very courteous, affable and diſcreet. *Montezuma* in the *Indian* Language, ſignifies a grave, moroſe Man. Every day he chang'd Cloaths four times, and never wore the ſame Garment twice. At Dinner he had Muſick, and was ſerv'd by 20 Women and 400 Pages, his Service was all of earthen Ware,

Ware, tho' he had much of Gold, because the same thing never serv'd twice. When Men were sacrific'd he had a Dish or two of their Flesh serv'd up, but never at other times. Much more might be said of this Prince's Magnificence, but that it requires a particular Treatise. The Kings and Noble Mens Pallaces were rich and well built, the other Houses, which when *Cortes* came to *Mexico* were 60000, were mean, and had neither Windows, nor upper Floors, nor so much as Doors to shut. The City is seated like *Venice*, at that time the Streets were some all Water, some all dry, and some half Land half Water, now they are all dry. They drank none of the Water of the fresh Lake, tho' it is not bad, but brought all they us'd from a Spring not far distant. The two Lakes are about 30 Leagues in Compass, and within them are 50 Towns, some as large as *Mexico*, particularly *Tezcucno*, the least of them had 5000 Houses.

10. As soon as *Montezuma* was dead, the *Indians* *Cortes* made *Quahutimozin* his Nephew their King, and he never ceas'd assaulting the *Spaniards*. They had many *Engagements*, till *Cortes* despairing of being able to maintain himself there, resolv'd to march away. He set out on the 10th, of *July* at Night. The *Indians* perceiving it fell upon him, and kill'd 450 *Spaniards*, 4000 of their *Indians* and 46 Horses, and had they pursu'd close not one Man had escap'd. The next day he was enclos'd by 200000 Men, and reduc'd to such despair that he clap'd Spurs to his Horse, and running among his Enemies slew their Standard-bearer, at which sight they all fled, and multitudes of them were kill'd. This Success chang'd the Countenance of Affairs, for there came four Nobles with 50000 Men from *Tlascallan* to meet him, and he was there entertain'd with all possible Kindness, and his Wounds carefully look'd after. As soon as recover'd, with the Assistance of 50000 *Tlascallans*, he took the City *Tepeapac*, and then built another Town, calling it *Segura de la Frontera*. Then the Cities of *Collollo* and *Huexocinco* joyn'd with him, and serv'd faithfully till the end of the War. Next he deliver'd the Towns of *Huocollo*, *Opocazima*, and *Isuecan* from the Dominion of *Mexico*, and eight other Towns, desir'd his Protection. *Cortes*

*He besieges
and takes
Mexico.*

return'd to keep his *Christmas* at *Tlascalan*, where upon a Muster, he found he had 40 Horse, 550 Foot and 9 Field-pieces, with Powder enough. Next he gave out he would go and lay siege to *Mexico*, and not desist till he had destroy'd it, which was very pleasing to the *Indians*, who desir'd nothing more, than to be reveng'd of that City which had oppress'd them. He caus'd 13 Brigantines to be built, which prov'd of main importance for the reducing of *Mexico*, and set forwards towards that City upon *Holy Innocents-day*, in the Year 1520. All the Country about submitted it self, and at last, when the Timber to make the Brigantines was come, the mighty City of *Mexico*, *Tenoxtitlan*, or *Temixitan* was besieg'd. The Particulars are too long for this Place, and have a peculiar History of their own, for the Siege lasted three Months, the Place was gain'd Inch by Inch, and both the Defendants and Besiegers did Wonders, but at last, it pleas'd God, to put an end to the Idolatries of that Country, by the taking of the City on the 13th. of *August*, 1521. *Cortes* lost during the Siege 50 *Spaniards*, 6 Horses, and some of his *Indians*. Of the Enemy above 100000 were kill'd, besides multitudes that dy'd of Famine and Plague, caus'd by the stench of the dead Bodies. The Plunder of this City furnish'd Gold, and other precious Things enough to satisfie the Avarice of the *Spaniards*.

II. A Present worth 150000 Ducats was sent to his Majesty, of what was taken during this War, with an Account of all that had been done, great Commendations of *Cortes*, and to desire the King would send Bishops and Religious Men to preach to the *Indians*, and People to till the Ground with all sorts of Seeds, but no Lawyers, nor Physitians. After this, all the Kings, Princes and Great Men of the *Mexican* Empire, extending 2 or 300 Leagues, came to submit themselves to the King of *Spain*, except some few who held out and were afterwards brought under. The new Towns of *Medellin* and *Espiritu Santo* were built, and Colonies sent to inhabit them. *Cortes* sent out to discover as far as the *South* Sea, and took Possession of the Country for his Catholick Majesty. Next Care was taken for Conversion of the *Indians*, and many were baptiz'd. In a small time the City was rebuilt,

built, and 150000 Houses erected, tho' not very good, yet better than they were before, all the Streets were fill'd up and made dry, and Cortes erected a stately House for himself. For this great Service he was created a Marquis, and deserv'd greater Titles, as others have had for lesser Actions. He writ to the Emperor, giving him a particular Relation of his Victories, and to the General of the *Franciscans*, desiring him to send Friars of his Order, to labour in the Conversion of those Infidels. Thirteen were sent over, and Cortes to give a good Example to the *Indians*, never spoke to them, but with one Knee on the Ground. The *Indians* were converted so fast, that there were not Priests to baptize and instruct them; at present they are all Christians, and many of them Virtuous and Learned Men. Other Particulars and the rest of the Actions of Cortes are written by Historians of those Countries, more at large; this which is the most material Part may suffice, as a Notable Circumstance in the Life of CHARLES the Vth. in whose Name, and for whom that vast Continent was subdu'd.

C H A P.

C H A P. V.

The Cortes held in Galicia; His Majesty's Voyage into England, and thence into Holland; Toledo, and many other Cities and Towns rebel; Medina del Campo burnt.

*Causes of
the Rebelli-
on in Ca-
stile.*

I shall next Treat of the Rebellion, commonly call'd *Comunidades*, or *The Commons Wars*; which we may say, lasted in *Spain* from the Year 1519. till 1520. and first, I must briefly touch upon the Causes of that War, which I have either by Word of Mouth, or in the Writings of those that were then living, and deliver'd it with great Integrity, and Impartiality. Monsieur *de Gevres* was so great a Favourite, that he rather seem'd to be King, and the King his Son, for he suffer'd no Body to see him till he knew their Business, and had directed what Answer should be given. The next to him in Favour was the Chancellor *Mercurino de Gatnara*, and as Ambition will endure no Rival, he and *Gevres* were mortal Enemies. There were two Factions among the *Spaniards*, *Gevres* espous'd that which had formerly follow'd King *Ferdinand*, and the Chancellor the other which had been for King *Philip*. Both these sold all Preferments, and gather'd such Wealth, that they call'd the *Spaniards* their *Indians*. Besides, the *Flemings* us'd the *Spaniards* like Slaves, and whatsoever they did, no Man could have Justice against them. The King was hated, because no Body could speak to him but Monsieur *de Gevres* must be by, and he did not well understand *Spanish*, which made the People say he was ill-natur'd and foolish, like his Mother, and therefore unfit to govern, which could not be beaten out of their Heads a long time, tho' others that convers'd with him, declar'd the contrary. This was
mut^s

utter'd before the People thought of the Emperor's going away, but as soon as they heard of it, and that the Cortes were summon'd to raise Money, they all flew openly against their King. The Causes they alledg'd for the Rebellion were, The King's Departing the Kingdom, the Preferring of Foreigners, and the Carrying Money out of the Country. On these Complaints the City of *Toledo* writ to all the other Cities of the Kingdom, inviting them, to unite themselves by their Representatives, that is, to associate against the King's going away and the rest. This their Letter did much Mischief, and exasperated the whole Kingdom against the Government. Most Cities joyn'd with *Toledo*, but *Burgos* disapprov'd the Proceeding, *Granada* said, it ought to be done after another manner, and *Salamanca* and *Murcia* promis'd much, yet did not resolve upon the Association, but they all writ they would order their Representatives at the Cortes to do as those of *Toledo* did. This encourag'd the People of *Toledo*, and *Ferdinand de Avalos* and *John de Padilla* their Representatives headed the Party, and tho' the Emperor writ to them about it, they would not desist, but answer'd, they did it to serve him.

2. This was the Posture of Affairs, when the Emperor, then at *Valladolid*, call'd the Representatives and Council of that City, and desir'd them to consent to the Raising of 300 Millions of *Maravedies*, that is, 156250 *l.* in the Dominions of *Castile*, because all other Places would follow the Example they should give. The People, hearing what had been propos'd, ran about the Streets in a mutinous manner, and were ready to fall upon the *Flemings*, whereupon the Magistrates, who had desir'd time to consider of it, answer'd, that provided His Majesty would stay in *Spain*, they would not only raise that Sum, but spend their whole Fortunes in his Service, but that they would never consent to raise Money to carry away. Still the Favourites press'd the Council and Magistrates to consent, and at length some did, others for refusing were put out of their Places, and still the multitude ran about in a seditious manner, refusing to allow of what was done, which made the Emperor hasten his Departure, tho' many press'd him to stay. In June 1520. the Council of *Toledo* writ to that of *Valladolid*: *Insolency of Valladolid and Toledo.*
Rising

ring them up to unite or associate themselves, and appoint a general Meeting with the other Cities, to treat of their Common Security, but the Magistrates of *Valladolid* answer'd, that such Meetings and Associations without the King's Consent, were forbidden and unlawful, and therefore desir'd them to send their Representatives to the King, or Governors, and they would second them in all their just Demands. The Principal Men that encourag'd the Rebellion at *Toledo*, pretending Zeal for the Publick Good, were *John de Padilla, D. Peter Lasso de la Vega*, and *Ferdinand de Avalos* Gentlemen of Birth, related to *Grandees*, and prime Magistrates of the City. These in all their Councils and Assemblies magnify'd the Grievances before mention'd, adding that *Toledo*, as having been the Metropolis of *Spain* under the *Goths*, ought to take care to see their redress'd, by associating with all the Cities of *Spain*, and petitioning the King not to depart the Kingdom, which if not granted, they were then to take Care of themselves. Most of the Council agreed to this Advice, and only *Antony Alvarez de Toledo*, a Man of Quality and Years, with some few of his Party, oppos'd the Associating, saying, *If any Thing were amiss, they ought humbly to Petition the Emperor to Redress it.* The worse Party prevail'd, and the multitude abroad, understanding how things went, were divided, but the Factions were much more numerous. Having thus outnumbered the Loyal Party, *John de Padilla* and *Ferdinand d' Avalos* carry'd all before them; Letters were sent to all Cities to invite them to associate, and petition to the Emperor, praying him to stay in the Kingdom, to employ no Strangers, to suffer no Money to be carry'd out, to forbid Dice, to lay no new Imposition, to hold the Cortes in *Castile*, not to permit Places of Trust to be sold, to regulate the Inquisition, and to do Right to those that were wrong'd. This was the Substance of what they demanded at this time, tho' afterwards, as the Rebellion encreas'd, they added more and more, as shall appear in its place.

3. *Valladolid* was in the Posture before-mention'd, when it being certainly known that the King was going away, the City Council met to give their Representatives full Commission to consent to the Tax demanded. Whilst they were assembled came the Deputies

Deputies from *Toledo*, who meeting with some of the Inhabitants, they agreed that the People should rise, stop the King, and secure the *Flemings*. This done, they went away to the City Council, and desir'd them to joyn and back their Petition to the Emperor, that it might be more effectual being better seconded. *D. Ferdinand Enriquez*, Brother to the Admiral, answer'd, they were not yet resolv'd what to do, but they might do as they pleas'd. With this, the Deputies of *Toledo* went away to Court. When they came in, there were several Grandees with the King, and among them *D. Peter Giron*, Eldest Son to the Earl of *Urena*, before-mention'd. This *D. Peter* there in Publick charg'd his Majesty with Breach of Promise given under his Hand, about the hearing of his Cause concerning his Wife's Right to the Dukedom of *Medina Sidonia*, which now was not like to be perform'd, since his Majesty was just going away, and with much Impudence added, that since he was wrong'd he would find a way to fight himself, with many other disrespectful Words. The Emperor answer'd, He intended to do him Justice, but yet if he committed any Fault he would take Care to punish him. The Marquis *de Villena* took *D. Peter* out of the Room, and all the Great Ones follow'd. As they went out the Deputies from *Toledo* came in, but the Emperor would not hear them, but order'd they should meet him at the next Town from *Tordesillas*, whither he was going to visit his Mother. Mean while the People of *Valladolid* ran in great Numbers about the Streets, crying, *The King ought to be Petition'd to stay*; when on a sudden, a *Portuguese* Rope-maker inhabiting there, ran and rung the Alarum Bell, upon which, in a moment, 5 or 6000 of the Rabbie were got together with Weapons to stop the King, and murder the *Flemings*. This made the Emperor hasten away, in such a terrible Rain and so dark a Day, as the like had not been seen. Some of the multitude who were got to the Gate, offer'd to stop him, but his Guards clear'd the way, and he went on. The City was left in a dismal Uproar, but it ceas'd immediately and they were asham'd of the Affront they had offer'd their King. Inquiry was made who had rung the Bell, the *Portuguese* could not be found, and others suffer'd for him, for some that were found guilty had their

*Insolency of
D. Peter
Giron.*

Feet cut off, others were whipt, others banish'd and their Goods confiscated, and others had their Houses pull'd down. Many were imprison'd, till the Emperor sent Orders for their Release. He got to *Tordesillas* very wet and dirty, and from thence went to *Villalpando*, where the Deputies of *Toledo* and *Salamanca* deliver'd their Message to him, containing what was set down above. They were order'd to go to *Benavente*, where his Majesty would be the next Day, and there they should have their Answer. Being come thither, a Council was held upon their Proposals, and the Result was, that they deserv'd to be punish'd for their Boldness, and to have no other Answer. Upon this the Emperor call'd them in, and with a stern Countenance told them, they had behav'd themselves ill, and he would punish them severely but for their Fathers sakes. They would have made some Excuse, but he would not hear them. Then the President of the Council gave them a Reprimand, of all which they made no Account, but still follow'd his Majesty, pressing him upon the same Subject, and at *Santiago*, where the Cortes were to sit caball'd with all the Representatives of other Cities, to bring them to their Party.

Cortes of
Castile in
Galicia.

4. The Cortes were open'd at *Santiago* in *Galicia* on the 1st. of *April*, 1520. the King appear'd himself the first Day, and *Ferdinand de Vega* who presided for him, gave them to understand the Necessity there was of his going into *Germany*, and demanded a Subsidy. Which was unanimously refus'd, and much Heat appear'd in their Debates. The Kingdom of *Galicia* had no Representatives, and made Instance to have some admitted, since they were a distinct Kingdom, yet could not obtain it. The King being sensible, that the rebellious Practises of the People of *Toledo* and their Deputies, contributed much to set the Kingdom in a Flame, order'd the said Deputies to depart his Court immediately, and repair to their Commands, upon Forfeiture of their said Commands, and other Penalties. The next Day after they were gone, an Express came from *Toledo* with fresh Instructions for them, and a Letter to his Majesty, excusing themselves for not permitting *John de Padilla*, and others he had order'd to repair to him, to obey his Commands. It being the Holy Week, and the Emperor retir'd to his
De-

Devotions, *Alonso de Ortiz* whom the Deputies had left to sollicite for them, could not be admitted to his Presence, and would not deliver the Letter, unless it were in his own Hand. The Emperor continu'd at *Santiago* till *Thursday* in *Easter Week*, when he went to *Corunna*, and the Cortes follow'd him thither. When the News was brought to *Toledo*, that their Deputies were banish'd the Court, the Factious Party grew more desperate, and us'd all means to stir up the People to mutiny, which *D. Ferdinand de Avalos* oppos'd with all his Might, and by that means became so odious to the People, that he was at last forc'd to leave the City. But *John de Padilla* and the other Mutineers being commanded to Court; and having twice sent their Excuses, and the third positive Order being come, which if not obey'd, the Governour was to send them away as Prisoners, they contriv'd by the Means of some infamous People to be forcibly stopp'd and arrested, that so their Disobedience might not be imputed to them. This was so well manag'd, that as they were riding thro' the City, as if they design'd for Court, about 50 Men seiz'd them, saying, they should not go to suffer for Asserting their Liberties. They did it in such a tumultuous manner, that in a short time, they gather'd above 6000 People, most of them arm'd; saying, *Let Gevres and the Flemings, who have pillag'd Spain dye; and Let John de Padilla and Ferdinand d' Avalos live.* This done, they set a Guard upon them, and left them very well satisfi'd that their Contrivance had succeeded so well. Then they went to the Governour's, and with Threats forc'd him to vacate the King's Orders, and command those Persons they had secur'd not to depart the City, whereof a Certificate was sent to the King. It is thought, *D. Antony de Cordova* the Governor, might then have punish'd those Mutiniers, there being a strong Loyal Party in the Town, but he wanted Courage; and at last left the City for fear the Rabble would murder him. The suppressing of that Mutiny then, might have prevented all the War that ensu'd.

Progress of the Rebellion of Toledo. 5. Ferdinand d' Avelos and John de Padilla who had rais'd this Mutiny, knowing they had done enough to be severely punish'd, got some Priests and Friars to preach upon the Grievances already mention'd, and stir up the People to proceed in what they had begun, which they did so effectually, that the multitude betook themselves openly to Arms, secur'd the Gates and Bridges, and began to fortifie the Town. D. John de Silva, with some Loyal Persons retir'd to the Castle which he had in keeping, ordering the Inhabitants of some Neighbouring Towns that belong'd to him to bring Provisions. The People having possess'd themselves of the Gates and Bridges, resolv'd to besiege the Castle, and D. John de Silva to defend it; but some Religious Persons interposing to prevent Bloodshed, and he considering he had no Provisions, deliver'd it up, and march'd away to a Town four Leagues off with all that had adher'd to him. Next the Multitude went to the Corregidor, or Supream Magistrate's House, and made him swear to hold his Place of the Commons of Toledo, but he soon after, notwithstanding his Compliance, was turn'd out of the City. No sooner were they rid of him, but they began to new model the Government according to their own Fancy; saying, They did it in the Name of the King, Queen, and Commons. Thus began the Rebellion of Toledo, which lasted long, and cost them dear. D. Peter Lasso, who had been banish'd by the King at Santiago to Gibraltar, instead of going thither went to Toledo, and was there receiv'd, and attended by all the multitude with loud Acclamations. The manner the People found to agree in their Extravagancies was, that every Parish met by it self, and there every Man gave his Opinion relating to the matter in hand, to two Notaries who took them, which Method was afterwards observ'd by all the Cities that rebell'd.

The Emperor's Departure. 6. The News of the Revolt of Toledo being brought to Corunna, some were for having the Emperor hast thither, and punish that People severely, but Monsieur de Gevres discreetly oppos'd it, lest his Majesty should receive some Affront, and because there was no putting off his Journey any longer. At the Cortes some of the Representatives consented to a Subsidy of

200 Millions of *Maravedies*, or 104163 Pounds Sterling, but many others oppos'd it. When ready to depart, the Emperor call'd all the Nobility, and Commons, and acquainting them with the Necessity there was for his Journey, and told them he left Cardinal *Adrian* Bishop of *Tortosa* to govern the Kingdom. Most of those present were against it, but the Emperor would not hear them speak. There these several Articles were presented to his Majesty by Way of Petition, from the whole Kingdom. That he would speedily return. That as soon as return'd, he would be pleas'd to marry, to secure the Succession. That the Queen might have such a Family, as became the Dignity of the Crown. That when he returns he will employ no Strangers, nor bring Foreign Forces or Guards. That he settle his Family as those of his Predecessors were, and no Pensions be given to the Wives or Children of Courtiers, that have not deserv'd it by their Services. That no Grandee be employ'd in the Revenue. That the Governors left in his Absence be Natives. That no Lodgings be taken up but when the King travels, nor for any other Persons, and only an hundred for his Retinue. That all the Revenues be settled not to be advanc'd. That the Subsidy granted at *Corunna* be not rais'd. That the King do not confine Cities in the Election of their Representatives, but that it be free, and they have Liberty to meet where they please. That the said Representatives, while they are so, be incapable of having any Employment under the King, and not only they, but their Wives, Children, and Relations, and that any one who shall accept of such Employment, be punish'd with Death, and Forfeiture of his Estate. These and many more Articles too tedious to insert, were presented to his Majesty, which he made small Account of. Notwithstanding all the Opposition made by Grandees and Commons, Cardinal *Adrian* was left Governor of the Dominions of *Castile* and *Leon*, *D. John de la Naza* of *Aragon*, and *D. James de Mendoza* Viceroy of *Valencia*. This done, on the 20th. of *May*, the Emperor, with a great Retinue of *Spaniards* and *Flemings* set sail from *Corunna*, and the 6th. Day after landed at *Dover*, where he was receiv'd by Cardinal *Wolsey*, and that Night King *Henry* came

post to meet him. Next Day they went to *Canterbury*, where Queen *Catherine* was, and there continu'd the three Holidays of *Whitsontide*. After which the Emperor embark'd at *Deale*, and landed again in *Holland*, whence without making any Stay he travell'd into *Flanders*, and to *Calais*, where he had a second Interview with King *Henry* of *England*, and returning thence to *Gant*, made Preparations to depart for *Aquisgran*, to receive the Imperial Crown. But let us now return to see the Calamities of *Spain*.

7. Before the Emperor went off, he order'd his Secretary to distribute among some of the *Grandeess*, certain Notes of his Hand, for Sums of Money to be receiv'd out of the last Subsidy granted, which all of them accepted of, save only the Constable of *Castile*, who refus'd; saying, He would serve his Majesty without it, and therefore a Servant giving him the Note after the Emperor was gone, he sent it away by an Express to *Flanders*, to be restor'd there to the Secretary. The Emperor's Departure was variously resented. The Loyal Party look'd upon it as necessary and convenient, but the *Mutiniers*, thought it a fit Occasion for them to advance their Fortunes by Fishing in troubled Waters. As soon as he was gone, the Nobility and Commons repair'd to their respective Dwellings, and the Cardinal and Council to *Valladolid*, but before they came thither, receiv'd the News of the Revolt of several Places. At *Benavente*, an Express from *D. John de Acuna* Corregidor of *Segovia*, brought them an Account of a heinous Accident, which had happen'd in that City, and was thus. One of their Representatives, call'd *John* or *Antony de Tordesillas*, who had been at the Cortes of *Corunna*, and consented to the Subsidy, had got the Revenues of that Place fix'd, a Grant of 100000 *Maravedies* towards Repairing the Walls, and a good Employment for himself. Upon *Whitson Tuesday* the Officers of the Church, of *Corpus Christi*, meeting according to Custom, to confer about the Revenues of that Church, one of them stood up, and began to rail against the Corregidor, and all his Officers. One *Melon* an Under-Officer sitting by, took him up, and discreetly told him the ill Consequences of railing at the Government. This so engag'd the Assembly, that they ran to him, and throwing

Rebellion
of Segovia.

ing a Rope about his Neck, dragg'd him through the Town in such barbarous manner, that before they came to the Gallows he was dead, but as he was they hang'd him up. Coming back they met with one *Rodrigo Portalejo* a Companion of the others, whom after much opprobrious Language they dragg'd in the same manner, and hang'd up by the Heels, where he dy'd. The next Day the City-Council meeting, the Rabble broke in and seiz'd *Tordesillas*, who as was said above, had been their Representative at the *Cortes*, he begg'd they would hear him, but to no purpose; then pray'd they would allow him to prepare to dye, but in vain, the Church-men came out with the the blessed Sacrament, and begg'd for him on their Knees, but those barbarous Wretches were deaf. In fine, they dragg'd him along the Streets, beating him with the Pummels of their Swords, and at last hang'd him up by the Heels between the other two. *John Vasquez* his Companion, hearing what had hapned, made his Escape. This done, the Multitude turn'd out the King's Officers, created others of their own, and secur'd the Gates of the City. *D. Ferdinand de Bovadilla*, Earl of *Chinchon*, and Hereditary Governor of the Castle, gathering what Force he could, retir'd thither, and leaving his Brother *James* to secure it, went away himself to some Towns of his own, whence he brought Cannon and Ammunition to his Brother, who was presently besieg'd, and the Siege lasted as long as the Rebellion, yet *D. James* defended himself bravely. This was a Notable Action of these Gentlemen, for they left their Towns expos'd, to be ruin'd by the Rebels, as they were to secure that the King had entrusted them with.

8. The News of this Revolt perplext the Cardinal, who presently call'd together the Council his Majesty had appointed, to consider what was to be done. The Gentry and Council of *Segovia* sent an Express to clear themselves of having any hand in those Murders, laying all the Fault upon the Clothiers, but *D. Antony de Rojas* Archbishop of *Granada*, and President of the Council, gave them such rough Entertainment, that they went away dissatisfy'd, and stirr'd up all the rest to mutiny. At *Valladolid* the Council was held by the Cardinal, to debate what was to be done upon that

Exigency. The President *D. Antony de Rojas* was of Opinion, that an Exemplary Punishment ought to be inflicted on those People, to terrifie others from the like Barbarities. *D. Alonso Telez Giron* was for conniving with *Segovia* for the present, till the Government was better able to punish that Mutiny. The Cardinal follow'd the President's Advice, and tho' others disapprov'd of it, could not be mov'd from his Resolution. The same Day that *Segovia* mutiny'd *Zamora* did the same, but not meeting with their Representatives, they made their Effigies, dragg'd them about the Streets, and proclaim'd them Traitors. *D. James Enriquez*, Duke of *Alva* prevail'd so far, as to save their Houses from being pull'd down, but tho' his Interest was great in the City, yet there was a strong Faction against him, and that headed by *D. Antony de Acuna* Bishop of the Place, of whom much more will be said. The same Confusion had hapned at *Valladolid*, but that the Cardinal Governor, and the President of the Council entered the Place in good time well attended, but this prov'd only a Delay, for soon after this City outdid all others in the Rebellion. At *Burgos* there hapned such a terrible Earthquake, that it threw down several Houses, and presently after in *June*, the Commonalty of that City rose up in Arms, and appointed one *Antony* a Cutler, and *Bernal de la Rixa* to head them, then finding out *D. James Ossorio de Abarca*, a Gentleman of Great Quality, they led him into the Market-Place, shouting and hollowing, and told him he was to govern and protect them. He would have excus'd himself, but they would not hear him, yet gave him till the next Day to consider of it, and he that very Night stole away and got to *Cordova*, of which Place he was Corregidor. The Rabble hearing he was gone, would have pull'd down his House, but only four Gentlemen he had entrusted, guarding it with their drawn Swords, they durst not attempt it, *D. Peter Suarez de Velasco* one of the four, went away with the multitude, because *Bernal de la Rixa* the Cutler, bore him much Respect on Account that he made his Son an Accolite in the great Church. By his Interest in this Cutler, *D. Peter* knew all the Designs of the Commons, and was admitted to their Consultations. They committed a thousand Extravagancies, and were going to burn

Zamora
mutinies.

Sedition at
Burgos.

burn the Thicket belonging to the *Carthusians*, but *D. Peter* met them, and telling them, It was reasonable it should be burnt, but not in such hot Weather, for they had better keep it for Winter, they return'd home. They fir'd a Cannon at the Constable of *Castile's* House, and broke into it. Then they pull'd down the House of their Representative, *Garci Ruiz de la Mota*, because they could not find him, and burnt all his Goods and Writings. They also ruin'd the House of *Garci Jofre* a Harbinger, and having sent People out and taken him three Leagues from *Burgos*, they brought him back, and butcher'd him in a most inhuman manner, and then hung him up by the Feet. The Constable of *Castile* at the Request of the Cardinal, repair'd to *Burgos*, and with the Consent of the Multitude took upon him the Government of that Place, and held it some time, which prevented a thousand Disorders.

9. At *Madrid* the People mutiny'd to murder one *Ferdinand Gomez de Herrera* an *Alcalde de Corçe*, only because they imagin'd he was going to punish the Rebels of *Toledo*, but he slipt away, and they went to the House of the Licentiate *Francis de Vargas*, where they seiz'd abundance of Arms, and secur'd them in another House for their own Use, then plac'd their Guards about the Walls and Gates, and stood upon their Defence. The same was done at *Siguensa*, *Guadalajara*, *Salamanca*, *Murcia*, and many other Places of Note, the Particulars whereof are too tedious to insert. At *Guadalajara* the Mutiniers pull'd down the Houses of their Representatives because they were fled, which done, they repair'd to the Duke *del Infantado*, desiring he would protect and defend them, otherwise they would not leave a Grandee in the City, so that both he, and his Son the Earl of *Saldana*, were forc'd to condescend to their Request, yet he sent away an Express to the Cardinal, desiring him to put some speedy stop to these growing Evils before it was too late. At this time the *Alcalde Ronquillo*, a Famous Judge in those Parts, was sent to reduce *Segovia* with 1000 Horse commanded by *D. Lewis de la Cueva* and *Ruy Diaz de Rojas*. The Citizens hearing of his coming shut their Gates, muster'd the Men, distributed them into Companies. *Ronquillo* finding such Opposition retir'd

Insurrección at Madrid.

tir'd to *Arevalo*, and thence to *Santa Maria de Nieva* which is five Leagues from *Segovia*, from whence he sent to require the People in the King's Name to admit him. They instead of hearkning to him drew out 4000 Men to fight him, whom he might easily have routed, as being raw undisciplin'd People, but would not to save Bloodshed. Yet some little Skirmishing there was, and Prisoners taken, some of which *Ronquillo* hang'd, and punish'd others after several manners. There he continu'd cutting off their Trade and Provisions, but did not all the harm he could, hoping they would submit themselves. On the contrary they muster'd their Forces and found 12000 Men, and the very Women and Children were willing to bear Arms. They fix'd Pallizades, threw up Trenches, and laid Chains across the Streets, and the City *Avila* assisted them with all its Might. *Segovia* sent to *Toledo*, and other Places for Succours, *Toledo* sent them, the rest promis'd fair, and writ to the Cardinal in their Behalf. The Cardinal perceiving how Affairs stood, call'd some Troops out of *Navarre*, and sent them to the Assistance of *Ronquillo*, with which Recruit he scour'd the Country of *Segovia*, summoning them to appear before him, upon Pain of being declar'd Traitors, and forbid all the Neighbouring Towns under the same Penalty, not to furnish the City with Provisions. The Rebels of *Segovia* march'd out to the Number of 3500, and meeting with *Ronquillo's* Men two Leagues off, fir'd on them, and they thinking the others had fled, pursu'd them shouting with much Disorder. Prisoners were taken on both sides but *Ronquillo* retir'd, and they being recruited by 3000 Men more, follow'd him till he got into *Coca*.

Action between the Rebels and Loyalists.

Rebels take the Castle of Madrid.

10. The Mutiniers at *Madrid* requir'd the Governor of the Castle, whose Name was *Francis de Vargas* to deliver it up to them, threatening to hang all they could take of those that were within. The Governor brought 40 Men from *Alcala*, but the Towns-men fell upon them, and put them to the Rout before they could get in, and then they laid Siege to the Castle. *Toledo* sent 500 Men to their Assistance commanded by *Gonzalo Gaytan*. One *Negrete* commanded the People of *Madrid*. They fell to undermining the Castle, and summon'd them to sur-

surrender, but the Governor's Wife bravely answer'd, That she was there to supply her Husband's Place, and would defend it to the last. At this the Rebels cry'd out, *Let them dye, and let us all dye.* They planted their Cannon, and both Sides began to play, but the Defendants had more Arms than Men, yet they beat down several Houses. At last, the principal Gunner in the Castle being kill'd, and their Provisions failing, they were forc'd to surrender. In the Castle, the Rebels found a great Quantity of Arms and Ammunition, The People of *Madrid* had sent to *John Arias*, Lord of *Torrejon de Velasco*, four Leagues from *Madrid*, to assist them in the Siege of the Castle. He answer'd, He would not concern himself with either side, but live quietly. Yet at the same time, he drew out 150 Horse, as many Foot, and 20 Pieces of Cannon, and march'd to relieve the Castle. The Rebels hearing of it, gather'd from *Toledo*, and other Places, and falling upon his Town of *Torrejon* in his Absence, burnt and plunder'd it. *John Arias* vow'd Revenge, and one Night entring *Mosoles* plunder'd the Place, but the People falling upon his Men loaden with Booty, recover'd it; yet without killing any of them. He nothing discourag'd but resolving to serve his King, repair'd with some Followers to *Alfaca*, where for a while he kept the People quiet, till at last they grew ungovernable, and threatned to kill him, unless he would deliver up to them the Forts he held, or at least the Cannon. *John Arias* made no Account of their Threats, tho' he was in their Power, telling them, they might take his Life, which would be well reveng'd, but never deprive him of his Honour. This his Resolution gain'd him time to get to Horse, and ride away to *Torrejon*. Where he continu'd, holding three strong Places for the King during the whole War; which prov'd a great Check to the Rebels, for these and other his good Services, he was afterwards created Earl of *Puno en Rojtro*.

John Arias
as his great
Loyalty.

Medina
del Cam-
po burnt.

II. Toledo sent *John de Padilla* with 1000 Foot and 100 Horse, *Madrid* 400 Foot and 500 Horse to the Assistance of *Segovia*, whose Commander *John Bravo* join'd them with 2000 Foot and 150 Horse. With this Force they march'd against *Ronquillo*, but no Action hapned for he would not fight. The Cardinal understanding these Forces were join'd, order'd *Antony de Fonseca*, Captain General of *Castile*, to gather what Force he could, and joining the Troops that were with *Ronquillo*, to take as much of the King's Cannon as he thought fit. *Antony de Fonseca*, tho' some Disturbance hapned at *Valladolid*, gather'd some Troops and joining *Ronquillo* set forwards towards *Medina*. Upon Notice of his March *Segovia* writ to *Medina* by an Express, advising and entreating them, not to deliver the Artillery to *Antony de Fonseca*. This Letter encourag'd the People of *Medina* to refuse the Artillery, whereupon *Fonseca* march'd with all his Power to take it by Force. He came before *Medina* at Break of Day, where they were already upon their Guard, with a Resolution to defend the Artillery. *Fonseca* had some Friends in the Town by whose Means they began to treat, but the People were positive they would not deliver the Artillery, and so all came to nothing. *Fonseca* order'd his Men to march into the Town, and the Towns-men fir'd the Cannon upon them; thus several were kill'd on both sides. He to divert them from the Defence of the Artillery, threw some Fire-works into the Town, thinking the Inhabitants would run to save their Houses, by which means he might have an Opportunity of gaining the Cannon, but it hapned otherwise, for tho' the Fire burnt fiercely, yet the mutinous Inhabitants never quitted their Post, but continu'd fighting till they beat *Fonseca* and his Men from the Town. Nine hundred Houses and the Monastery of *S. Francis* were burnt, and not a Rag sav'd out of any of them. This Fire inflam'd the Hearts of the People of *Medina*, who presently declar'd for the Commons, which was the Cry then, regulated their Government as other Places had done, and writ

writ to *John de Padilla*, and other Commanders of the Rebels, giving an Account of their Disaster, and calling upon them to help Revenge their Quartel on those that had assisted *Fonseca*. Their greatest Malice was against *Arevalo*, from whence he had his Forces. The Town of *Arevalo* was not a little afraid of *Segovia*, and was divided into Factions, some being for the Commons, others against them. *Medina* sent an Account of its Misfortune to those Cities it was in Amity with, and they return'd their Thanks for defending the Cannon, and condol'd its Disaster.

C H A P.

C H A P. VI.

The further Account of the Troubles in Castile, till the Rebels attempted to secure the Cardinal Governor and King's Council, with the whole Progress and End of the Rebellion in Valencia.

*Heads of
the Rabble.*

I. THE Burning of *Medina* enrag'd the Inhabitants to such a Degree, that they breath'd nothing but Revenge, and sent their Complaints all about the Kingdom. One *Bobadilla* a Cloth-shearer, and Barbarous Cruel Villain, was one of the Chief Ring-leaders of the Multitude, who murder'd *Giles Nieto*, who had been his Master, *Tellez* a Bookseller, and *Lope de Vera* a Regidor, or Alderman, and Others, who had advis'd delivering the Cannon to *Fonseca* the General. These Butcheries gain'd him such Reputation among the Multitude, that he govern'd all at Will, took a great House, set a Porter at his Gate, and suffer'd the Stile of Lordship to be given him. Many such Scoundrels became Heads of the Commons, as *Villoria*, a Fellow that made Skins to hold Wine at *Salamanca*; one *Antony*, a mean Fellow at *Segovia*; and so in other Places: Not but that several Gentlemen and Persons of Quality sided with them. The Emperor had writ a Letter to the Council at *Valladolid*; thanking them for continuing stedfast in their Loyalty, and entertaining the Governor and Council. They answer'd this Letter with many Expressions of Respect, and desiring he would remit the last Subsidy granted, to restore the Country to Peace. Yet notwithstanding this fair Correspondence, as soon as they receiv'd the News of the burning of *Medina*, forgetting the Favours the Emperor had so lately done them, and the Respect due to his Governor and Council,

cil, they ran furiously to Arms and assembling between 5 or 6000, went to the House of *Peter de Portillo*, Recorder of the City, to have him go with them to deliver some Propositions to the President of the Council. He call'd them Mutiniers and Robbers, at which they were so incens'd that they broke into his House, and he with Difficulty escaping, they ranfack'd it, burnt part of his Goods, for he was vastly rich, and stole the rest, quarrelling among themselves about the Booty. The Loss was valu'd at above three Millions of *Maravedies*, which is 1562 Pounds Sterling. This done, they pull'd down the House, and running from thence to the House of *Anthony de Fonseca* that fir'd *Medina*, they burnt that and all that was in it. Then they look'd for *D. Alonso Nino de Castro* to kill him, but missing of him threw down part of his House. Next they plunder'd one of their Representatives *Francis de la Serna*, and would have done the same by *Gabriel de Santistevan*, but that he had remov'd all his Goods. Going to destroy an Alderman's House, they there met by all the *Franciscan Friars* vested, and with the blessed Sacrament, who falling on their Knees, begg'd of them for Jesus Christ his sake, to spare them that House, which some more moderate than the rest consenting to, they at last went off without doing any harm. Other Magistrates who had consented to the Subsidy fled, but lost all they had. This done, they set their Guards, kept Watch and Ward, and above 1500 Men were continually upon Duty, they chose new Magistrates, summon'd all the Gentry, and others about the City, and for fear of Death, made them take an Oath to the Commons. The *Infante* of *Granada* was appointed their Captain General, accepted it to save his Life, and behav'd himself very discreetly. Then they turn'd the Bishop of *Osma* and several Gentlemen, who did not seem to approve of their Proceedings, out of the City, sent to *Medina* to offer their Assistance, listed 2000 Soldiers, and nam'd six Deputies to send to *Avila* to the Assembly, which they call'd *Holy*.

2. The Cardinal and Council durst not oppose the Rabble, but rather excus'd themselves, and commanded *Fonseca* to disperse his Forces, which he did, leaving his Son to guard his Towns, and went away him-
Fonseca
flies.

Rebellion
of Valladolid.

Revolts of
several
Places.

self into *Portugal*, and from thence by Sea into *Flanders*. The Towns of *Caceres*, *Jaen* and *Badajoz* follow'd the Example of other mutinous Places. The Cities of *Ubeda* and *Baesa* were divided by the Factions of the Families of *Benavides* and *Caravajal*. *D. Lewis de la Cueva*, Kinsman to the Duke of *Albuquerque*, was Head of the *Benavides*, and *Caravajal* Lord of *Jodar*, a Town two Leagues from *Ubeda*, of the others. *D. Lewis* who was old, travelling in a Litter, the Lord of *Jodar* met him with 150 Men, and murder'd him, which *D. Lewis* his Kindred understanding, they fell upon the Town of *Jodar* with all the force they could, kill'd all they found, and set fire to the Place at several Quarters, so that the Inhabitants knew not which way to escape, and above 2000 are reckon'd to have been burnt. These Factions were the Cause, that many Persons of Quality join'd with the Commonalty, rather to revenge their own Quarrels, than out of Disloyalty. *Cuenca* was not behind other Places for Madnes, and set up a Bridler for Commander, and were so rude to *D. Lewis Carrillo* the greatest Man in the Town, that, a base Fellow had the Impudence to leap upon his Mule's Crupper, as he was riding along, crying, *Go on Lewis*. He was fain to put it up, but his Wife the Lady *Agnes de Barrientos*, a Woman of a Masculine Courage, resolving to revenge this Affront, invited the Captains of the Commoners to Supper, and having made them drunk, kill'd and hang'd them out at her Windows. *Avila* was the Seat of Rebellion, for there the Deputies met, and made the Gentry swear to follow the Commonalty, who would have secur'd the Castle, but that *D. Gonzalo Chacon*, the Governor by Night provided it so well, that when they came to attempt it they found the Matter too difficult, and therefore because the Castle could harm the Town and the Town the Castle, they Articled with the Cardinal's Leave, not to hurt one another, and so they continu'd as long as the Rebellion lasted. *Soria*, *Toro*, *Cuidad Rodrigo*, *Leon* and other Places, committed all the Barbarities others did, killing many Gentlemen, and pulling down their Houses; and the Evil was so general, that of 18 Towns there are in *Castile*, which send Representatives to the Cortes, 15 were in the Rebellion,

bellion, and had appointed their Deputies to meet at *Avila*. These Confusions were much heightned by the Reports of Strange Prodigies seen, and extravagant Prophecies fram'd and attributed to Famous Men, many of which I have seen, but are so wild and foolish that they deserve no place in History; and it is wonderful Men should be so distracted, as to give Ear to them. The City of *Toledo*, to promote the Rebellion, sent Letters of the same Tenor, to all other Cities, magnifying what they had done for the Publick Service, as they call'd it, and solliciting them to send their Deputies to *Avila*, to concert their further Proceedings. *Murcia* would not be behind hand with other Cities, and having turn'd out the Kings Lord Lieutenant, had murder'd the Alcalde *Leguizama*, but that *James de Vera*, an old Commander of great Repute prevail'd with the Multitude, and got him out of the Place. *D. John de Figueroa*, Brother to the Duke of *Arcos*, ^{Mutiny} thinking to get the Government of *Sevil* into his Hands, ^{quell'd in} gather'd some Gentlemen, and 700 of the Populacy, *Sevil*. and with four pieces of Cannon went about the Streets, crying, *Let the King and the Commonalty live*. The Lady *Ellenor de Zuniga*, Mother, and Governess to the Duke of *Medina Sidonia*, drew all his Followers in a Body to quell this Insurrection, and both Parties being ready to engage, some Persons interpos'd, and parted them for that time. The Mutineers thus left to themselves, forc'd the Pallace, which was a Place of no Strength, and secur'd the Governor. None of the Town stirr'd, or offer'd to join the Rebels; which made many of them slip away that Night. Next day the Duke of *Medina's* Party, commanded by *Valencia de Benavides*, storm'd the Pallace, and entred it by Force, with the Loss of 16 or 17 Men on both sides, took *D. John de Figueroa*, and so quell'd that Tumult.

3. The Cardinal and Council seeing the whole Kingdom in a Flame, sent a particular Account of what has been mention'd to the Emperor, desiring him to apply some speedy Remedy, since it was out of their Power to put any stop to the growing Evil, as being condemn'd by the People, and having neither Men nor Money, to reduce them by Force. This Advice perplex'd the Emperor, because he could not now defer going to be Crown'd in *Germany*, and the Affairs of

The Emperors concessions to pacify the Rebels.

Spain admitted of no Delay. A Council being call'd to deliberate what was best to be done, there were as many Opinions as Persons; but after Hearing them all, it was resolv'd in a Cabinet-Council, that his Majesty should continue his Journey into *Germany*, that he should write to all the Cities of *Castile*, commanding some to return to their Duty, commending others for their Loyalty, enjoying the Nobility and Gentry, to be assisting to his Council, and promising to return into *Spain* with all possible Speed; that he should write to the Cardinal and Council condoling their Troubles, and order'd Six of the Number to continue always in some certain Place with the Cardinal, to keep up the Regal Authority: That two other Governours, both of the Prime Nobility of *Castile*, should be join'd in Commission with the Cardinal; which two were *D. Frederick Enriquez*, Admiral, and *D. Inigo de Velasco*, Constable of *Castile*: That the Subsidy granted by the Cortes should be remitted to all Places that continu'd Loyal, or should return to their Duty; and that the Revenues of the Crown should remain fix'd as they were before, without any advance. Tho' these were the principal Points the Male-contented alleg'd to justify their Rebellion, yet the gaining of them contributed nothing to reduce them to their Obedience. The Convention of the rebellious Cities began at *Avila*, as standing in the heart of *Castile*, on the 29th of July, 1520. Here met the Deputies of *Poledo*, *Madrid*, *Guadalajara*, *Soria*, *Murcia*, *Cuenca*, *Segovia*, *Avila*, *Salamanca*, *Toro*, *Zamora*, *Leon*, *Valladolid*, *Burgos*, and *Ciudad Rodrigo*. They all swore to Live and Die by the King and Commonalty, and whoever refus'd to take this Oath was abus'd, and his House pull'd down; but only *D. Antony Ponce* had the Courage to stand this Shock, all others complying through Fear. In the midst of the Deputies was a small Stool, or Bench, on which one *Pinillo* a Cloth-shearer sat, with a Rod in his Hand; and no Man, either of the Laity or Clergy, durst speak till he pointed at him with his Rod: By which we see how base a Fellow commanded those that pretended to redress the Grievances of the Nation.

4. Having given an Account of the Insurrection of the most principal Places, it remains to go through with

with their Rebellion to the end : But because *D. Antony de Acuna*, Bishop of *Zamora*, had so great a Hand in it, a word or two will not be amiss to inform the Reader who he was : His Father was *D. Lewis Oforio de Acuna*, a Gentleman of Quality. King *Ferdinand* preferr'd him to the Bishoprick of *Zamora*, and sent him Embassador into *France*, as has been mention'd before, yet the Catholick King was disgusted at him, because he was of a Turbulent Spirit, Haughty, and more Resolute than became his Profession. His greatest Aim was to make himself absolute in *Zamora*; but the Earl of *Alva de Lise* oppos'd him, and at last, after much Strife, turn'd him out of the City. The Bishop immediately repair'd to *Tordesillas*, where the Convention then was, desiring their Assistance to expel the Earl out of his Diocesis. It was no small Satisfaction to them to have so great a Prelate to countenance them, and therefore they easily gave him Troops, and Cannon, with which he repair'd to *Zamora*; and the Earl finding himself unable to oppose him, quitted the Place. From that time the Earl follow'd the King's Governors, the Bishop the Factious Commons, and that with such Heat, that he had always with him 400 arm'd Priests; and with them would himself give the first Charge. *Ronquillo* lay still about *Segovia* with his Forces, cutting off, as much as he could, their Commerce abroad. It hapned that two young Fellows coming out of the City were taken by his Men; and being brought before him, and examin'd apart, about the Murder of the Regidor of *Tordesillas*, one of them confes'd he had fetch'd the Rope with which he was dragg'd; the other own'd he had dragg'd and pull'd him by the Hair: Upon this Confession the first was Drawn and Quarter'd; the other had his Hand cut off, and was then Hang'd: Which looks like a Providence, that these two Wretches should so fall into the Hands of Justice, and confes their Crime, without Witnesses to confront them, or being put to the Rack. Another Party of *Ronquillo's* took *Francis de Peralta*, a great Mutineer of *Segovia*; but *Ronquillo* sending him Prisoner to the Castle of *Magaz*, the People of *Dyenas* came out and rescu'd him. Not long after, *John de Padilla* coming with 2000 Men to

D. Lewis de Acuna, Bishop of Zamora



the Relief of *Segovia*, *Ronquillo* was forc'd to draw off, and so ended the Blockade of the Place.

The Con-
vention in
open Rebel-
lion.

5. The Cardinal and Council receiv'd Orders from the Emperor, to proceed against *Segovia* with the utmost Severity; and in order to it 2500 Light Horse, and near 4000 Foot that came from *Gelves*, on the Coast of *Africk*, landed at *Carthagena*, all of them old Soldiers, and the Cardinal commanded them to *Segovia*, but many of them, for better pay, took up with the Rebels. The Council thought fit, first, to try fair means, and therefore sent to *Avila* to desire the Deputies to repair to *Valladolid*, where they might better redress their Grievances; but they hearing of it, sent out, and forbid the Messenger coming into that Place: Upon this the Council sent to forbid the holding that Convention, as contrary to the known Laws of the Kingdom, which they slighted, as they had done before; and from that time forwards, the Council call'd those of the Convention Rebels and Traytors, and they those of the Council Tyrants. The Cardinal and Council us'd all their Endeavours to have the Queen sign some Orders, to be sent throughout the Kingdom, because the Rebels gave out that what they did was to serve her: In order to this the President, and some Councillors repair'd to *Tordefillas*, where the entertain'd them with much Impertinency, as a Woman that was not her self, and sent them back to *Valladolid*, promising to sign the Orders the Council should draw up; but as soon as they were gone *John de Padilla* came to *Tordefillas*, and would have secur'd them, had he come time enough. In his way he came through *Medina*, and condol'd with the People for their Misfortune; and then it was that *Bobadilla* the Shearer, murder'd his Master *Giles Nieto*, one of the Magistrates of the Place, because he had conceal'd a Letter *John de Padilla* sent them. Having lain there that Night, he went next Day to *Tordefillas*, entred the Place in a Triumphant manner, and went to wait upon the Queen, telling her, his Father had serv'd her Mother Queen *Elizabeth*, and he was come with the Forces of *Toledo* to serve her; because by reason of her Sons Absence the Kingdom was ill govern'd. She answer'd like a Mad-woman, that she knew nothing of what he said, because she had been lock'd up in a Room

They seize
the Queen.

Room sixteen Years; but that it was her Will he should be Captain-General of the Kingdom. At another Meeting she order'd, that the Convention should be held there in her Presence, and accordingly an Order was sent to *Avila*; for the Deputies to come away to *Tordesillas*. The first thing they did was to turn the Marquess of *Denia*, and his Lady, out of the Town; and then set themselves to modelling of the Government, pretending the Queens Authority, who was so Distracted, she was not capable of understanding Reason. Several of the Rebellious Towns sent Forces both Horse and Foot to *Tordesillas*, and the resort of Gentlemen and Officers was so great, that the Town could not hold them, though the Troops were quarter'd in the Villages round about. All the Convention unanimously Voted, that Orders should be sent to *Valladolid*, to secure the President and Council of State, that the People of *Valladolid* should do it, or at least, if they refus'd; should not protect them; but suffer the Forces of the Convention to seize and carry them away. A Dominican Friar was sent to carry this Message to *Valladolid*: He assembling the Commons in the Church, from the Pulpit declar'd his Commission, and excited the People to seize the King's Council: The People deferr'd giving their Answer till Night, some of them abhorring to deliver up that Council establish'd by the King; and which had bestow'd so many Franchises on them: Others thinking it an indispensable Duty, according to the Oaths they had taken, to give Obedience to the Convention. Being thus divided; they at last answer'd, That the Convention might send their own Officers and Troops, to secure the Council; for they would have no hand in it, nor forward, nor obstruct it. The Friar, and those that came with him, were satisfy'd with this answer, and presently they nam'd all that were order'd to be carry'd to *Tordesillas*; which were all the King's Council, and all Officers belonging to it, and to the Courts of Justice: Some of those so nam'd made their Escape, with much Difficulty; the President hid himself in the Monastery of *S. Benedict*, where they search'd for him, broke into the Chamber where Goods left in Trust are kept, took away 13000 Ducats belonging to private Persons; then ransack'd the Cellars, and stav'd the Cask: Those that could

not get away, met, as they were commanded, at the Cardinals Pallace; where being requir'd, in the name of the Convention, to repair to *Tordesillas*, they reply'd, They were the King's Officers, and would not go unless they were carry'd by Force. No more was done at that time, but the Friar return'd with this Account to *Tordesillas*.

*Kings
Council ap-
prebended
by the
Rebels.*

6. A few Days after, the Convention sent *F. Alonso de Medina*, a *Franciscan*, to *Valladolid*, with fresh Orders. He assembled the People in the Church of *S. Francis*, and from the Pulpit, read his Commission given him by the Convention, and declar'd that the King's Council must be carry'd Prisoners to *Tordesillas*; for such was her Majesties Will, that no Malefactors might escape unpunish'd. Thus, according to the stile of Rebellion, the Loyalists were the Criminals, and the Rebels their Judges; but these Monsters sanctify'd their Villanies, by using the Queens Name, who all the World knew was absolutely Mad: Yet a formal Instrument was brought by this Friar, containing what the Convention had propos'd to the Queen, and what she had answer'd, so well order'd, that the People of *Valladolid* hearing it, concluded the Queen was perfectly in her Senses, and fit to govern. Then the Friar told them there were Forces within the Town ready, with their Permission, to march and seize the King's Council. Leave being granted, *John de Padilla*, Captain-General of the Convention, led in about 11000 Men, who were well treated in the Town, secur'd those of the Council that had not fled, and carry'd them away to *Tordesillas*, and with them the Great Seal, and Books of the Treasury. Then they desir'd the Queen to Sign their Resolutions, as of a Legal Council, which she refus'd; and therefore the Deputies that were at the Convention, sent to their Principals to grant them Power to attend the Government of the Kingdom, and form a Council: Some Places did it, but others would not Consent, being rather offended that they had gone farther than they ought to have done. The Convention sent an *Augustin Fryar* to *Palencia*, to draw that People into the Rebellion; he Preach'd it up vigorously in the Pulpit, but being apprehended by some Loyal Persons, and sent Prisoner to the Cardinal, when at *Rioseco*, he was Strangled; a
fit

fit End for such turbulent Friars as forsake their Monasteries, to involve themselves in the Broiles of the World. Yet what the Friar had said, had so much effect, that the Multitude turn'd out the King's Officers and Magistrates, put in others of their own, threw down part of the Bishop's House, destroy'd a great part of his Copse, and did other Mischief, as if they had been in an Enemies Country.

7. The Cardinal perceiving *Valladolid* had cast off all Obedience to him, and fearing some Affront, resolv'd to withdraw to some Town belonging to one of the Nobility, and pitch'd upon *Medina de Rioseco*; which the City understanding, and that his Design was to join the Constable and Admiral, who were already raising Men to oppose the Rebels, they resolv'd to stop him, and accordingly set Guards at the Gates. He attempted to go off with 150 Men that attended him, but was stopp'd upon the Bridge, till the whole Multitude in Arms, upon the Ringing of the Alarum Bell, came upon him, and forc'd him back to his Lodging. Being disappointed of going away in Publick, the Cardinal stole away at Night in a Disguize all alone, and was Ten Days gone before the Towns-People, or his Horse-Guard knew it: But his Foot stole away out of the Town by two and two the Day before he was mis'd. From *Rioseco* the Cardinal sent to desire the City to let him have his Equippage he had left behind, which they granted, and it was convey'd to him safe to *Medina de Rioseco*. The Infante of *Granada*, who was Captain-General of the Commonalty of *Valladolid*, attempting to secure *Alonso de Vera*, a Brideler, who caus'd great Disorders in that Place, was oppos'd by the Multitude, and had like to be kill'd. The City sent Complaints against him to the Convention, which order'd him to be dismiss'd his Command; but upon Application from him, he was again restor'd. Then the Convention sent one of their Members to Harangue the People of *Valladolid*, perswading them to be unanimous, to persist in the Work they had begun, telling them they watch'd Day and Night for the Publick Good, and had sworn not to seek any Advantage to Themselves or Families, and that within Eight Days they expected to receive Instructions from all Towns and Cities, upon which they would Form such a Go-

Government, as should make *Spain* happy, and would send Authentick Copies of all the Articles throughout the Kingdom. These Articles will be inserted in the next Chapter. They fill'd the People of *Valladolid* with such hopes, that they promis'd to stand by the Holy Convention, (as they call'd it) with their Lives and Fortunes, but within seven Months, they found themselves deceiv'd in their mighty Expectations. The Loyal Party declar'd, that the Gentry, which sided with the Rebels, did it for private Ends. That *D.*

*Pretensions
of the Re-
bels.*

Antony de Acuna Bishop of *Zamora*, aspir'd to the Archbishoprick of *Valladolid*. *D. Peter Giron* to the Duke of *Medina Sidonia's* Estate, the Earl of *Salvatierra* to the *Merindades*, a Jurisdiction in *Galicia*, *Ferdinand de Avalos* to revenge the Wrongs done him, *John de Padilla* to the Mastership of the Military Order of *Santiago*, *D. Peter Lasso* to be Lord of *Toledo*, *Quintanilla* to be absolute in *Medina del Campo*, *Ferdinand de Vlloa* to drive his Brother out of *Toro*, *D. Peter Pimentel* to secure *Salamanca*, the Abbot of *Compluto* to be Bishop of *Zamora*, the Licentiate *Bernardine* to be a Judge in *Valladolid*, *Ramiro Nunez* to be Master of *Leon*, and *Charles de Luna y Arellano* to be Lord of *Soria*.

*Rebellion of
Valencia.*

8. Having before trac'd the first Steps that were made towards the Rebellion in *Valencia*, I will in this place go through with it to the end, that it may not be too much dismembred; it being the most dangerous part of the Confusions that hapned in *Spain*. It was before observ'd, that the Emperor at his Departure from *Coruna*, appointed *D. James de Mendoza*, Brother to the Marquis de *Cenete*, Viceroy of *Valencia*, at such time as the People was associated, and began very impudently to oppose the Nobility, persecute the Gentry and abuse their Servants, and the *Moriscoes* their Vassals. The first Outrage committed was against two Slaves of *D. Ramon de Cardona*, who being abus'd as they went along the Street, and making some Answer, the multitude fell upon them, kill'd one, and the other defending himself, one *James Pisador* a Salt-maker took his part; whereupon they left the Black and fell upon *Pisador*, who with much difficulty got away into his House, which they would have broken open, but that the Priests coming out of an adjacent Church with the blessed Sacrament, they desisted at that time. *Pisador*

do not thinking himself safe there, came out, and as he was going to the Church by the Priest that carry'd the blessed Sacrament, the Rabble murder'd him. *Avendano* a Cloth-shearer and Head of the Associates, came up very hastily, and getting into a House after the Fact was committed, he burst and dy'd miserably. This and other Disorders harned before the Emperor left *Spain*, of which Advice was given him, and he referr'd it to Monsieur de *G. vres*, who being in more Care to carry off his Money than pacifie *Spain*, made small Account of it. Thus the Tumults increas'd, and as the Officers were carrying a Criminal to Execution, the Rabble rose and rescu'd him. Nay, their Insolence extended so far, that a Hatter's Wife being at Work in her Shop, and seeing some Gentlemen pass by, bid her Children take Notice of them, that they might say they had seen Gentlemen. This she said, because the Design of the Commons was to extirpate all that were well born in the Kingdom. Upon the Death of *Avendano* above-mention'd, the Associates chose for their Head one *Sorolla* a Cloth shearer, bold and daring, who among other Villanies, went up into the City-Council as they were choosing Magistrates, and told them, that unless they took the Associates into the Government, those Bricks should run with Blood, which he afterwards made good, because the City-Council proceeded in their Election according to their Charter and ancient Custom. Such was the Posture of Affairs, when *D. James de Mendoza* came to govern that Kingdom. *Sorolla*, and the other Heads of the Faction, believing that the Viceroy, who was not ignorant of their Practices, conniv'd at them for fear, and being desirous to know the Strength of their Party, contriv'd that the said *Sorolla* should hide himself, whilst others gave out, that the Viceroy had secur'd, and design'd to strangle him. This Report in a moment rais'd the City, and they all ran in Arms, with Colours and Drums to the Viceroy's House, crying, *Let the Viceroy dye, unless he delivers Sorolla*. The Viceroy defended his House all that Day, and part of the Night, till a Woman, hapning to see *Sorolla* in his own House, acquainted the Bishop with it, and taking him out by force, carry'd him upon a Mule with many lighted Flambeaux through the City, and deliver'd him to the People,

The HISTORY of

People, who presently ceas'd their Attack, and went away with him. Soon after, the Viceroy having order'd a Criminal to be executed, the multitude not only rescu'd the Prisoner, but again assaulted the Pallace with such Fury, that the Viceroy was forc'd privately to make his Escape out of the City. All the Nobility and Gentry follow'd him with their whole Families, and having left them in places of safety came themselves in Arms to serve the King. Mean while the Citizens plunder'd, pull'd down and burnt their Houses, and committed a thousand such Enormities, as it is a Shame to write. They arm'd their Slaves, and lifted the *Moriscoes*. The Viceroy went to *Xativa*, but the People there mutinying, was oblig'd to fly to *Denia*, the News whereof being brought to *Valencia*, the Rebels seiz'd the King's Revenues, and appointed 13 Persons to take Care of the Government, calling them the Thirteen of the *Germania*, that is, Brotherhood, or Association. These nam'd *John Caro* a Grocer, for their General, and held Intelligence throughout all the Kingdom, so that as soon as the News of the Rebellion of *Valencia* and *Xativa* was spread abroad, all other Places in the Kingdom did the same, abusing and affronting the Gentry who all repair'd in Arms, to serve their King with their Followers and Fortunes, so that not one Nobleman or Gentleman of this Kingdom joyn'd with the rebellious Commons. The Associators having affronted the Viceroy, resolv'd not to spare God, but to plunder all the Churches and Monasteries. The Loyal Party desir'd the Marquis *de Cenete* to take upon him the Execution of Justice, which he did, hang'd three of the sacrilegious Robbers, and so put a stop to that Design. Presently after, they drew out of *Valencia* to the Number of 10000 Men in Arms to march to *Denia*, to drive the Viceroy out of the Kingdom. The Clergy went out with mourning Hoods on their Heads, and Crosses in their Hands, and ranking themselves at the Gate, as the Rebels pass'd by, cry'd, *Mercy, Gentlemen, Mercy*. They answer'd, *Justice, Justice, Body of God*. And God heard their Cries, for molt of them that spake those Words, were either kill'd in Fight, or executed. *John Caro* and *Sorolla* commanded these People. They laid Siege to

Caro

Corbera, six Leagues from *Valencia*, but *D. Jerome Vique* coming to the Speech of *John Caro*, he rais'd the Siege, for which he was discarded by the thirteen Governors, and the Command of Captain General confer'd on *Sorolla*. The Viceroy having gather'd some Forces was marching to the Relief of *Corbera*, and came as far as *Gandia*, where *Sorolla* met him, they came to a Battle, in which many were kill'd on both sides, but more of the Loyallists, and the Rebels gain'd a compleat Victory. The Viceroy and other Gentlemen fled to *Denia*, thence to *Peniscola*, and then to *Morella*, there to recruit, and return to make good their Loss. *Sorolla* return'd to *Valencia*, and was receiv'd with great Applause. *D. Alonso de Aragon* Duke of *Segorbe* had now taken the Field, with what Forces he and the Gentry that repair'd to him, could raise; so that he had 160 Horse, and above 4000 Foot, with which Force he march'd towards *Monviedro*, formerly *Saguntum*, the strongest Place the Rebels had. Within a League and half of the Place, he receiv'd Intelligence, that 8000 Foot and some Horse were marching against him. The Duke sent *D. Jayme Ferrer* with his Horse to observe them, and acquaint him with their Motions, whilst he follow'd with the Foot. *D. Jayme* perceiving the Enemy so numerous, and that they march'd along the Ridges of the Hill to avoid the Horse, he drew near enticing them to come down and skinnish, and they despising that handful of Men did as he had design'd; by which means he got them from their Places of Strength, and sent to acquaint the Duke, that if he would gain an entire Victory he must make haste, Accordingly the Duke advanc'd with speed, found his Horse engag'd and the Foot playing their Part bravely, the Rebels were routed and 5000 of them slain, for which reason, the Place where this Battle was fought, is to this Day call'd *The Field of the Slaughter*. This Victory recover'd the Kingdom, which must inevitably have been lost had the Associates gain'd it. In the mean while, the Viceroy having recruited his Forces, advanc'd towards *Alcira* and *Xativa*, the People of which Places march'd out, and gave him Battle in the Plains of *Belluz*, which was

Sorolla
routs the
Viceroy.

Duke of
Segorbe
defeats the
Rebels.

so resolutely fought on both sides, that they parted at Night upon equal Terms. At the same time, the Cities of *Oribuela* and *Alicant* with all their Dependencies, being 4 Leagues from *Murcia*, revolted and entered into the Association with *Valencia*, but all the Gentry went off to serve the King, and joining with the Marquess *de los Velez*, they march'd towards *Oribuela*. The Rebels who were 8000 strong, thinking themselves superior in number were earnest to fight, which the Duke willingly accepted, and with such Success, that he kill'd above 4000 of them, and reduc'd all that Country. His Army increasing upon this success, he march'd further into the Kingdom, still gathering like a Snow-ball, so that when he came near *Valencia* he was 11000 strong, and had 13 Pieces of Cannon, with which Force he came to *Paterna* within sight of *Valencia*, threatening that City, which being then upon Terms of Surrender and the Viceroy at hand, he return'd with his Army to *Murcia*, believing the War was at an End. But the Treaty breaking off, the Rebels chose one *Vincent Petiz*, a Fellow that sold Acorns, and took the Castle of *Xativa*. The Troubles of *Valencia* lasted till the Year, 1522. and tho' those of *Castile* call upon me; I will put an end to those in hand.

El Encubierto an impostor.

9. What I am now going to relate is so strange, that whosoever reads it cannot choose but admire the Folly and Madness of those Wretches, who had to do in this Rebellion. It was well known throughout all *Spain*, and never in the least doubted, that Prince *John*, only Son to their Catholick Majesties, King *Ferdinand* and Queen *Elizabeth*, dy'd at *Salamanca*; yet the Rebels of *Valencia* were so besotted, that they receiv'd a base Stranger flying to them out of *Africk*; believ'd him to be the aforesaid Prince *John*, took an Oath to him as their King, and he govern'd them two Years, till he came to such an End as he deserv'd; which we are here to relate. In the Year 1512: *John de Bilbao*, a Merchant of *Biscay*, going to trade at *Oran*, found a Fellow aboard the Ship who offer'd to serve him, in breeding up his Children, and keeping his Accounts, which the Merchant accepted, and was well pleas'd that he had found him. This Man was
low

low of Stature, thin Visag'd, his Complexion fallow, his Eyes frightful, had little Hair on his Head, and less on his Face, talk'd little, seem'd modest in his Behaviour, was a great Eater, drank little, and spoke *Spanisht, Arabick and Hebrew*. His Father was never known, but at his Execution, he confess'd, he was the Son of a *Jew*, and circumcis'd. He continu'd at *Oran* with the Merchant four years, in such Esteem, that in his Absence he entrusted him to take Care of his Wife and Children. The Merchant returning from *Castile*, was inform'd, that his Servant was too familiar with his Wife, or his Daughter, upon which he turn'd him away, without declaring the Cause, to avoid exposing his own Reputation. At that time, there was a young Corregidor at *Oran*, who privately kept a Mistress, he not knowing why this Fellow was turn'd off, took him into his Service. He had not been long in the House, before he began to make Love to his Master's Mistress, and would have taught her Negromancy, for he was not only a *Jew* but a Sorcerer. She acquainted the Corregidor with it, and he having full Proof, caus'd him to be whip'd thro' the Town, and then banish'd. He landed on the Coast of *Valencia*, at such time as the Kingdom was in an Uproar, and insinuating himself artificially among the Rebels at *Algecira*, gain'd great Reputation among them. At *Xativa* he call'd himself *D. Henry Manrique de Ribera*, and being a Crafty Fellow, and the Associates ignorant hot People, they made him their General, and honour'd him as a King, or rather as their God. *Vincent Periz* the Head of that Rout, submitted to him, and said, he was sent by God, to restore them to their Liberty. The People of *Xativa* worshipp'd him as their Deliverer, call'd him, *El Encubierto*, that is, *The Conceal'd*; and said, God had brought him for the Publick Good. He perswaded them that he was Prince *John*, that it had been God's Will he should be so long conceal'd, and was now sent to discover himself and save that Kingdom. Having settled a Reputation among the Rebels, he kept Intelligence throughout that Kingdom, and in some Places of *Aragon* and *Catalonia* that were ready to revolt, carry'd on a Conspiracy to murder the Marquess of *Cenete*, who govern'd in the City

ty of *Valencia*, and was himself privately convey'd into it, the better to manage his Designs. That City being in the Distress before-mention'd, the Religious People, and some Loyalists, had intreated the Marquess *de Cenete* to take upon him the Government of it, which he did, with such Courage and Resolution, that he apprehended several of the Mutiniers, and hang'd the Heads of them, which struck a Terror into the rest. This done, he march'd out against a Company of the *Germanats*, so these Rebels call'd themselves, that had gone out of the City, routed them, and took their Colours. A great Number of these Wretches flocking to the Marquess's Home in the City, and he going out to appease them; his Lady was so terrify'd, to see her Husband among so many vile Miscreants in danger of his Life, that she fell down and soon after dy'd. *Alonso Periz* who headed the *Germanats*, came with a great number of them, planted his Cannon, and intrench'd himself before the City; from whence, upon his ringing a Bell, abundance of the Rascallity went out to him; but the Marquess kept such Order within, that those Traytors were forc'd to break up, and return towards *Monviedro*. The Marquess pursu'd, and falling upon them with great Resolution, routed them, and took their Cannon, but hindred much of the Slaughter, which he had better not have done, for none of them ever repented. This done, he return'd to *Valencia*.

10. The Viceroy with what Forces he could gather lay before *Xariva*, but the Rebels were so dexterous that they corrupted his Soldiers, and had lay'd a Design that they should mutiny, and the Town seconding them, destroy the Loyalists, then seizing their Cannon, make themselves Masters of *Valencia*. Tho' the Conspiracy was discover'd, it was hard to disappoint it, because the Rebels were too strong. Nor could the Marquess of *Cenete*, tho' he came from *Valencia*, and ventur'd his Person in *Xariva* do any good; for there *Alonso Periz* made him Prisoner, and kept him some Days. At last he was releas'd, and upon the earnest Intreaty of the well affected Party in *Valencia*, return'd to that City. *Vincent Periz* follow'd him thither, and intrench'd himself strongly within the Place, resolving to plunder it, and kill all that should oppose him. It was not

not possible for the Loyal Party to dislodge him, or scarce defend themselves, therefore the Marques's so order'd it, that no Action hapned, and all the Mutiniers return'd to their Houses. Upon the following Days, the Marques took an Account of all the Loyal Citizens, there were in the place arm'd and encourag'd them to stand by him, and they swore to live and dye in his Quarrel. His Contrivance being known, the Rebels again assembled and fortify'd themselves as before; so that now there was no Remedy, but putting all to the hazard of a Battle. But the Marques knowing how odious the Gentry were to the Townsmen, order'd them to stay in the great Church, for fear least the Commons in hatred to them should forsake him; and it was well contriv'd, for in the heat of the Fight many cry'd out, *Let us go back and kill the Gentlemen, and not butcher one another for their pleasure.* Before they engag'd, the Marques to encourage his Party, contriv'd a Counterfeit Express to come, and bring the News that the Viceroy had taken *Xariva*, which put new Life into his People; then he order'd the Gates to be shut, that the Outlaws abroad might not flock into Town to the Assistance of their Companions. Many of the Marquis's Men, either thro' Fear or Dissaffection slipt away, and he seeing no Body durst attack the Enemy, because they were intrench'd in a narrow Street, and all the Windows and Tops of Houses full of People, ready to throw down Stones and other Weapons; he seeing this, ran up the Street foremost, crying, *Let the King live and Traytors dye, fall on my Friends.* The very sight of the Marques daunted *Alonso Periz*, but many of his Men fell on, and had endanger'd him, but for his good Armour. *Periz* seeing his Resolution fled into a House, and his Men missing him follow'd his Example; so that there was no further Trouble than to drag them out of the Houses. As the Marques was in pursuit of *Periz*, a Woman from the Top of an House, let fall a Pot full of Earth upon his Head, which beat him down, and every Body concluded he was dead. His Servants carry'd him into the House, and the Report of his Death being spread abroad, all had like to have been lost again; till he coming

The HISTORY of

to himself, came out again, crying, *Tho' the Marquis be dead, the King is alive.* With this the Loyalists prosecuted their Victory till *Periz* was taken, his Head immediately struck off, many of the Rebels kill'd, and *Valencia* restor'd to its Duty. The Impostor call'd *El Encubierto*, or, *The Conceal'd*, expected to hear of the Marquis's Death, and Success of his Party in *Valencia*, that he might come and make himself Master of the City. But it pleas'd God to order it otherwise, and he was taken by the Marquis on the 19th. of *May*, 1522, he was drag'd through the Streets, then hang'd, and his Head set upon a Spear. Some other Troubles there were in that Kingdom, yet not so dangerous, which it would be too tedious to particularize, and now the Affairs of *Castile* call upon me.

C H A P.

C H A P. VII.

The Ordinances drawn up by the Rebels for the Emperor to sign; he appoints the Constable and Admiral of Castile Governors, together with the Cardinal. Other Actions of the Rebels.

1. **T**HERE is no People so barbarous and mad, but is sensible that Union among themselves is necessary for their Preservation. This made the Convention, as was said before, exhort *Valladolid* to be Unanimous, and lay aside all Discord, and to promise that within a few Days they should see the Ordinances, they were with great Labour and Industry concerting, in order to publish and send them throughout all the Kingdom very speedily, which they hop'd would render *Spain* the happiest Nation in the World. The Generality of the People flatter'd themselves, with the hopes that they should enjoy a more than golden Age, and the Convention was so pleas'd with the Applause and Thanks of the Multitude, that they resolv'd to send the said Ordinances to the Emperor by two Gentlemen, and a Fryar, not doubting but his Majesty would make them great for their Pains. But instead of that, he was so angry, that they were glad to fly to save their Lives. They writ Letters to all Places, thro' which these Messengers were to pass, to require their forwarding of those Persons, and in them sent Copies of the Letter to the Emperor, and of the Ordinances, which they desir'd his Majesty to confirm. I will give the Heads of the Ordinances, that the World may see what it was the Rebels demanded; for it would be too tedious to set them down at length, and a great Omission not to say any thing of them. The Letter to the

1500
Proceedings of the
Convention
in Castile.

H

Towns

The HISTORY of

Towns and Cities, was, as has been said, to require them to give free Passage and Encouragement to the Bearers, *Antony Vazquez*, *Sancho Sanchez Zimbron*, and *F. Paul*, and to stand by the Convention in pressing his Majesty to grant their Request. That to the Emperor contain'd a particular Relation of many of their own Insolencies, which they justify'd, and an Account of the Proceedings of his Majesty's Governor and Council represented in the worst manner, then they desire his Majesty to approve of their dissolving his Council, of their appointing another till his coming, and of the following Ordinances, to be establish'd and enacted as inviolable and fundamental Laws.

The Ordinances.

I. That His Majesty return speedily into the Kingdom of *Castile*, and reside there.

II. That His Majesty speedily marry to the liking of his People.

III. That the Queen's Family be establish'd as becomes Her Dignity.

IV. That His Majesty bring over no Foreigners to have any Perferment in *Spain*, but employ only the Natives.

V. That neither He nor His Successors keep Foreign Guards.

VI. That His Majesty's Table be the same, as was kept by his Grandfather King *Ferdinand*.

VII. That no Sallaries be given to any Persons, who do not, or cannot serve His Majesty.

VIII. That all unnecessary Offices be suppress'd.

IX. That no Grandee have any Employment in the Revenue.

X. That during His Majesty's Absence, His Servants in *Spain* be paid out of the Revenue.

XI. That whensoever it shall be requisite on any Account to appoint Governors in *Castile*, they be Natives.

XII. That those who are not such at present be remov'd.

XIII. That the Governors have full Commission to exercise the Regal Power in all its Extent.

XIV. That for the future, no Lodgings be taken up in the King's Name, but only for the King's Family when he travels, and then, if he continues above 6 Days in a Place after that time, they be paid for.

As also Quarters to be allow'd for the Guards.

XV. That the Revenues remain fix'd as they were in the time of King *Ferdinand* and Queen *Elizabeth*, every City, Town, or Liberty to answer its Quota, without farming it upon advance, which is an Oppression and never turns to Account. And that their Majesties be satisfied with the fix'd Income of the Crown, without Imposing new Taxes.

XVI. That the Subsidy granted His Majesty at *Coruna* be remitted, and no other ever demanded.

XVII. That there be sent to the *Cortes* from each City one Representative for the Clergy, one for the Gentry, and one for the Commonalty, their Charges to be defray'd by the City and Chapter: And that the King do not direct the said Corporations what Representatives to send, or what Instructions they shall give them.

XVIII. That these Representatives have liberty to meet and debate without a President being among them, which is a check to their Proceedings: And that those Representatives may be incapable of receiving any Preferment or Pension whatsoever from the Crown, for themselves, their Wives, Children or Kindred upon pain of Death.

XIX. That for the future all Representatives, belonging to the *Cortes*, may meet every three Years, without the King's leave, to consult about the publick Affairs.

XX. That no Money or Plate be carried out of the Kingdom, upon pain of Death; but new Money coin'd to a certain Standard, such as the Crowns of the Sun in *France*.

XXI. That there be a new Brass Coin, and none coin'd abroad be suffer'd to pass.

XXII. That no Corn, Cattle, Wool nor Hides be exported.

XXIII. That the present Council be dislov'd, and all the Members of it made incapable of serving again; And that none but Natives, Men of known Integrity and Loyalty be admitted.

XXIV. That all Judges and Officers give an account every three Years of their Administration, and be punish'd or rewarded as they shall deserve.

XXV. That no Naturalization be allow'd to make any Person capable of serving in any Court or

Council; and all Suites depending be heard in courfe.

XXVI. That no Member of any Court or Council be capable of holding more than one Employment at once.

XXVII. That in all judgments of Death or lofs of Limb, given by any *Alcalde*, the Party may be allow'd to Appeal.

XXVIII. That no Bull of Cruzade be preach'd without the confent of the *Cortes*, and that upon a vifible occafion; and all the Mony rais'd by it to be kept in the Cathedral, and not deliver'd, but for the Ufe it was granted.

XXIX. That no Grant be pafs'd to any Perfon whatsoever of *Indians* to work in the Mines, and that any already pafs'd be declar'd void: And that the India-Houfe remain for ever fix'd at *Sevil*, as the properft place for it.

XXX. That it fhall not be in the power of any King to make Grants, of forfeited Eftates, to thofe Judges who adjudg'd them forfeited, or to give away any Goods or Mony they are not actually poffefs'd of; and that all fuch Grants already pafs'd be declar'd void.

XXXI. That whereas feveral Patents, to ennoble mean Perfons, have of late Years been granted, either for Mony or other unlawful Reason, the fame be all vacated: Alfo that no Reversions of Places be granted, and fuch as are, be declar'd null.

XXXII. That no Places of Truft whatsoever be fold or beftow'd on Perfons that will fell them.

XXXIII. That no Benefices whatsoever be conferr'd upon Strangers, and fuch as are already beftow'd be recall'd; and that no Naturalization be allow'd to capacitate Foreigners.

XXXIV. That it be not in the power of any King to alienate the Revenues or Lands of the Crown; and thofe already alienated be reftor'd.

XXXV. That no Foreigners have the Government of ftrong Holds, or any Noble nor Great Men: That *Antony Fonfeca* have all his Commands taken from him, and that their Majefties caufe all the Garrifons on the Frontiers to be vifited every two Years.

XXXVI. That his Majefty caufe *Antony Fonfeca*, *Ronquillo*, *Gutiere Quixada*, the Licentiate *Juanes*, and others

others concern'd in the Burning of *Medina*, to be severely proceeded against. (These were the King's Officers, who serv'd him well, and endeavour'd to crush the Rebellion.) And that he will approve of what the Country has already done against them.

XXXVII. That his Majesty will approve of the Convention of the States of the Kingdom, and of all they have done and acted, in suppressing his Council, raising Men and Money, &c.

These, and many more, were the Ordinances, all of them set down more at large than this place will allow, which the Convention sent to *Flanders* to be deliver'd to the Emperor. *Antony Vasquez de Avila* went one way, and came as far as *Worwces*, where the Emperor caus'd him to be Apprehended and Secur'd in one of his Castles. *F. Paul*, and *Sancho Zimbron* took another way, and went as far as *Brussels*, where hearing how *Anthony Vasquez* had far'd, they durst not proceed any further: All the Rebels throughout the Kingdom cry'd up these Ordinances, as Holy, and said, if his Majesty pass'd them, the Kingdom would be happier than any other in the World: That he must be a cruel Man if he rejected them; and that the Convention deserv'd immortal Fame for so excellent a Project.

2. The Conventioneers having made themselves Masters of *Tordesillas*, and consequently having the Queen in their Power, and it being generally believ'd throughout the Kingdom, that she had recover'd her Senses, and approv'd of their Proceedings, their Reputation daily increas'd, and they puff'd up with Applause, still aim'd at greater Matters; which caus'd such various Proceedings, and that in so many several Places, that it is impossible to mention all, or even to observe true order of Time in such as are set down. At *Palencia* the Multitude would have murder'd their Bishops Brother, and not only him but the Clergy, for receiving of the Bishop upon the Emperors Nomination. At *Alcala de Henares* they turn'd out the Archbishops Vicar-General. *Medina del Campo* prepar'd to make War upon *Coca* and *Alabejos*, in Revenge for the Harm done them by *Antony de Fonseca*. Tho' at *Burgos* they had put themselves under the Government of the Constable of *Castile*, yet thinking he endeavour'd

to obstruct their sending Men to assist the Rebels of *Medina*, they flew off from him, forc'd him to dismiss 400 Men he had got together for his Security, and after many Affronts, oblig'd him to quit the Place; which Example was follow'd by several other Towns. Being at his own Town of *Briviesca*, in September came thither *Lope Hurtado de Mendoza*, a Gentleman of the Emperor's Household, with the Commission for him to be Governour of *Castile*, in conjunction with the Admiral and Cardinal *Adrian*, and brought Letters directed to all Cities, in which the Emperor complains of their Disloyalty, acquaints them how, to obviate further Inconveniences, he had joyn'd the Constable and Admiral in Commission with the Cardinal, and lets them know he would order their Representatives to meet before those Governours to redress their Grievances. In his Letters to the *Grandeas*, he adds, That it being as yet unpracticable for him to come over till Crown'd in *Germany*, he gave them ample Commission to raise Forces to quell the Rebellion: Many advis'd the Constable not to hazard his Person and Fortune in so dangerous an Undertaking; but his Lady was for venturing all in the King's Service, and his own Inclination was so strong for it, that he presently began to act, The Admiral who was then in *Catalonia*, was fearful and endeavour'd to accommodate Matters, which the Emperor understanding, he sent fresh Instructions to the Constable to act by himself till such time as the Cardinal and Admiral join'd him. The Constables care was how to reduce *Burgos*, which he attempted to do by fair means, with the assistance of some Gentlemen in the place, who manag'd it so well, that the City return'd to its Duty, and the Constable put a Governour into the Castle with the good liking and approbation of the People. From this time forwards the City of *Burgos* began to disapprove of the Proceedings of the Convention, and sent orders to their Representatives to forbear any farther having to do with them, and writ a Letter to *Valladolid* full of loyal Expressions; yet at the same time sent a copy of the several Articles they thought good to petition his Majesty upon, which being much to the same purpose with those before set down, need not be repeated, only this may be observ'd, that one of their Articles is,
That

That the Estates of *Antony de Fonseca*, the King's General, and of all those that were any ways assisting or advising to him in the Burning of *Medina*, should be forfeited to make good that Loss, and in case they fell short, the rest to be made up out of the King's Revenues. This seems a most insolent Demand, when the Burning of that place was but the consequence of their Rebellion, and opposing his Majesties Forces sent to demand his Cannon. The Council of *Valladolid* did not at all approve of the Letter they receiv'd from *Burgos*, yet that City writ another to the Convention, advising them to set the Queen at liberty, and leave all things as they were when the Emperor went away. These Letters, and some Promises made by the Gentry, caus'd several places to waver in their Affection to the Convention, the which thereupon sent an answer to *Burgos*, reproaching them with all the Extravagancies they had committed since the beginning of the Rebellion, and threatening them with the ill consequences of forsaking the publick Cause, which, they said, they should soon be sensible of. *Burgos* was not insensible of the Reflection, and answer'd in sharp terms, telling them They had been sent to the Convention to become Petitioners to their King, not to Lord it over him; that they had betray'd their Trust, and dishonour'd the Nation; that there was no doubt but their Principals, who employ'd them, would be their Executioners before the King could have leasure to punish them, with many other severe Reflections and Invectives.

3. *Valladolid* still continu'd divided in Factions, one being for adhering in all things to the Convention, the other for receiving the Constable and Council of State into the City; and upon this account several Frays happen'd, and many were kill'd and wounded. The Constable of *Castile* having receiv'd the King's Orders above-mention'd, made them known in all Places, and to all the Nobility and Gentry, many Towns submitted and own'd him as Governour; he sent for the President and Counsellors that had made their escape out of *Valladolid* to repair to him, which they did, and then us'd all possible means to get Money to raise Men, because there was nothing to be done without Force. The King of *Portugal* upon his request, freely sent him 50000 Ducats, with which Sum and what he could

The Constable enters upon the Governments.

raise upon his own Estate, and by other means he gather'd some Foot, and writ to the Duke of *Navarra*, Governour of *Navarre*, to send him some Troops. The Duke sent 500 Men and some Pieces of Cannon; he also call'd to him the Forces that came over from *Gelves*, part whereof obey'd, others went over to the Convention, being debauch'd by *Di. Peter Giron*, and the Bishop *D. Antony de Acunha*. This done, he secur'd the City *Burgos* for the King, promising several Franchizes, and giving them his two younger Sons as Hostages for performance. Whilst the Constable order'd Affairs in this manner, the Cardinal, as was said, made his escape out of *Valladolid*, and retir'd to *Medina de Rioseco*, whence he sent to the Constable and some other Grandees, desiring them to come with Forces to his assistance, which they did, and among them the first was the Marquess of *Astorga*, on the 26th. of October, bringing with him 1700 Men; next Day the Earl of *Benavente* with 2700; then the Earl of *Lemos* with 1500; the Earl of *Valencia* with 1000, and *Ferdinand de Vega* with 350, and every Day more and more flock'd thither from all parts, this being appointed the Rendezvous and place of Arms, for now there was no other hopes left but to proceed to open War, the Convention gathering an Army at *Medina del Campo*. The Conventioners, as soon as they hear'd of the two new Governours appointed by the King, acquainted their Principals with it, demanding supplies of Men and Mony to oppose them, and at the same time writ a Letter to the King of *Portugal*, desiring his Countenance and Assistance. Tho' we know not what Answer he sent them, yet by the effect we may judge of it, since he never gave them the least Support or Encouragement. In the mean while, understanding that the Governours gather'd Forces at *Rioseco*, they summon'd all the Confederate Cities to send their Troops to *Tordesillas*. *Salamanca* sent 6000 Foot and 200 Light Horse, which with what was there before made up an indifferent Army. *Valladolid* being still divided, sent to warn those of the Convention not to exceed their Instructions, and the first design of taking up Arms. The same Messengers went to the Governours to acquaint them they would receive them into their City, provided they would not hinder the Proceedings of the Confe-

Confederate Commons, nor raise any Forces, which in Effect, was no other than Inviting them to join in the Rebellion. The Admiral of *Castile*, whose Interest was great in *Valladolid*, Writ Two Letters to them, blaming their Conduct, and perswading them to have Recourse to the King in a peaceable Manner. These, and all other Letters, were Read in Publick to all the Multitude, and produc'd no good Effect, but a great deal of Confusion. After much Debate, they again sent their Deputies to the Cardinal Governor, with Proposals to Accommodate Differences; by sending their Grievances drawn up in Articles, adjusted between the Governors and Convention, to the King, that he might Grant their Demands; and in the mean while, the Convention to continue where it was; the Governors to be allow'd and obey'd as such, and the Forces to be Disbanded. The Cardinal and Council sent a favourable Answer, accepting of the Terms propos'd, and offering to Disband, provided the Convention did so, and would leave the Queen at her full Liberty. The Conventions Answer was not so agreeable, for they did not seem at all to Comply; but only complain'd, that *Valladolid* did not Act with as much Zeal, as when the Rebellion began. These Messages had been sent by the Council of the City; and now, the Answers were communicated to the Commonalty in all their Wards. They resenting, that they had not been Consulted before the Messages were sent, turn'd out all their Deputies, and chose others in their Places; then they depos'd the Infante of *Granada* their Captain General, and offer'd that Employment to *Sancho Bravo*; who giving them fair Words, gain'd time till the next Day, to Accent of their Offer; but stole out of the Town that Night, and went away Post into *Flanders*; where he was well Receiv'd by the Emperor, and Honour'd for his Loyalty: When he was gone, the Citizens went out in great Pomp, to receive D. *Peter Giron* Captain General for the Convention, completed the 1000 Men they had Rais'd, and all in general, took a Solemn Oath to stand by the Convention, with their Lives and Fortunes.

4. *Segovia* was so divided, that they had a Civil *Factions in War* among themselves. The Earl of *Chinchon* held *Segovia*.
the

the Castle, but wanted Men ; and with much difficulty, convey'd Ten Fire-locks, with some Powder into the Place, which much disheartned the factious Party, thinking the Relief had been greater. Another Party of Loyallists had made themselves Strong in the Cathedral, which was Batter'd by the Mutineers, and a great Breach made ; yet for all, the Defendants stood Two Assaults, in which they vigorously repuls'd their Enemies, killing several of them. Nor was this all, for others had Fortifi'd themselves in Strong Houses, both within the Walls and in the Suburbs ; so that the whole City seem'd a perfect Seat of War. The Convention having resolv'd upon War, sent the following Instructions to *Valladolid*, to *D. Peter Giron*, and other Commanders of their Army, which was to Rendezvous there.

Instructions to the Army of Rebels.

I. That the Army be Commanded by *D. Peter Giron* Captain General. *D. Peter Lasso de la Vega*, *James de Guzman*. *D. Ferdinand de Ulloa*. *Alonso de Sarabia*, and *D. Gonzalo de Guzman*.

II. That the Army March towards *Medina de Rioseco* where the Cardinal, and some of the Council are.

III. That being come to that Town, they send a Herald, to require the Admiral to turn the aforesaid Persons out of the Town.

IV. That upon his refusal, they enter the Place by force.

V. That they Pursue, and Seize their Persons, and deliver them up to the Convention ; but shew all Respect to the Cardinal.

VI. That they do the same by the Constable.

VII. That they endeavour to bring *Palencia*, *Carrion*, and other Places to Join with the Holy Convention ; but that they meddle not with any Places belonging to Noblemen, except those that appertain to the Constable, and Earl of *Atva de Lisse*, who are declar'd Enemies.

VIII. That they be very careful, the Soldiers commit no Violence whatsoever ; and if any do, they are to Punish them severely.

IX. That upon any other Emergency, they are to expect their Orders from the Convention.

This

This was the purport of the Instructions, sent by Convention to their Commanders ; being now resolv'd from Words to proceed to Actions.

5. The Admiral us'd all Means to Accommodate Matters in a peaceable Manner ; and therefore Writ to the Convention, desiring a Pass to come to them. Their Answer was, that till he had turn'd the Forces, and Evil Counsellors out of his Towns, they could not admit of any Conference. He offer'd to send away the Forces and Counsellors ; but not the Cardinal and Constable, who were the King's Governors ; which did not satisfie the Rebels, who sent Two Heralds to require him to Expell them , and to lay at his Door, all the Mischiefs that should Ensue by his Protecting them. Besides, these they sent Messengers to the Constable, and Earl of *Alva de Liste*, requiring them to Disband their Forces. The Constable treated them Courteously, and sent them to the Earl of *Alva*, who seiz'd the Chief of them, cast him into Prison, and afterwards it was reported he strangled him : Which Action as the Rebels condemn'd, so others extol'd ; saying, no better Quarter ought to be given to Traitors. This Man had been made Chamberlain to the Queen by the Conventioneers ; who in revenge, proclaim'd the Constable of *Castile*, the Earl of *Alva*, and other Noblemen that sided with them Traitors, Enemies to the Kingdom, and to have forfeited their Estates.

C H A P. VIII.

The Rebels appoint D. Peter Giron their General, then Discard him, and give the Place to John de Padilla; they take Torrelabatan; the Nobility Tordefillas: Several Treaties of Accommodation come to nothing.

1520. **I.** BOTH Parties weary of Arguing and Writing, provided now to Act, and make good their Cause by force of Arms. The Rebels chose *D. Peter Giron* their Captain General, which disoblig'd *John de Padilla*, who expected that Post himself; for this Reason, the Deputies of *Toledo* and *Madrid*, would not Vote for *D. Peter*; and *John de Padilla* went away to *Toledo*, before the other came to take that Charge upon him. *D. Peter* came to *Tordefillas* with 80 Horse of his own, and began to hasten the gathering of the Army; wherein he was much forwarded by the Bishop of *Zamora*, who brought over to that Service, near 500 Men of the standing Forces, about 70 Horse of his own, and 1000 Foot, whereof 400 were Clergymen of his Diocesis, besides the Troops of *Zamora* under his Command. Every Day there came in more Forces well Arm'd from several Places, and among them, some Gentlemen and Officers of Note. The Rebels thus grown Strong, began to rail at the Loyal Nobility, calling them Traitors; they talk'd of Marrying the Queen to the Duke of *Calabria*, who had been kept Prisoner since the time of King *Ferdinand*, and forbore making any further mention of the Emperor, only naming the Queen and Kingdom. In *November* the Admiral came to *Medina de Rioseco*, where he was honorably

D. Peter Giron General of the Rebels.

honourably receiv'd by all the Loyal Nobility ; and finding all his Proposals for an Accommodation, prov'd unsuccessful, and that the Rebels under the Command of D. *Peter Giron* and the Bishop of *Zamora*, had taken the Field, being 17000 Foot, and a good Body of Horfe, with the Cannon drawn from *Medina del Campo* ; he protested against their Proceedings, and accepted of his Commission of Governor. D. *Peter*, and the Bishop, canton'd their Army in the Country about *Riofeco*, and might have oppress'd the Loyallists, had they been Resolute and Active. The next Day they sent Two Heralds, to require the Nobility to depart *Riofeco*, and Disband their Forces ; but the Earls of *Benavente* and *Alva de Lista* apprehended, and treated them as they deserv'd. As soon as the Rebels knew it, they Advanc'd with 5000 Men, Commanded by the Bishop of *Zamora*, the rest of the Army following, and drew up before *Riofeco*, where they spent Three or Four Days, to draw the Loyallists out to Fight, and sent them a formal Challenge, which they made no Account of, being much inferior in Number of Men ; as also because, they expected the Earl of *Haro* with more Troops ; and the Admiral had Intelligence in the Enemies Camp, with D. *Peter Giron*, and other Men of Quality, among whom there began some disagreement. D. *Peter de Velasco* Earl of *Haro*, Son to the Constable, had receiv'd his Commission for Captain General ; and Marching with all Expedition, arriv'd at *Riofeco* with 300 Men at Arms, 400 light Horfe and 2500 Foot, all chosen Men ; besides 12 or 13 Field Pieces. The same Night, others of the Nobility reach'd the Town with what Forces they could raise ; so that now the King's Party, made up above 1100 Horfe, and 6000 Foot of Regular Forces, besides a great Number of Foot rais'd among the Noblemens Vassals. The Convention was not Idle all this while, but sent Orders to all Places, for the associated Forces to March to them, which they did ; and the Rulers in *Valladolid*, Commanded all Persons there, from 18 to 60 Years of Age, to be provided with Arms, ready to March upon Command. The President, and other Judges of the Court of Chancery, who had still kept a fair Correspondence with the Mutineers, perceiving things were brought to Extremity, endeavour'd to promote

promote some Accommodation, to which the King's Governors were well inclin'd ; but going from them to the Bishop of *Zamora*, he turn'd them away with Scorn, and presently March'd out, to intercept a Party of the Kings ; who having Intelligence of his Design, retir'd to *Rioseco*. Things being in this Posture, the King's Council with all possible Formality, Proclaim'd all that follow'd the Convention Rebels and Traitors ; Nevertheless, at the instance of the Countess of *Modica* the Admirals Lady, She, her Husband, the Earl of *Benavente*, *D. Peter Giron*, and the Bishop of *Zamora* met at *Villabraxima*, where they agreed upon certain Articles in Favour of the Convention, which the Loyallists Sign'd, but not sincerely ; for they did it only to draw away the Enemy from *Medina*, because they frightned them ; and must have been their Ruin, had they not been diverted by this wile.

The Gentry take Tordefillas.

2. The associated Army, left their Quarters at *Tordhumos* and *Villabraxima*, without any visible Reason ; only it is suspected, that *D. Peter Giron* being of Intelligence with the Nobility, designedly betray'd his own Party, and therefore March'd away to *Villalpando*. No sooner were the Gentry at *Rioseco* deliver'd from their troublesome Neighbours, but giving out that they design'd for *Valladolid*, and securing all the Roads, that no Intelligence might be carri'd of their March, they went away directly for *Tordefillas*. By the way, they Took and Plunder'd *Pennastor*. Captain *Boz*, *Mediano's* Company, Pillag'd the Church, and Impudently resisted the Earl of *Haro*, who offer'd to Punish them ; but the Captain who had stolen a Chalice, receiv'd his Punishment from God, being the first Man kill'd at the taking of *Tordefillas*. The Conventioners in that Place, hearing of the Approach of the Gentry, sent an Express to *Valladolid* for Succors ; but they having sent 4000 Men to the Army, could give none, nor did the Army ; by the Contrivance as was believ'd of *D. Peter Giron*. The King's Army gave the Assault to *Tordefillas*, appli'd their scaling Ladders, and fir'd the Gates ; but they within defended themselves well. The Earl of *Haro* gave them a Summons ; they Answer'd, *they were as good Men as those of Medina*. The Earl Proclaim'd the Soldiers should have free Plunder, and gave the Signal ; some of the Horse dismounted, and storm'd

Storm'd with the Foot ; but there being no Breach, because the Cannon was not fit for that Service, the Assailants sustain'd great Loss. Four Hundred Clergy-Men left there by the Bishop fought desperately, and one of them is said to have Shot Eleven Men, making the Sign of the Cross over them every time he Fir'd ; but at last, some Body Bless'd him with an Arrow out of a Cross-Bow through the Forehead, of which he Dy'd upon the Spot. The Place Attack'd, was the Strongest about the Town ; which the Earl perceiving, drew off his Men in good Order to another Part of the Wall, where the Assault was renew'd with as little Success as before, above 250 Men being kill'd. At last a Breach was Discover'd in the Wall, which had been only made up with Mud. Four small Pieces were Planted, and play'd upon it ; then the Soldiers running on with Pick-axes, made a small Passage, and rush'd in one after another, the Defendants neglecting that Place, as being wholly intent to Oppose those that gave the great Assault. This discourag'd the Defendants, and animated the Loyallists ; so that notwithstanding they met with vigorous Opposition, they made themselves Masters of the Walls, open'd a Gate, and then fell to Plunder, without sparing House, Church or Monastery ; but forbore Bloodshed. Thus in a Moment, the Inhabitants had not a Bed lie on ; the same had been done before at *Pennastor*, and several other Places. The Nobility went directly and kiss'd the Queens Hand, who receiv'd them Graciously, as was usual with her ; tho' little Account could be made of it, because of her Distemper. Nine or Ten of the Members of the Convention were taken, the rest fled, some to *Medina*, others to *Valladolid*. The taking of *Tordesillas*, tho' it rather incens'd than quell'd the associated Cities, yet it was an Action of great Consequence ; because it depriv'd the Rebels of the Shaddow of the Queen, in whose Name they pretend'd to Act, giving out she was in her perfect Senses.

3. *Valladolid* was in a great Consternation, upon the taking of *Tordesillas* ; and there *D. Peter Giron* was publicly call'd Traitor, for having left it expos'd. They Writ to him to lay Siege immediately to *Tordesillas*, if he would clear his Reputation ; but he made no Account of them, and resolv'd to go himself to *Valladolid*

*The Ar-
mies go in.
to Winter-
Quarters.*

Valladolid with the Army. Abundance of his Men March'd that way before, without any Order or Discipline, Plundering and Robbing all the Country as they went. The Cardinal with several Persons of Quality, went from *Rioseco* to *Tordesillas*, where the Army broke up, and was Canton'd in the neighbouring Towns. The Cardinal, Admiral, and Earl of *Haro* stay'd at *Tordesillas*, the Constable with the Counsel at *Burgos*. *D. Peter Giron*, and the Bishop of *Zamora*, March'd with their Army to *Valladolid*, and thence towards *Simancas*, thinking to force the Place. By the way, these Two Commanders fell at Variance, and *D. Peter* went away from the Bishop. The other Officers were no less divided, so that they agreed upon nothing; and therefore the Troops of *Valladolid*, return'd home with their Artillery. Soon after, such of the Deputies as had fled from *Tordesillas* to *Medina del Campo*, repair'd to *Valladolid*; where they again set up the Convention. After this, both Parties forbid any Robbing or Plundering, or doing harm to any that were not in Arms upon pain of Death, which produc'd some little Security in the Country. Then the Bishop a restless Man, March'd from *Valladolid* to *Palencia*; turn'd out all the Magistrates, and with the Consent of the People, call'd himself Bishop of that Place; which done, he left 2000 Men there, as many at *Carrion*, and at *Torquemada*, and return'd to *Valladolid* in great State. *John de Padilla* at last came to *Valladolid*, and was there declar'd General of the associated Commons. *D. Peter de la Cueva*, surpriz'd 500 of the Rebels at *Rodilana*, between *Valladolid* and *Medina*, took and kill'd many of them, the rest escaping by Flight. Soon after, he made such another Expedition to a Place call'd *Zarca*, where of 700 Men, he kill'd, a considerable Number; and the rest retiring into the Church, took them all and brought them away to *Tordesillas*. *John de Padilla* with 2500 Men, advanc'd to *Cigales*, where he was peaceably receiv'd, and his Men Quarter'd; but they Treacherously beating an Alarm in the Night, Bound all the Inhabitants, and shut them up in the Church. At the same time, the Bishop of *Zamora* took the Castle of *Fuentes de Valdepero*, which was Surrendered to him after standing two Assaults. It would be endless, to Relate all Encounters

Encounters of less note, and taking of inconsiderable Places; therefore we shall pass by several Actions of small moment, that nothing of note may be omitted. Some Correspondence there was between *Valladolid* and *Burgos*, which put the People of this latter Place into such a ferment, that they would have turn'd the Constable out, but he finding it was in vain to dally with them any longer, drew together all the Nobility and their Followers to oppose the Multitude, who knowing themselves too weak to Engage him, submitted and deliver'd up their Arms. Then he summon'd the Governour of the Citadel to Surrender, who after some hesitation, did it the same Day. The Constable put a Garrison into the Place, appointed a Governour over the Town, and from that time forward there was no more Disturbance at *Burgos*. Whilst these things were acting in *Castile*, there had been no less troubles in the Province of *Alava*, adjoining to *Guipuscoa*, where *D. Peter de Ayala* Earl of *Salvatierra*, who sided with the Convention, us'd all his endeavours to stir up the People to Rebellion; but all his Practices were disappointed by the Conduct of the King's Lieutenant, *James Martinez de Alava*, who kept those People to their Duty.

4. The King's Council sent *D. Peter Suarez de Velez*, who had serv'd his Majesty well, to reduce the seven *Merindades*, which are priviledg'd Districts under the Justices of their own in old *Castile*, and were then in Arms. He attack'd them so furiously, that they all fled without killing a Man of his, and thus that Country was quieted for the present; But it continu'd not long, for the Earl of *Salvatierra* being inform'd, that there was Cannon and Ammunition conducted from *Euzerabia* to *Victoria*, by the Constables Order, rais'd 13000 Men in those parts and in the Mountains, seiz'd the Ammunition, and broke the Cannon to pieces, with the Sledges of the Iron-works, because he could not carry it away, those that Convoy'd it having run away with the Carriages. This done, he march'd to *Victoria*, where the People to appease him expell'd all the Loyal Gentry, who betook themselves to *Trevino*, and sent to the Constable and Duke of *Najará* for Relief. The Constable sent 400 Foot and 100 Horse, who drove the Earl out of *Andagoya*, plunder'd the Place, and burnt his House. *D. Munique de Lara*, Sent to the Duke

Burgos
brought
under.

Abions in
the Moun-
tain Coun-
try.

of *Najara*, brought 2000 Foot and 40 Horses, took *Salvatierra* from the Earl, burnt a strong House of his, reduc'd four of the seven *Merindades*, and march'd away to joyn the Constable. When he was gone, the People of *Victoria* muster'd 600 of their own Men to defend the Place, and joyning others of the Country, march'd to meet the Earl of *Salvatierra*, whom they routed near the Bridge of *Durana*; he fled, but his chief Commander, *Gonzalo Baraona* was taken and Beheaded, with him 600 Men were made Prisoners.

Concessions
to Burgos.

5. When the Constable reduc'd the City of *Burgos* to their Duty, he articul'd, That unless the King granted those things he had promis'd them within such a time, he would depart the Place. The Time being elaps'd, he had some more Days allow'd, within which, an Express brought the Emperor's Concessions, which were, 1. A Pardon for all things past. 2. He remitted the Subsidy to that City and all its Territory. 3. He granted them a free Market once a Week. The People having demanded much more, were not satisfy'd with this, and therefore assembling in a tumultuous manner, requir'd the Constable and Council to depart the City; but he was now so well guarded, that he made no account of them, however he gave them good Words, and promis'd to write to the Emperor in their behalf, with which Answer they dispers'd, tho' not well satisfy'd. The Kingdom of *Toledo* was all in a Flame, the spirit of Rebellion reigning throughout it, and in that noble City no body appear'd so forward or violent

Lady Mary
Pacheco

as the Lady *Mary Pacheco*, Wife to *John de Padilla*, and Daughter to the Earl of *Tendilla*. *F. Antony de Guevara* who liv'd at that time, in a Letter to her says, She rob'd the Treasury of the Cathedral to Pay the Soldiers, and gave Credit to a Moorish Woman-Slave, who dealt with the Devil; and told her, That her Husband would come to be a King or very near it; but he was Executed, and she Dy'd miserably in Banishment. To quell the Disorders in those Parts, *D. Antony de Zuniga*, Great Prior of *S. John of Rhodes*, was appointed General there by the Governours. He began to raise Men at *Consuegra*, and took the Field; what farther he did we shall see in its place. A Priest sent by the Governours to *Valladolid*, carry'd the King's Orders for the Court of Chancery and University to

remove

remove out of that Place, which the Multitude understanding, they cast the Priest into Prison, made away with the Emperor's Order, took away his Seal from the Keeper, and bestow'd it as they thought fit. These Outrages made the Animosities irreconcilable, and therefore the Gentry sent to *Valladolid* to detest the Commons and declare them Rebels, who did not fail to do as much on their side against the Gentry.

D. Peter Lasso, grown somewhat weary of the Rebellion, endeavour'd to be reconcil'd to the King, but got stood upon high Terms, not only for himself, but for all the Kingdom, demanding the Confirmation of all those Articles the Convention had at first drawn up. The Governours held Correspondence with him by the means of one *Ortiz* and others, and after much debate and many dangers they agreed, the Governours granting all the Articles but five upon condition, *D. Peter* was to draw off from the Convention several of the Representatives, some Forces from their Army, and part of their Artillery. These Messages could not pass so privately; but that something being rumour'd abroad, the Multitude began to be jealous of *D. Peter*, and *John de Padilla*, to make him the more odious, us'd all his Interest to have the Convention choose him General. His Design succeeded so well, that the Convention nominated him; but the Rabble rising, threatned to pull him to pieces, and declar'd they would have none but *John de Padilla* and the Bishop, which was done with such fury and vehemency that the Convention was forc'd to comply: *John de Padilla* was appointed General, and *D. Peter Lasso* resolv'd from that Day to forsake the Commons, as did several of his friends. At this time there were 400 Horse of the old Troops that came from *Gelves*, and had deserted from the King's Service at *Valladolid*, and threatned to be gone unless they were paid their Arrears, which amounted to 8000 Ducats in all. Such a Sum the City knew not where to raise, and was loath to part with those Men because they were old Soldiers, therefore they forcibly took out of the Monastery of *S. Benedict* 6000 Ducats, left there in Trust by private Persons, another Sum out of the Colledge, and borrow'd the rest about the Town to pay those Men: Thus they rais'd, beg'd and borrow'd to carry on their Rebellion,

John de Padilla
General,

ruin'd their Country and Families to save paying an inconsiderable Tax, and devour'd one another to oppose their Sovereign.

*Rebels take
the Field.*

7. All endeavours for Peace being disappointed by the Heads of the Commonalty, who were too far engag'd to look back, at last *John de Padilla*, their new General, march'd from *Valladolid* on the 16th of *February*, 1521. and being joyn'd by the Bishop of *Zamora*, and other Commanders with all their Forces, posted his Troops in the Villages about *Simancas*, plundering all the Country about to strengthen that Place, because the Garrison in it was a mighty check upon *Valladolid*. Nevertheless, on the 21st *John de Padilla* march'd away with 7000 Foot and 500 Horse, and about two in the Morning enter'd and Plunder'd the Suburbs of *Torrelobaton*; when Day appear'd he plant'd his Cannon, began the Battery, and before any Breach was made, gave a general Assault with Scaling Ladders; but the Place being well defended, he was repuls'd with considerable loss. Next Day the Battery play'd again without success, it being planted against the strongest part of the Wall, and therefore was remov'd the 3d Day so conveniently, that some small Breaches were made, and the Troops of *Valladolid* and *Toledo* gave a furious Attack tho' disorderly, and were again beaten off with loss. The Earl of *Haro* was sent by the Admiral with 1000 Horse to put some Succours into the Place, yet did nothing, being countermanded by him that sent him: Nevertheless, his approach caus'd *John de Padilla* to write to *Valladolid* for a Reinforcement, which join'd him on the 28th, being 3000

*They gain
Torrelobaton.*

Foot and 400 Horse, all as eager to Engage, as if they Fought in God's Cause. Three Days continually the Place was batter'd, and then a good Breach being made, they storm'd it with great fury. The Besieged defended themselves bravely and did much harm, but being few in number, and spent with Labour, whilst they made good the Breach, a party of *Valladolid* scal'd the Walls in another place, and made themselves Masters of the Town, which was plunder'd, and the poor People barbarously butcher'd. It would be tedious to rehearse the Inhumanities they committed. Next Day they attack'd the Castle, which being full of Women and Children and ill provided, was soon

surrender'd.

surrendered, the Defendants Capitulating for their Lives and half their Goods. This Action gain'd *John de Padilla* much Reputation, because *Torrelobaton* was within three Leagues of *Tordesillas*, where the two Governours were with the chiefest of their Strength. They immediately gave advice to the Constable at *Burgos*, who sent 4000 Men with some Cannon to joyn them; which being known at *Valladolid*, they order'd out a like number, gather'd about the Country, to lye in their way, and by this means obstructed their joyning the Governours. These Disappointments oblig'd the Nobility to desire a Truce for eight Days, and tho' the Commons of *Valladolid* eagerly oppos'd it, at length the Deputies and Commanders consented to it.

8. The main design of this Truce was in order to carry on with less difficulty the Treaty for an universal Peace. Great endeavours were us'd by the Governours, with the interposition of the King of *Portugal's* Embassadors, and most of the Articles at first demand'd by the Commons allow'd; but they were now grown so haughty that nothing could be concluded, tho' some of the Convention were for it. The chief of these was *D. Peter Lassa de la Vega*, who from that time left them and went away to the Governours at *Tordesillas*. Thus the Truce turn'd to no account, save that during those Days the Rebel Army diminish'd, many of the Soldiers who had got Money or other Booty at *Torrelobaton* going away to their Homes, as did some of the standing Forces in that Service for want of Pay. To conclude this Chapter, we must add, that the Town of *Duenas* Mutiny'd against its Lord the Earl of *Buendia*, sent for Succours to the Commons, who were concern'd at it, because that Earl underhand favour'd them, and in supporting his Town against him, they must make of a private Friend an open Enemy, as they did rather than reject those Mutimers.

C H A P. IX.

The farther Proceedings between the Royal Party and Rebels; the Battle of Villalar which decided the Quarrel; Valladolid, Toledo, and all the Country reduc'd; Traitors Executed, and a general Pardon.

*Emperor's
Declara-
tion.*

I. **B**Efore the Truce was expir'd, the Corregidor of *Medina* going to *Valladolid* with 20 Horse was taken and most of his Men, by a Party from *Simancas*, which much incens'd the Rebels; but much more the fixing up in a publick place at *Valladolid* a Declaration of the Governours in the King's Name, in which the Bishop of *Zamora*, *John de Padilla*, and about 500 of all sorts were proclaim'd Rebels and Traitors by Name. Which Declaration was solemnly read and proclaim'd at *Burgos*, and appear'd one morning, as was said before, in the Market-Place at *Valladolid*, set up by an unknown Hand. In answer to which, the next morning was found on the Gates of the great Church of that City, another Paper, exhorting the Mutiniers to proceed in their Underdaking, and take the Field immediately with the greatest Force they could make, but the Author or Publisher could never be found. *John de Padilla* after the taking of *Torrelobaton*, being blinded with that Success, continu'd there a considerable while fortifying the Place, as if he design'd it for the Seat of his Empire; but this delay prov'd his Ruin, for it gave the Loyal Party time to gather Forces, whereas they must have been in great danger, had he immediately march'd to *Toledo*. The Admiral, who study'd all possible means to put an end to these Disorders without Bloodshed, knowing that the Lady *Mary Pacheco* had a great influence over her Husband *John de Padilla*, whom she was said to have put upon all
his

his base Practices, and knowing that his Father *Peter Lopez de Padilla* was still alive, tho' very old and almost doating, he sent a Gentleman to them to perswade them to reduce him to his Duty and the King's Service; but without Success, for the Lady was proud of her Husband's Preferment among the Rebels, and expected to be no less than a Queen, having been told she should be so by a Moorish Slave skill'd in Witchcraft; and as for the Father he had not so much Command over his Son, nor Judgment enough left to manage that Affair. The Convention, in revenge for the King's Declaration being posted up in *Valladolid*, drew up another of their own contriving, and had it Read with great solemnity, Drums beating, and Trumpets sounding on a Scaffold erected for that purpose in the great Market-Place of that City. In it they declar'd the Admiral and Constable of *Castile*, and several other Persons of all degrees Traitors, and laid many hainous and scandalous Crimes to their charge.

2. These Provocations incens'd both Parties, so that they were ever abroad doing much harm, especially the Rebels of *Torrelodaron*, whom the Earl of *Haro* meeting one Day, he kill'd several of them, and took above 140 Prisoners, which made them more cautious for the future. *John de Padilla*, whom many of his Men had deserted, as was said before, finding himself too weak to deal with the Governours, sent to all the associated Cities for Supplies. At the same time, the King's Governours resolv'd to join their Forces, that they might be in a condition to Fight the Rebels in case they took the Field, or else to Besiege them in *Torrelodaron*. In order to it, the Constable and Nobility that was with him march'd out of *Burgos*; and taking the little Town of *Bezeril* by the way, where *D. John de Figueroa* was plac'd to hinder their Passage, came to *Medina de Rioseco* with 4000 Foot; 600 Horse, 3 or 4 Field-Pieces, about 530 *Gascons*, and 600 Moores of the Kingdom of *Aragon*; the Earl of *Almenara* brought with him to serve the King. Two thousand Men had been rais'd in *Aragon* for the King's Service, and were ready to march, when the Rabble of *Zaragoza* rising fell upon and surpris'd them, saying, There should go no Men out of *Aragon* to destroy the Liberties of *Castile*. *D. Peter Giron*, who was retir'd to his

King's
Forces
draw toge-
ther.

Town of *Penafiel*, sent advice of this Success to the Convention at *Valladolid*, offering them his Service again, by which it appears he left them not out of any Loyalty, but because they would no longer Entertain him.

Success of
the Loyalists
in the
Kingdom
of Toledo.

3. Before we proceed too far, let us look back what was doing in the Kingdom of *Toledo*. The Bishop of *Zamora* march'd with some Forces from *Valladolid*, to possess himself of the Arch-Bishoprick of *Toledo*; that See being vacant by the Death of *William de Croy*, Nephew to *Monsieur de Chieures*. He was well receiv'd at *Toledo*, where they put more Troops under his Command, with which, and 15 Field-Pieces, he took the Field. His Adversary, *D. Antony de Zuniga*, grand Prior of the Knights of *St. John*, had 6000 Foot, and a suitable number of Horse, several Persons of Quality resorting to him. These two little Armies being ready to Engage, some religious Persons that interpos'd, obtain'd a Truce for three Days, which yet was not observ'd; for some stragling Soldiers of the Grand Priors fell upon some of the Bishops, and a Captain of the former coming to the Assistance of his Men, fell upon a Company of the others, so that both Parties running in to succour their Friends, the whole Bodies by degrees came to an Engagement, which was resolutely fought and many Men kill'd on both sides; but at length the Bishop's Men fled, being secur'd from pursuit by the approach of Night, which gave them time to make their way to *Ocana*. The Grand Prior march'd after them, and the Bishop understanding that he held Intelligence with some of the Inhabitants, in order to have the Place deliver'd to him, he drew away his Forces toward *Toledo*. Three Days after the People of *Ocana* Capitulated, submitting themselves to the Emperor, and receiv'd the Grand Prior with great honour. His Forces increasing upon the reputation of this Success, he took up his own Quarters at *Ocana*, and Garrison'd several other Places about *Toledo*, to streighten that Place, *D. John de Ribera* doing the same on the other side the River *Tagus*. The Town of *Mora* belonging to the Knights of *Santiago*, seated near *Ocana*, had long continu'd in Rebellion; but upon the Grand Prior's Victory, submitted to him, yet in a few Days they revolted again, and not so satisfy'd, fell upon

upon a Captain of the King's, as he was passing near the Place, with a Booty of Cattle taken about *Toledo*, which they forc'd from him. Upon this *D. James de Caravajal*, with a Body of Horse, and *D. Ferdinand de Robledo*, with another of Foot, came before *Mora*, which the Inhabitants had fortify'd, and summon'd them to Surrender, to which they return'd much ill Language and fir'd upon the King's Men. *D. John de Robledo*, provok'd by this Insolence, enter'd the Place by force, fighting all the way to the Church, which was large, and all the Women and Children were retir'd to it, shutting and securing all the Gates but one that was left open, being pallizaded, and two small Guns, with some barrels of Powder to make it good. The Loyalists summon'd the Guards at this Gate to submit, who were so far from it, that they fir'd a Gun, which kill'd a Corporal. This so incens'd the Soldiers, that without expecting farther Orders, they brought a quantity of dry Vine-Branched, cast them up before the Gate, and set fire to them, thinking by that means to make their way unto the Church. The Fire coming to the Barrels of Powder, they blew up, tearing a part of the Church, and setting fire to the Timber-Work, which burnt in a most terrible manner, in so much that the People within having no other way to make their escape, but at the Gate that was fir'd, almost all of them miserably perish'd, to the number of above 3000 Souls, a most dismal Punishment for their Rebellion. Mean while the Bishop of *Zamora*, repairing to *Toledo*, was receiv'd with mighty applause, the People, as if the Right were in them, plac'd him on the Archiepiscopal Chair, and gave him Money and the Plate of the Churches to Pay his Men.

4. Neither Party was quiet in *Castile* at this time. *D. John de Mendoza*, Commander of the Forces of *Valadolid*, set out from that Place with 700 Men, and coming before the Town of *Valcasis*, enter'd by force, and plunder'd it: On the other side, the Loyalists gave two Assaults to *Palacios de Meneses*, but were both times repuls'd with considerable loss: But the Bishop of *Osma* made some amends for this disappointment, taking the Town of *Montealegre*, and routing part of the Troops of *Toledo*; of whom they sent 200 Prisoners to *Medina de Rioseco*. *John de Padilla* continu'd

Several
Exploits.

at

at *Torrelobaton*, like *Hannibal* at *Capna*. The People of *Valladolid* consum'd with the continual Expence, and weary of the dilatoriness of the Convention, assembled in a tumultuous manner, and repairing to the Cathedral where the Convention sat, bid them put an end to their Sufferings, and shew Reason for so many Delays. The Conventioneers told them, The repeated Proposals of Peace, and Treaties with the Nobility, had taken up the time; but bid them return to their respective Quarters, and that very Day they should have the particulars of all their Proceedings made publick in every Ward: Accordingly, that Day they met and had all the King's Concessions read to them, which having been mention'd in the foregoing Chapters, it will be needless to repeat any part of them. To conclude, the People not satisfy'd with what was offer'd, declar'd for War, and that to be enter'd upon with all possible expedition. Upon this Resolution, the Convention and Commanders of *Valladolid* gave orders for the Troops and Artillery to be ready to march, and most of the Deputies went away to their Towns, to take care their Forces should be ready to meet at the general Rendezvous: *John de Padilla* came privately to *Valladolid*, by order of the Convention; and at his return, carry'd away with him 2000 Foot well arm'd, 200 Horse, and 2 light Field-Pieces. His design was to Burn *Torrelobaton*, as he afterwards did, and to Fight the Constable before he could join the other Governours; but the Troops that were to join him, coming up too slowly, he fail'd of this Design. His whole Force was to consist of 14000 Men, all raw undisciplin'd Troops, and the Commanders themselves were not much beyond their Men, being divided among themselves, every one disdainng to be Commanded by another, neither did a great part of this number ever join him. This being observ'd at *Valladolid*, the more discerning sort began to doubt of the Success, and therefore the Shopkeepers put up their Goods into Monasteries, shut up their Shops, and every Man besook himself to Arms: The Poor and Handicrafts were staying, and went about the Streets begging Mercy of God and an end of their Miseries, tho' it were with their Lives. They dreaded the Nobility, who were in a very good posture, their Force being 2400 Horse and

near

near 7000 Foot, all choice Men, well arm'd and disciplin'd, under excellent Commanders, and the Earl of *Harv* their General, who acted with much Bravery and Conduct. *John de Padilla* understanding that the King's Forces were marching to Fight or Besiege him, he resolv'd to march away to *Toro*, and thence if requisite to *Salamanca*, to expect the Forces that had not yet join'd him, knowing the Loyal Army was too strong for him; but this Resolution was taken too late, as we shall soon see: The Day they march'd out of *Torrelibaton*, a Clergyman being at Breakfast with *John de Padilla* and the other prime Officers, told him publicly, That he foresaw by the Stars, that the Commons should be beaten by the Nobility that Day, and therefore advis'd him not to stir out of the Town. *Padilla* answer'd, He had resolv'd to sacrifice his Life for the Publick, and left it to God to dispose of him as he pleas'd. This very Day being the 23d of *April*, before it was light he accordingly began his March towards *Toro*; the Artillery in the van, with the Foot in two Bodies, and *John de Padilla*, with the Horse, brought up the rear. The King's Governours and General having receiv'd information which way he design'd, set out after him three several Ways; those from *Medina de Rioseco* came upon his Rear, those from *Tordesillas* took him in Front, and those from *Simancas* on the flanks. The Rebels march'd almost as far as *Villalar* in good Order, and the Nobility were divided in their Opinions, some being against putting all to the hazard of a Battle, but others were positively for Fighting. This Opinion prevailing, they began to press upon them, and the King's Horse being numerous and well arm'd, and *Padilla's* Men ill disciplin'd, dispirited, their Officers unexperienc'd, and the Foot marching up to the Knees in Dirt, they soon began to dismay; yet their Commanders encourag'd them the best they could, and the Loyalists began to keep them in play. Thus they held on to *Villalar*, where both Bodies being near one another, the King's Army began to play their Cannon, and the Rebels being at close Order, every shot did good Execution. This quite dejected the Soldiers, who striving to get into the Town, ran over one another, their Officers not being able to stay them: To add to their Misfortune, a great shower of

Rebels
roused.

of Rain fell, which beat on their Faces, so that the Foot were stuck in the Mire without being able to move backwards or forwards; nor did their Cannon stand them in any stead, for their chief Gunner ran away, leaving the Guns sticking in the plow'd Grounds. There the Loyalists seiz'd them, and some of *Padilla's* Men at Arms came over to the King; the Soldiers generally throwing away their red Crosses, and putting up white, which was the King's Colour: Thus in a very short time they were totally routed. *John de Padilla* Fought with great courage, overthrew *D. Peter Bazan* and others, till *D. Alonso de la Cueva* wounded and took him: After which, *D. John de Allosa* being told who he was, Cut him over the Face, his Vizer being up, which all Men look'd upon as a base Action. *John Bravo*, Commander of the Men of *Segovia*, and *Francis Maldonado* of *Salamanca* were both taken, with above 1000 others, not above 100 kill'd and 400 wounded: The Rebels fir'd not one Cannon shot, nor kill'd one of the Loyal Party.

5. Two Days after *John de Padilla*, *John Bravo*, and *Francis Maldonado* were sentenc'd to Die: As they were carrying to Execution, a Crier, according to the Custom of *Spain*, went before them proclaiming, That his Majesty and his Governours order'd those Gentlemen to be Beheaded as Traitors and Rebels. *John Bravo*, told the Crier, That he, and those who had order'd him to make that Proclamation ly'd, for they were not Traitors, but assertors of the Peoples Liberties. Upon this he had some words with the *Alcalde*, who attended to see the Execution, and *John de Padilla* took him up, saying, Mr. *John Bravo*, Yesterday was the time to Fight like a Gentleman, and to Day to Die like a Christian: Thus they went on to the place of Execution, where their Heads were cut off and set upon Poles. As soon as the Rebel Army was routed, and the three principal Commanders executed, the Members of the Convention that were at *Valladolid* fled, and vanish'd like Smoke. Three Days after the Fight, the King's Army posted itself about *Valladolid*, securing all the Avenues, so that no Provisions could be put into the Place. The Mutiniers dismay'd, and the Loyal Party in the Town began to declin'd their Minds, so that they sent out some Religious Men to beg Mercy. After some

Valladolid
reduc'd.

some demonstrations of Anger, a general Pardon was pass'd for all the People of *Valladolid*, excepting only 12 Persons such as the King or his Governours should think fit to make Examples of, and thus the Place submitted without any other Capitulation, thinking themselves happy enough that they had escap'd being Plunder'd, as well they might. That same Day the King's Army march'd into *Valladolid* in good order, where the People were so hardned and obstinate, that it was observ'd not a Soul look'd out at a Window or Door to see them March. Only an *Alcalde* and *Alguazil*, belonging to the Convention, were hang'd at *Valladolid*, yet many fled, none but their ill Consciences pursuing them.

1566. The news of the Defeat given the Rebels at *Vil-* Toledo
lubar, and the reducing of *Valladolid* being spread *submits.*
abroad, *Duenas*, *Palencia*, *Medina del Campo*, and all other Places submitted, except only *Toledo*, which grew hardn'd in Rebellion, where the People made daily Sallies against the Grand Prior, who lay in the Conu-try Towns about to starve that Place; but they had laid in good store of Provisions, and Coin'd the Plate belonging to the Churches, so that they made no account of any Body. The Lady *Mary Pacheco*, Wife to *John de Padilla*, headed the Multitude, and encourag'd them in their wicked Undertakings. Nor was there any bringing her to Reason, being possess'd with the foolish Opinon, that she should be Queen of *Spain*, as she had been told by certain Witches. However, after the other Rebels were defeated, her Party declin'd, and *D. Stephen Gabriel Merino*, who was afterwards Cardinal, joining with the Dean and Chapter of *Toledo*, they grew so strong that they expell'd her the City, and she fled into *Portugal*, living the rest of her Days in Misery and Want. The City return'd to its Duty, and was admitted into the general Pardon and other Advantages, then granted on account of the War the *French* had begun in *Navarre*, *John de Padilla's* House was dug up from the very Foundation, the Ground plow'd up and sow'd with Salt, and on it a Pillar erected, with an Inscription containing his Life and miserable End. *D. Antony de Acuna*, Bishop of *Zamora*, seeing all lost, and that there was no safety for him in *Spain*, resolv'd to retire into *France*, with a
great

great deal of Wealth he had plunder'd. Being got into a Disguise, to a Place call'd *Villamediana*, a League from *Logrono*, on the Borders of *Navarra*, at the same time the *French* broke into that Kingdom, he was discover'd, and taken by one Ensign *Perote*, who deliver'd him to the Duke of *Najara*, by whom he was secur'd till the Emperor sent him to the Castle of *Simancas*. There he continu'd some time, and kill'd the Governour of that Place, knocking his Brains out with a Brickbat he carry'd in a Case made for a Breviary. This he did thinking to make his Escape, but the Constable's Son coming in secur'd him, without offering any other Violence, which was look'd upon as a great deal of Patience and Moderation in the young Man. This being told the Emperor, he sent the *Alcalde Ronquillo* thither, who by vertue of a Breve the Emperor had from the Pope, to punish all Churchmen that had been in the Rebellion, hang'd him over the Wall. This hapned in the Year 1526, unknown to his Majesty, and I put it in here to conclude with Rebels.

Bishop Excused.

General Pardon.

7. And that I may have no farther occasion to treat of them, tho' anticipated, I must here observe, That when his Imperial Majesty return'd into *Spain*, the better to quiet the Minds of the People, who dreaded some exemplary Punishment, he granted a general Pardon and Amnestie for all Crimes whatsoever committed during the Rebellion; and to all Persons whatsoever, excepting about 200, some whereof had been already executed. Of the Persons excepted then alive, *D. Peter Pimentel* was Beheaded at *Palencia*, the Representatives of *Guadalajara* and *Palencia*, with others, to the number of seven at *Medina*, and two or three mean Fellows hang'd at *Victoria*. *D. Peter de Ayala*, Earl of *Salvatierra*, bled to Death at *Burgos*, and was carry'd to his Grave with his Feet bare, and Fetters on them, to be seen by all the People: The wretched Earl was so poor and miserable in Prison, that he had no other Suffenance, but a little boil'd Meat, *Leo Picard*, a Servant of the Constables, carry'd him. His Son *D. Athanasio de Ayala*, Page to the Emperor, sold a Horse he had to Relieve him, and the Lord Steward acquainting the Emperor with it, his Majesty ask'd him for the Horse. *D. Athanasio* answer'd, Sir, I sold him to maintain my Father. The Emperor was so well pleas'd, that

that he order'd him 40000 *Maravedies* after his Father was Condemn'd.

8. The Emperor to express his satisfaction for reducing the Kingdom, kept a solemn Tilting and Bull-Feast at *Valladolid*, and ran several Courtes himself, to the great satisfaction of all the Spectators. Very few of those excepted in the general Pardon suffer'd, and many of those that were well Born, had their Outlaw-ries revers'd, and were restor'd to their Honours. *Ferdinand de Avalos* of *Toledo*, was one of those that had been most deeply concern'd in the Rebellion, and was fled for it, yet he ventur'd to come privately to Court to sollicite his Pardon; which a Courtier understanding, he acquainted the Emperor where he was, who the first time took no notice of it; but the Intorner two or three Days after coming again with the same Account, the Emperor in an angry manner answer'd, *You had done better in giving Advice to Ferdinand de Avalos to be gone, than in putting me in the way to Apprehend him*: Being inform'd how few had been Executed, he said, *It is enough, let no more Blood be shed*. As soon as the People of *Valencia*, whose Revolt we have given an account of before, hear'd of the general Pardon his Majesty had granted in *Castile*, they sent their Deputies to him, begging Pardon for what was past; and submitting themselves wholly to his Will and Pleasure, only making it their humble Request, That *D. James de Mendora*, and some other Officers might be remov'd. His Majesty condescended to their Request, and gave that Government to Queen *Germana*; appointing her Husband, *John* Marquess of *Brandenburg*, Captain-General of that Kingdom: He Dying within a Year, the Emperor considering the Royal Birth and Honour of *D. Ferdinand* of *Aragon*, Duke of *Calabria*, who being kept Prisoner in the Castle of *Tarva*, in the time of the Troubles in *Castile*; and the People offering him his Liberty, to make him their General, and Marry him to Queen *Joanna*, discreetly refus'd it, saying, He would not depart that Place without the Emperor's Leave: In consideration therefore of this his Generosity, his Majesty caus'd him to come to *Valladolid*, where, besides other Honours, he Marry'd him to Queen *Germana*, and gave him the Government of *Valencia*.

C H A P. X.

The Emperor's Coronation; his Wars in Navarre, Flanders and Italy; the French drove out of Milan; Rhodes taken by the Turks.

1520. *Coronation of the Emperor.* I. HAVING run thro' the troublesome Course of the Rebellion in *Spain*, let us now come to the happy Subject of the Emperor's Coronation at *Aquisgran*. His Majesty having appointed the Electors to meet him at that City, set forwards from *Flanders*, and arriv'd the 21th of *October*, 1520. at a Castle 2 Leagues from *Aquisgran*, where the Arch-Bishops of *Mentz*, *Cologn* and *Treves*, with the Count *Palatine* expected his coming; the King of *Bohemia*, and the Electors of *Saxony* and *Brandenburg* having sent their Plenipotentiaries. The 22th he made his solemn Entry into the City in this order: First march'd 3000 *German Foot*, then the Magistrates and Burghers, then 150 *German Horse*; then 400 *Light Horse* of the Count *Palatine's*, then 200 *Crossbow-Men* a Horseback, being the Arch-Bishop of *Mentz* his Guard, then 25 of the Arch-Bishop of *Cologn*, and the like number of him of *Treves*; then 2200 *Men at Arms*, then *Monsieur de Chievers* Lord *Steward*, with a gallant Troop of Menial Servants; then a great number of *Spanish*, *German*, *Flemish* and *Burgundian* Gentry, mix'd with *Kettle-Drums*, *Trumpets* and *Haughtboys*, then a great number of *Pages* finely mounted, then 6 *Kings at Arms* scattering *Money*, then the Emperor's *Foot-Guards*, and he in the midst of them in compleat *Armour*. The whole number of *Horse* amounted to 15000. At the *City-Gate* the *Clergy* receiv'd him with *Crosses*, and conducted him to the *Cathedral*, where they lay flat on the *Ravement*, in the form of a *Cross*, till *Te Deum* was sung. Then he went with the Electors into the *Sacrify*

Sacrifice, took the usual Oath, and so retir'd to his Palace. The following Day being the 23th, the Ceremony of the Coronation was perform'd with all the usual Grandeur and Solemnity, too long to insert in so short a History. When the usual Ceremonies were perform'd, his Imperial Majesty summon'd the Diet to meet at *Wormes* on the 6th of *February*, and having visited *Maestricht* and *Liege*, went away to that City, that he might expedite his return to *Spain*.

2. Before we proceed to give an Account of this Diet, it will be proper to look back upon what was past, and what was the posture of Affairs in *Christendom* at this time. Pope *Leo* th Xth having added the Dukedom of *Urbino* to the State of the Church, thought of nothing but securing his own. The King of *England* had concluded an Alliance with the Emperor and *France*: The *Venetians* weary of past Troubles, thought good to be quiet: The Emperor's Thoughts were all bent upon reducing *Spain*, and living in peace: The *Genese*s had no Power to raise Tumults: The *Florentines* liv'd under the Influence of the Pope; and all other Princes and States of *Italy* sought rather to enjoy their Dominions in a Calm than to raise the storms of War. In the midst of this Tranquillity the King of *France*, envying the Emperor's Greatness, began to vent his Spleen, and soon put a period to the Peace; not long before concluded at *Noyon*: The better to colour his Designs against the Emperor, he favour'd *Robert de la Marche* Earl of *Arenberg*, who was offended at the Emperor, on account of a Castle he was in Law about, which had been adjudg'd to his Adversary, who accordingly took possession of it. Hereupon *la Marche* withdraws into *France*, and raises Forces to recover the said Castle; but such as well appear'd could not be maintain'd by him, had he not been back'd by a greater Prince, nor durst he, without such a Support, have attempted to make War on so great a Monarch as the Emperor, who sent the Earl of *Nassau* against him, and drove him quite out of the *Low-Countries*, taking all the Towns and Castles that belong'd to him. Complaint being made to the King of *France*, that he transgress'd against the Peace of *Noyon*, in favouring *la Marche*, he deny'd it, yet presently affect the Duke of *Bourbon* his General, took several

State of
Christen-
dom.

small Places in the *Low-Countries*, and thus the War began.

1521.
Wars in
Navarre.

3. King *Francis* seeing but very little prospect of making any considerable Advantage in the *Low-Countries*, thought better to try his fortune in *Spain*, where the Rebellion furnish'd a good opportunity of gaining an Advantage, and *Henry d' Albret*, rightful King of *Navarre*, was furnish'd with a good pretence to Invade that Kingdom then left naked, the Vice-Roy, *D. Antony Manrique*, Duke of *Najara*, having sent away part of his Forces, and the Cannon of *Pamplona*, to the Governours of *Castile* against the Rebels. *L' Esparre*, Brother to Monsieur *Lautrec*, with 12000 Foot and 800 Men at Arms, entering the Kingdom of *Navarre*, in 15 Days made himself Master of it, all Places surrendering upon his approach, except only the Fortres of *Maya*, which he was never possess'd of. Tho' at his first passing the *Pyrenean Mountains*, *L' Esparre* gave out, that he only came to restore the Family d' *Albret* to the Kingdom of *Navarre*; yet being now possess'd of it, he stopp'd not there, but went on and laid Siege to *Logrono* a Town of *Castile*. *D. Peter Velez de Guevara* was got into the Place with a few Soldiers, and the Towns-Men standing upon their Defence, it was made good for several Days against all the Power of the *French*, who batter'd it furiously, till hearing that the Governours after quieting the Troubles of *Castile*, were Marching to the relief of the Town, he rais'd his Siege and drew off, the Garrison doing him some hurt in his Retreat. Next Day, the *Spanish Army* entered *Logrono*, where a Dispute arising about the Command of it, the Earl of *Haro* pretending to it, as having been Captain General till then, and the Duke of *Najara* as Viceroy of *Navarre*, it was decided in Favour of the latter. As the *French* retir'd towards *Pamplona*, the *Spaniards* pursu'd taking up the Quarter they left, and the 2d Day 7000 Men the Constable had order'd to March from *Biscay*, *Guipuscoa*, and *Alicua* join'd them. There happen'd daily Skirmishes between the Two Armies, in one of which, the *French* had bury'd 3 pieces of Cannon, and several Barrels of Powder in such manner, that 1000 Men coming to Charge, they took Fire and blew vp most of them; so that not above 300 escap'd. In this manner they continu'd

tinu'd their Marches, till the *French* Encamp'd on an advantageous Ground two Leagues from *Pamplona*, thinking themselves safe, as having a Wood before them, which the *Spaniards* could not pass without great Danger; and in case the worst should happen, the *French* had *Pamplona* to retire to. The Duke of *Najara* having weigh'd all Circumstances, took his March through the Wood, but quite another Way than the Enemy imagin'd; for he made a Compass of Two Leagues, and came out to Encamp just between *Pamplona* and the *French*, which was a bold Action; yet as such it daunted the Enemy, who thought of nothing less than seeing them in that Place, for there was but a League distance between the Two Camps. This made *L'Esparre* resolve to give the Battle immediately, as well because he could not get off with Safety, as because the *Spaniards* were tir'd with a long March, and his Men fresh. The *Spaniards* drew up, but the *French* gain'd an advantageous Ground for their Artillery, whence they did great Execution, and made a Body of 500 Foot retire, till the Admiral came in with a Body of Horse and brought them again to the Charge, or else all had been lost. On the other Side, a Body of *French* Horse gave such a furious Charge upon a Body of Foot, as put them in Disorder and they were ready to fly, till the Constable with the *Spanish* Horse falling upon those *French*, kill'd or took most of them. In the mean while a Battal-French
roused.
 ion of Foot perceiving the harm the Enemies Cannon did, ran bravely up to it, and routing 1000 *Gascons* that had the Guard, made themselves Masters of it, which so generally dismay'd the *French*, that in less than Two Hours time they left the Field, and a compleat Victory to their Enemies. *Michael de Perea* a young Gentleman rushing boldly into the Thick of the *French* gain'd the Royal Standard, and brought it off, which the Emperor afterwards added to his Paternal Coat of Arms. Of the *French* about 6000 were kill'd, *L'Esparre* their General with several Persons of Note, and all the Artillery was taken. This Battle was Fought on a Sunday being the last Day of *June* 1521, in the Plain call'd *Noayn* a League from *Pamplona*, and the same distance from *Zubiza*. After this Victory not only *Pamplona*, but all the Kingdom was

recover'd with as little Opposition as it had been lost; Only *St. John de Pied de Port* held out 20 Days, and was then taken by Storm, many of the Defendants put to the Sword, and their Governor Hang'd, because he had Deserted from the *Spanish* Service. All things being restor'd to Peace, the Duke of *Najara* was dismiss'd, and *D. Francis de Zuniga* Earl of *Miranda* left Vice-roy of *Navarre*, with a compleat Force to secure the Country.

Dyets of
Wormes.

4. Whilst these things were acting in *Spain*, the Diet of the Empire met at *Wormes*, where there was much Controversie with *Martin Luther*, concerning his New Opinions in Religion; but nothing was concluded, *Luther* standing stiff to his Doctrine, and the Emperor commanding him to Depart the City, which he accordingly did. By the way, he contriv'd that some of his own Friends should Seize and Carry him away, giving it out that he was Murther'd by the Emperor's Order; which done, he privately retir'd to *Alstadt*, where he lay conceal'd 8 Months, his Disciples all that while aspersing his Imperial Majesty with the Odium of the Murther, which wrought so well, that the Emperor was in danger of being daily affronted. *Luther* call'd his Retirement *Pathmos*, pretending God had there reveal'd great Secrets to him, as he had done to *St. John* in that Island. These Matters of Religion have been so often handled by several Authors, that there needs no further mention of them here; nor indeed do they properly belong to this Work, no further than as the Consequences of them came afterwards, to affect the Emperor in the Wars they caus'd, which shall be Treated of at Large. After the Dyets broke up, the Emperor was present at the Marriage of the Arch-Duke his Brother with *Anne* Sister to *Luis* King of *Hungary*, the said King *Luis* at the same time Marrying *Mary* Sister to the Emperor. At this time, dy'd Monsieur de *Chievers* the Emperor's great Favorite, of whom Mention has been made before, and the Duke d' *Arscot* succeeded him as prime Minister.

Emperor
and Pope
in League.

5. His Imperial Majesty having try'd all possible means to reduce the King of *France* to Reason, and have Satisfaction for the Damages done in *Flanders* and *Navarre*, finding him fix'd in his ill Designs, and contriving further Mischiefs, resolv'd to right himself by

by force of Arms. To this purpose he entred into a League with Pope *Leo*, who among many other Reasons moving him to it, was most powerfully led by the hopes of recovering *Parma* and *Plasencia* which belong'd to the Church, and were then in the Hands of the *French*. *Ferome Moron* who had been Secretary to the Duke of *Milan*, and was then Banished that State by the *French*, held Intelligence in all the Cities of it among the principal Inhabitants, in Order to a general rising for expelling those haughty Masters. He gave the Pope an account of his Proceedings, that he might with some Forces second the attempt of the Natives. In order to it, *Prosper Colonna* the Emperor's General, the Marquess of *Mantua* Commander of the Pope's Forces, and the Marquess *de Pescara* Viceroy of *Naples* met near the River *Lenca*; but finding their Forces did not amount to above 8000 Men, they sent into *Germany* to raise 4000 *Germans* and 2000 *Grisons*. Mean while, *Monsieur de Lautrec* Governor of *Milan* for the *French*, having some Intimation of the design'd Insurrection, seiz'd several Persons, some of whom he Rack'd, and Executed others, which together with the Sums of Money he extorted from the Cities to raise Men for the Defence of the State, rendred him and his Nation extreamly odious to those People. The State of *Milan*, we shall have so much Occasion to speak of, lies in the middle of that Part of *Italy* formerly call'd *Lombardy* from the *Longobards*, is Water'd by the River *Po*, and Borders on the State of *Venice*, the *Grisons*, the *Swiss*, *Piemont*, *Genoa* and *Parma*. The City of the same Name is of a vast Extent, for it contains 96 Parishes, besides Collegiate Churches, 46 Monasteries of Men, and 30 of Nuns, Two prefectships of the *Humiliati*, others of Orders of Knights, several Hospitals and above 60000 Inhabitants. *John Galeazzo* was the first Duke, who dy'd in 1402. leaving his Dominions to his Children. After them, *Francis Sforzia* usurp'd that Dukedom, and left it to his Heirs, till in the Year 1499 they were expell'd by *Luis* King of *France*, claiming that Dominion in Right of his Grandmother *Valentina* Daughter to *John Galeazzo*. This was the beginning of the long strife that entu'd about that Dukedom, whereof we shall have much Occasion to Treat.

Parma Besieged and relieved.

6. The 4000 Germans above-mention'd being in a very short time come to the Confederate Camp, it was resolv'd immediately to Besiege *Parma*, and in order to it, *Prosper Colonna* cross'd the River *Parma* that runs through the City, and Posted himself near the Walls. The Battery began to Play on the 8th of *September*, and the lower part of the City was entred by Assault, the *French* retiring to the other and diligently Fortifying the Banks of the River. Mean while *Monsieur de Lautrec*, being in Care for his Brother who was in *Parma*, March'd with all Expedition to the Relief of the Place with 20000 Men, *Trivulce* the *Venetian* General halting another way to Join him with 8000 Foot and 1500 Horse. Upon their approach, *Prosper Colonna* tho' the *Marquis de Pescara* oppos'd it, rais'd the Siege, and drew off to *Arselo*, where he continu'd some time. *Lautrec* being much superior in Strength to the Confederate Army, after relieving *Parma*, endeavour'd to draw them to a Battel, till understanding the Cardinal of *Sion* had join'd them with 10000 *Swiss* rais'd by the Pope; he alter'd his Method, and thought good to stand upon the Defensive. In Order to it, he caus'd the Works at *Milan* to be repair'd with all possible diligence, and posted himself along the River *Adda*, which *Prosper Colonna* must of necessity pass if he would March to *Milan*, stretching out his Troops along the Banks, securing all the Boats, and casting up Works in all convenient Places. The Confederate Army being come to the River, and perceiving the Precautions us'd to prevent their passing, *John de Urbina* a Famous *Spanish* Collonel, finding a Boat some Fishermen had, went over in it with 30 Musketeers, and others following in another Boat, they kept the Forces posted to oppose them in play, till 5 *Spanish* Companies being wasted over, they gain'd a House the *French* had Fortifi'd, and the Horse having found a Ford, tho' somewhat Dangerous, they made their way over the River. *Lautrec* understanding that the *Imperialists* had gain'd the Pass, order'd all his Troops to March with expedition to *Milan*, and put them all into that City, which he Fortifi'd with the greatest Diligence imaginable. He being gone, *Prosper Colonna* had leisure to pass over his Army without any Opposition.

7. *Prosper*

7. Prosper perceiving the Enemy was gone, march'd immediately after him, and receiving Information by the way of the Consternation they were in at *Milan*, advanc'd towards that place without loosing time. At *Vicentino*, the *Spanish* Foot attack'd a Trench and Bastion, the *Venetians* were to have defended to stop their Passage, and made themselves Masters of it, taking *Trivulce* the *Venetian* General, who came to encourage his Men. *Lautrec* understanding what had hapned, fled Milan ^{seen by the} hastily out of *Milan*, and the Imperial Army possess'd it self of that noble City without the Loss of a Man. ^{Confederates.} *Pavia*, and most of the other Places of that State presently submitted, and there remain'd only the Castle of *Milan* then accounted impregnable. *Lautrec* march'd with all speed to *Cremona*, whence he sent Orders to *Frederick Bozolo* who was at *Parma* with a good Body of Foot to repair to him, and tho' afterwards he sent a Counter-Order it came too late, for as soon as *Bozolo* was out of the City, *Rober de S. Severino*, who had marry'd the Pope's Niece, secur'd it for his Holiness. Mean while the Marquês of *Pescara* laid Siege to *Co-* ^{So Como.} *mo*, and having made a Breach, the Place capitulated for the Garrison to march out Bag and Baggage, and the Security of the Inhabitants, yet notwithstanding the Capitulation, the *Spaniards* broke in and plunder'd both the Citizens and Soldiers. Pope *Leo* dying some Days before, the Cardinals *Medicis* and of *Sion* went away to *Rome*, and the Confederate Generals being sensible, they should soon want Money to pay their Men, dismiss'd the *Swiss*, who began already to desert to the *French*. Next the *Grisons* march'd away, and the *Italian* Troops were sent with the Marquês of *Mantua* to *Placentia*. The *Spaniards* and *Germans* that remain'd were canton'd along the River *Adda*, both to cover the Country against the *French*, and that they might live on the Country till their Pay came. But that they might ^{And Alex-} not be altogether idle, they laid siege to *Alexandria*, ^{andria.} where the Garrison making a Salley, were repuls'd and so hotly pursu'd, that the Confederates entred the Place with them, which was thus unexpectedly taken.

8. Whilst the War was thus hot in *Italy*, the Armies ^{War in} were not idle in *Flanders* and *Spain*, of both which we ^{Flanders.} must next give an Account. Count *Nassau* laid siege to *Mesieres* upon the River *Maese*, and after lying before it

five Weeks, was forc'd to break up, the wet Season destroying abundance of his Men. That Siege being rais'd, his Imperial Majesty order'd *Tournay* to be invested, and Count *Nassau* to lye with another Army about *Valenciennes* to cover the Siege, and soon after came thither in Person to add Life to the Undertaking. But understanding that King *Francis* was advancing with 50000 Men to relieve *Tornay*, it was thought convenient his Majesty should retire leaving the Command of the Army to his Generals. King *Francis* with that great Power came and show'd himself before *Valenciennes*, and so return'd home without doing any thing, which the Emperor understanding, he order'd Count *Nassau* to go reinforce the Siege of *Tornay*. This was done so effectually, that the Place surrendred, about the same time that *Prosper Colonna* took *Milan*, and the Emperor having no Enemy in the Field put his Army into Winter Quarters, and went himself to *Brussels*, where he kept his *Christmas*. At the same time these things were doing in *Flanders* and *Italy*, the King of *France* taking his Advantage of the Disorders in *Spain*, endeavour'd to gain some considerable Advantage on that side. Accordingly about the End of *September*, the Admiral of *France* with a considerable Army entred *Navarre* by the way of *Roncesvalles*, took the Fort of *Penol*, and that of *Maya*, and when it was expected he would have march'd to *Pamplona*, he suddenly turn'd off into the Province of *Guipuscoa*, and sat down before *Fuenterabia*, where *James de Vera* an old Soldier was Governour. As soon as the Cannon could be planted the Battery began and continu'd with such heat, that there being no leisure to repair the Mischief it did, the Place was surrendred after it had held out 10 or 12 Days. This done the Admiral put a good Garrison with all Necessaries into the Place, and return'd into *France*, it being now the dead of Winter.

Pope Adria-
an.

About the latter end of this Year dy'd Pope *Leo* the 10th. and *Adrian* Cardinal of *Tortosa*, and Governour of *Castile* was chosen in his Place. The News of his Exaltation was brought to him to *Vitoria*, where he also receiv'd *D. Lope Hurtado de Mendoza*, who came to compliment him on that Account from the Emperor.

1522. 9. As soon as the Season was fit to take the Field in
War in the Year 1522. both Parties began to provide for War,
Italy. but

but particularly in *Lombardy* the greatest Efforts were made, there being little Action in other Parts more than barely Defensive. The Emperor had order'd 4000 *Germans* to Recruit his Army in *Milan*, besides, that *Francis Sforcia* on whom he had bestow'd the Investiture of that State, was to March with another Body. But before these Forces could join, *Lautrech* had receiv'd 18000 *Swiss*, who join'd him at *Cremona*, besides, whom he had a good Body of *Venetians*, 5000 *Gascons*, and as many *Italians*, 1000 Men at Arms, or *Cuirassiers*, and near 1000 Light Horse. *Prosper Colonna* knowing how much the Enemy exceeded him in Power, bent all his Care upon securing *Milan*, till such Time as the Duke of *Milan* and Marquess of *Manua* could join him. All his Horse he dispos'd of between the Rivers *Adda* and *Tesin*, put Garrisons into *Novara*, *Alexandria*, *Pavia*, *Plasencia*, and other Places, and shut himself up in the City of *Milan* with 4000 *Spaniards*, 9000 *Germans*, 2000 *Italians*, and 1500 Horse, having well fortify'd the Place, and provided that no Provisions might be put into the Castle, which was held for the *French*. Monsieur *Lautrech* march'd with all Expedition to *Milan*, not doubting to regain it in as short a Time as he had lost it. He hop'd some Commotion would have been made by the Inhabitants, and therefore thought presently to have given an Assault; but understanding that Men, Women, and Children were all unanimous to defend the Place, he Encamp'd and kept his Men close. Several small Actions pass'd between both Parties daily, in which there was nothing remarkable; but that one Day *Marc Antony Colonna* Brother to *Prosper*, and serving in the *French* Army, was kill'd by a Cannon-shot from the Trenches. *Lautrech* was in hopes that the Soldiers in *Milan*, would soon Mutiny for want of Pay, knowing the returns from *Naples* were not sufficient to pay the *Spaniards*, and that he himself had so fleec'd the People of *Milan*, that he thought their Contributions could never satisfy the other Forces; yet the Industry of *Ferome Moron* made all Things easie, and the People were willing to part with all the Money they had, in hopes Duke *Sforcia* would be restor'd, and to prevent the return of the *French*. Their General being inform'd, that a Body of Foot was coming out of *France*

to join him, sent *Frederick Boffolo* with 400 Horse, and 7000 Foot to conduct them. By the way *Boffolo* batter'd *Novara*, and after Two Repulses took it by Storm, then having join'd the *French* Foot he was sent to meet, return'd with them to the Camp. At the same Time Duke *Francis Sforcia* with 6000 *Germans*, advanced from *Pavia*, and being met by *Prosper Colonna* got safe into *Milan*, where he was receiv'd with extraordinary Joy by all the People as their lawful Prince.

French
routed in
Milan.

10. *Lautrech* understanding there was but a small Garrison left at *Pavia* with the Marquess of *Mansua*, broke up from before *Milan*, where he had no hopes to succeed, because of the Supply of *Germans* before-mention'd; and march'd with all speed to Besiege that Place. The Generals in *Milan* seeing his Design, sent Three Companies of *Spaniards*, and some *Corficans* to reinforce the Marquess, with Orders to use all Diligence to get into that Place; which they perform'd with extraordinary Bravery, fighting their way thro' the midst of the Enemy. No sooner were they in, but the *French* began to batter the City with such Fury, that in a short Time they made a Breach of 30 Paces, which the Defendants secur'd casting up New Works, and repulsing the Besiegers with considerable Loss. It hapned at the same Time, that great Rains fell, so that the River *Tesin* was not navigable by Reason of the Floods, and the Counry People could not come to the Camp to Sell their Provisions, whence ensu'd a very great Scarcity of Provisions. The Danger of losing *Pavia* made *Prosper Colonna* with all his Forces advance as far as the *Park*, resolving to give the Enemy Battle, tho' Inferior in number. Whilst the Horse skirmished on both sides, *Lautrech* remov'd his Camp to *Landriano*, and thence to *Monza*, which the *Imperialists* look'd upon as flying; because it was Reported, the *Swiss* began to Desert for want of Pay. It was Reported at the same Time, that *Lautrech* was march'd away to meet the Money sent him from *France*, and that he kept his Men together in hopes of it. *Archibisep Visconti* was sent to *Basto* with 500 Foot, and some Light Horse to intercept the Money, which so daunted those who had the Care of it, that they durst not set forwards from *Acona*. Upon this, the *Swiss* as soon as they came to *Monza*, demanded leave to re-
turn

turn home, or at least to Fight immediately; which tho' *Lautrech* look'd upon as a hard Imposition on him, yet by the Advice of his Council, he was forc'd to accept of Fighting, lest the *Swiss* leaving him he should be drove quite out of *Italy*. Nor was *Prosper* less Jealous, that the Enemy had taken that Course in order to slip by, and get before him to *Milan*, which made him turn back with speed, and Encamp within a League of that City facing the Road, where he could discover the Enemy in the Meadows, between whom and him there was a large Trench that serv'd to Convey Water to the Orchards. There he took his Post, as having the Advantage of Ground in case the Enemy resolv'd to Attack him, and for his greater Security brought 6000 Foot from *Milan* to reinforce his Camp. On the 27th of *April*, *Lautrech* being come to *Bicoque*, advanc'd with his Army covering all the Plain, having order'd the *Swiss* to attack the *Spaniards* and *Germans* in Front, whilst the *Venetians* with Part of his Men at Arms charg'd them in Flank, and the *Gascons* and rest of the *French* Men at Arms fell upon the Rear, the greatness of his Army allowing of this Division. *Prosper Colonna*, an Experienc'd Old Commander, fore-seeing what might happen, had so dispos'd his Troops, that there was a Body ready on the Flank, and another in the Rear to receive the Shock. The *Swiss* as had been appointed, gave their first Charge upon the *Spaniards*, who suffer'd them to Advance so near, that when they Fir'd a compleat Volley of great and small Shot, about 2000 of them fell, which so discourag'd those People, that inclining to one side they pass'd the Trench and fell upon the *Germans*, who receiv'd them with such Resolution, that with the Assistance of the *Spaniards*, they put them to Flight in such Disorder, that they quite broke the 2d Line of their own Men coming up to their Rescue. Nothing was omitted by the *French* General, who took all possible Care to see his Orders executed in the other Parts, but the Success prov'd alike every where, the Duke of *Milan* coming up in Time with 6000 Men, and making a great Slaughter of Two Bodies, that came from the Right and Left to fall in upon the Rear. Thus being Repuls'd and Hew'd down on all Sides, the *French* and *Swiss* drew off, leaving as is Reported near
10000

10000 Men kill'd upon the Spot, and retir'd with their Artillery to *Monza*, where *Lautrech* continu'd but one Night, and march'd away next Morning to *Trezo* upon the River *Adda*, from which Place his *Swiss* return'd home, as did several *French* Gentlemen.

11. These Disappointments made *Lautrech* retire to *Lodi*, which he thought to fortifie, that it might be as it were a Barrier to secure *Cremona*, where he intended to take up his own Quarters till he should receive Succours from *France*. His Design being known in the *Imperial* Camp, the Marquess of *Pescara* halted away with the *Spanish* Foot and some Horse, thinking to prevent him, tho' too late, for the *French* were got in already. However, they having had no leisure to fortifie or secure themselves, he immediately gave an Assault, which was so vigorously pursu'd, that the Enemy quitted the Walls and ran out at the further side of the Place, not stopping till they came to *Cremona*. Having with such ease made so considerable a Conquest, *Prosper* resolv'd to lose no Time, but to March directly and Besiege *Lautrech* in *Cremona*. He seeing *Lodi* was lost, and *Piciquiton* a small but strong Place had surrendred, would not stay to be shut up in *Cremona*, and therefore took his way with a Party sufficient for his Security, through the *Venetian* Territories, and *Swisserland* into *France*, leaving a strong Garrison in the City. Yet that avail'd little, for *Prosper* sending to summon it, after some short Debate, it was Agreed; That if within 40 Days a *French* Army able to take some considerable Place did not come into the *Milanese*, then the Garrison should be Conducted to *Suza* with their Arms, Bag, and Baggage; but at the same Time should be oblig'd to deliver up all the strong Holds the *French* were possess'd of in *Lombardy*, except the Castles of *Milan*, *Cremona*, and *Novara*, and Hostages were given for Performance. This put an End to all Action, the *French* having now no Force to appear abroad, and a Truce being concluded upon the Terms here mention'd. It was therefore resolv'd in the *Imperial* Army to March away immediately to *Genoa*, which the Family of the *Fregosos* held for the *French*, having expell'd the *Adornos*, who took Part with *Spain*. The Army came before the City, and sent in a Summons to *Ottavian Fregoso*, who relying on the Forces

Cremona
Articles.

Forces he had, and Succours expected from *France* made no Account of it, only endeavour'd to delay Time, that the Army might be forc'd from the City for want of Provisions, which are scarce in those Parts, the Country about being Mountainous and Barren. The Marquess de *Pescara* understanding the Drift, lost no Time but planted his Cannon, and having made a small Breach, on the 30th of *May* gave an Assault, so vigorously carry'd on by the *Spaniards*, that they entered, and made themselves Masters of the Place, which was Plunder'd, and the Booty being extraordinary great, *Prosper Colonna* order'd that no Man should be made Prisoner, and led the Army out of the Place the next Day. Count *Peter* of *Navarre* who was in the *French* Service, and had come to the Relief of *Genoa* with Two Gallies, was taken, but he recover'd his Liberty this Time, to be taken again at *Naples*, and End his Life in a Prison. Tho' the Emperor being now possess'd of *Genoa* might have secur'd it for himself, yet he chose to restore it to its Liberty, only leaving the Family of the *Adorno's* to govern with such a Garrison, as they thought fit. *Prosper* return'd with his Army to the *Milaneze*, where according to what had been stipulated, *Cremona* and all other Places were surrendred to him except the Castles of *Milan*, *Novarra*, and *Cremona*. This done, *Prosper* to lessen the Expence, dismiss'd part of the *German* Soldiers, and put the *Spaniards* into Winter Quarters.

Genoa taken and Plunder'd.

12. Notwithstanding the taking of the Island of *Rhodes* by the *Turks*, do not directly belong to this History; yet, because the Emperor sent Succours thither tho' too late, and in regard it so generally concern'd all *Christendom*, it will not be amiss to give a Brief Account of it. *Solyman* the Great Emperor of the *Turks* was so puff'd up with the Conquest of *Belgrade* in *Hungary*, and *Grand Cayro* in *Egypt*, that he thought of nothing less than subduing all *Christendom*. In order to it, he first bent his Designs against *Rhodes*, because the Knights of *St. John* of *Jersalem*, then possess'd of that Island, and in continual War with him, were a great hindrance to the Trade of *Constantinople*, taking abundance of Ships bound thither from *Egypt*, the Coasts of *Asia*, and all the other Islands. To make sure of his Enterprize, he gather'd an Army of 200000 fight.

Rhodes taken by the *Turks*.

The HISTORY of

fighting Men, and a Fleet consisting of 400 Sail, whereof 120 were Galleys, 60 Brigantines, 40 Great Men of War, the rest Transport Ships and Pyrates. This Fleet arriv'd at *Frisco*, Four Leagues from the City of *Rhodes* on *Midsummer* Day. *Philip Villiers* the great Master had taken all the Precautions for his Defence, his Mony and the shortness of the Time would allow; fortifying the Place, drawing a Chain a-crofs, and sinking several Vessels at the Mouth of the Harbour to hinder the Enemies approach on that Side, laying in Stores of Ammunition and Provisions, and filling up the number of his Troops. In the Garrison were 5000 *Rhodians*, and 600 Knights, besides their Servants. The Great Master sent to all the Princes of *Christendom* for Succours, but without success. In *fine*, the *Infidels* landed, and rais'd Two Great Mounts to over-look the City, planting their Cannon on them; then carry'd on their Approaches, and by continual Battery made a large Breach. *Pyrrhus Bassa*, having carry'd on the Siege Two Months, *Solyman* came thither in Person, and Summon'd the Great Master to Surrender upon advantagious Terms, which he offer'd; as beginning to despair of the Success, there being great Scarcity of Provisions in his Camp, and Multitudes dying of the Flux, and swellings in the Face. Supplies coming to him out of *Asia*, and the Besieg'd being resolute to hold out to the Last, he determin'd to hazard all, rather than undergo the shame of a Disappointment. Thus the Siege was continu'd for the space of Six Months; during which Time the *Infidels* gave 15 General Assaults, and were Repuls'd with incredible Loss. At last, the Great Master having done all that was in the Power of Man, with the Consent of all his Knights and Officers of Note, surrendred; Capitulating for all Persons that would have Liberty to depart with their Goods, and the *Turks* not to enter the Place, till all the Knights were out. This hapned upon *Christmas* Eve, in the Year 1522. A very small number of the Garrison surviv'd, and of the 600 Knights only 100; of the *Turks* 80000 Soldiers, and 25000 Pioneers are said to have Dy'd. *Philip Villiers* the Great Master with 100 Knights arriv'd at *Civita Vecchia*, and went thence to *Rome*, to treat with Pope *Adrian* about fixing the Order in some other Place.

The

The Pope dying, he went over into *Spain* with 40 Knights, where the Emperor in the Year 1524 or 25, gave them the Islands of *Malta* and *Gozo*, and the Town of *Tripoly* in *Barbary*. The Knights settled their abode at *Malta*, where they have continu'd ever since, being themselves known by the Name of that Island. It is Four Leagues over in the widest Place, Six in Length, and almost 20 in Compass, yet such as it is, contains 20000 Inhabitants. Its distance from *Cape Passaro* in *Sicily* is about 30 Leagues, and 60 from *Tripoly* in *Barbary*. The People are but Poor, the Women Hand-some, the Men Jealous, the Country is Healthy and Fruitful, bearing much Cotton, and not subject to Frost or Snow. The excellent Hony it produces from Thime and Violets, gave Occasion to believe it was thence call'd *Melita*. But enough of this Digression, let us return to the principal Subject of the History.

Malta:

 CHAP.

C H A P. XI.

The Emperor in Spain, Rebellion of Majorca suppress'd, a Notable Duel, Bourbon goes into the Emperors Service, Actions of English and Flemmings in France, French expell'd Milan, Fuenterrabia recover'd, Marseilles Besieg'd, the Siege rais'd.

The Emperors Voyage to Spain.

1. **T**HE Emperor having resolv'd to go over into Spain, where his Presence was of mighty Importance, he fitted out a Fleet of 150 Sail, in which were 4000 *Germans* he carry'd for his Guard, committed the Care of the Empire to his Brother *Ferdinand* Arch-Duke of *Austria*, as his Vicar, and the Government of the Low-Countries to his Aunt the Lady *Margaret*. On the 24th of *May* 1522 he set out from *Brussels*, went thence to *Nieuport*, then to *Dunkirk*, and so to *Calais* then in the Hands of the *English*, where his Fleet expected him, as did the *English* Embassadors, and several Persons of Quality of that Nation. The next Day being the 28th he went Aboard, and in Four Hours time Sail'd to *Dover*, and Travel'd thence to *London*, being receiv'd at all Places with the greatest Magnificence that can possibly be conceiv'd. At *London* he continu'd all the Month of *June*, receiving most Noble Entertainment from King *Henry* and Queen *Catherine* who was his Aunt. Here the League against *France* was renew'd, and for a further Confirmation of it, they agreed the Emperor should Marry the Princess *Mary* King *Henry's* Daughter, then but Seven Years Old; that his *Imperial* Majesty should contribute to the King 130000 Ducats a Year towards the Charge of the War, till the Marriage was Consummated, or Lands to that Value were Conquer'd in *France*.

France. All things thus concerted, the Emperor left *London* on the 4th of *July*, and on the 16th landed at *Santander* in *Spain*. Here he receiv'd the News that during his stay in *England*, *D. Beliran de la Cueva*, who Commanded on the Frontiers of *Spain*, had routed a considerable Body of the Enemy near *Bayonne*, after which he took the Castle of *Beaubie*, and plunder'd *S. Jean de Luz*. The Earl of *Miranda* at the same time had recover'd the Fortres of *Maya* in *Navarre*. These Successes together with his Majesties happy Arrival, fill'd the Kingdom with Joy, and the Constable and Admiral who were at *Vitoria* hasten'd to *Santander* to welcome their King, who receiv'd them with the Favour and Affection they had deserv'd; Pope *Adrian* having before taken Ship at *Tarragona*, and being on his Voyage to *Rome*. From *Santander* his Majesty went to *Palencia*, where he continu'd 15 or 20 Days, and sent away the 4000 *Germans* he brought to *S. Sebastian* to Serve against the *French*. Besides those Men; he brought over a good Train of Artillery, whereof there was then much want in *Spain*; it consisted of 74 Guns of several Sizes; and 9 empty Carriages, the whole Drawn by 2128 Mules, to which belong'd 1074 Drivers. On the 26th of *August* the Emperor made his Solemn Entry into *Valladolid*, where all the Clergy, Nobility and Gentry came to kiss his Hand; then he went to Visit his Mother at *Tordesillas*, paying her all the Respect of a Son, and finding she was quite besides her self return'd to *Valladolid*.

2. About this same time that is in *September*, there happen'd such a terrible Earthquake in the Kingdom of *Granada*, as the like had never been known; for it utterly ruin'd the City of *Almeria*, and threw down all the Buildings for some Miles about. At *Baeza* and *Gnadix* it did some harm but not considerable; it level'd some Hills and threw up others, discovering new Springs, and choak'd up several old ones. The whole Island of *Majorca* was now in Rebellion; one *Calon* a Dresser of Hogs-skins to carry Wine in being the Ringleader: His Majesty sent over a new Governor with some Forces to reduce those People. He Landing overthrew them in Two pitch'd Battels, which made all the open Country submit; and the Gentry who before stood Neuter came in to his Assistance. Ten

Earth-
quake,

Rebellion
in Major-
ca.

L

Thousand

Thousand of those that had submitted were added to the other Forces, and all of them together laid Siege to the City of *Majorca*, which the Rebel *Calon* obstinately defended; and the more to Strengthen himself secur'd all the Gentry, and considerable People whom he suspected to be Loyal, with their Wives and Children, many of whom he executed publicly in the Market-Place, and Beheaded and Strangled others in the Prison. At length Hunger beginning to pinch the Rebels Capitulated, the Viceroy granting a general Pardon only excepting 12 Persons, whom they were to deliver up to him, which was accordingly done, *Calon* being one of them. They were all led through the great Streets of the City, and then in the Market-Place their Flesh torn off with hot Pincers, which done they were Quarter'd, their Quarters set up, and their Goods Confiscated. Thus was that Island reduc'd to its Duty.

Fuenterabia had been some time block'd up by *D. Beltran de la Cueva*, and the Emperor being inform'd that the *French* were drawing together a great Army to relieve that Place, then much distress'd for want of Provisions, order'd the Viceroy of *Navarre* to repair thither with all the Forces he could gather. The same Orders were sent to the Governour of *Biscay*, 3000 *Germans* went to Reinforce them, and the Prince of *Orange* follow'd with the Guards and abundance of Gentry. These Forces made the *French* Commanded by *Monseur de la Palisse* very cautious of Approaching, tho' not so much, but that they made several Attempts to put in Relief, and daily Skirmishes happened. At length the *French* being above 10000 Strong March'd resolutely towards the Town, and the *Spaniards* advanc'd to meet them; but the former winding about the Mountains avoided Fighting, and put 400 Cows and as many Hogs into the Place, retiring them in good Order; but being met with on the Ridge of a Hill, they could not avoid coming to a small Engagement, in which about 400 of them were kill'd. When this Action happen'd Ashore, the *French* Fleet attempt'd to put in Succors by Sea, and would have compass'd it, had not a sudden Storm dispers'd them in such a Manner, that some were Cast away, and others forc'd into the Ports of *Spain* where they were taken, notwithstanding

Notwithstanding this ill Success they fitted out another Fleet, but to as little Effect, for only a few Men got into the Town in Boats, with as much Provision as they could carry on their Backs, most of the Ships being either taken by the Spanish Fleet, or Sunk from the Ports on the Shore. The Governor of *Fuenterabia* being in great Distress, sent a Letter to Monsieur de la *Pallisse*, acquainting him with his Condition; and appointing a Signal of Firing Three Guns from the Fleets, in Case he was in a Condition to Relieve him. That General being Reinforc'd with 10000 Foot, made the Signal, Advanc'd towards the Place with 20000 Foot, 2000 Horse, and 30 pieces of Cannon. The Spaniards who had mov'd to Meet him, finding his Power to increase, drew off in time, and left the Passage free to *Fuenterabia*. Monsieur de *Lude* the Governor was brought out in Triumph with all his Garrison, and a new one, with all Necessaries, put into the place. Some days after the Spanish Army being reinforc'd, resolv'd to give the Enemy Battle, which they, having done what they came about, resolv'd to avoid, and accordingly march'd away at Night without Beat of Drum, leaving abundance of Wine behind 'em in their Camp.

This Year 1522, in *December*, there hapnd a notable Duel, the Circumstances whereof being very Remarkable, the Reader will find some Diversion in the relation of it. *D. Peter Torrellas* and *D. Jerome Ansa*, two young Gentlemen, great Friends, and in some measure Relations, upon some Words fell out, and Challeng'd one another. Accordingly they went out with only their Swords, and being both good Fencers, fought a considerable time without giving or receiving any Wound. At last *Torrellas's* Sword dropt out of his hand, upon which he said *D. Jerome I Yield, but beg you will not tell any body what has pass'd between us, which if you will not grant, kill me upon the Spot, for I had rather dy than live in Disgrace.* *D. Jerome* swore he would not reveal the Secret to any living Creature, and this done, they embrac'd one another, and return'd home good Friends. Within a few Days, this Quarrel, and the Event of it, became a Town-talk, and some young Gentlemen made Sport at it. *Torrellas* complain'd that *Ansa* had broke his Oath, and he swore he had not open'd his Mouth about it, but that the Curate of a Village, looking after his Cattle,

*A Noble
Duel.*

had seen and heard them, and told the Story to others. *Torrellas* examin'd the Priest, found his Account did not hang well together, that he was a great Friend to *Ansa*, and therefore did not believe what he said. Upon this he charg'd *Ansa* again with *Breach of Faith*, and tho' the other deny'd it, at last it came to a Challenge. They Petition'd the Emperor to assign the Place and Weapons for Combat, according to the Laws of *Aragon* and *Castile*. He refer'd them to the Constable, who not being able to reconcile them, appointed the Great Square in *Valladolid*. There the Space of 50 Paces in length, and 39 in breadth was Rail'd in. At the two ends of the Lists were two small Scaffolds erected, one for the Emperor, and the other for the Constable, and two on the sides, for the Kindred of the Combatants. The Emperor held a Gold Rod which he was to throw down when he would have the Combat cease. The Guards stood round the Rails, and the Constable took his Seat on the other Scaffold. The Challenger entred the Lists first, accompany'd by several Noblemen, and a Herald before him, then came his Adversary in the same manner. Being call'd before the Constable, they both Swore to fight fair, without any Fraud or base Practice, then the Arms of them both were weigh'd, that they might not be heavier one than the other, and they went back to Two Tents, pitch'd for that purpose, to Arm themselves, a Gentleman of the contrary Party standing by each, to see he put on no other Armour but what was given him. The Crier having Proclaim'd Silence, *Torrellas* came out Arm'd with a Battle-Ax in his hand, and Sword by his side, and the Constable ask'd him, *Who he was ?* and *What he came for ?* to which having answer'd, he went to the end of the Lists, which done, *Ansa* perform'd the same Ceremony. At the 2d Sound of the Trumpet the two Combatants met, and fought a considerable time, giving one another mighty Blows with their Battle-Axes till they broke them, and then clos'd, endeavouring to throw one another. The Emperor thinking they had done enough to save their Honour, threw down his Golden Rod into the Lists, and then 30 Gentlemen ran in and parted them, tho' with some difficulty they were bent upon killing one another, and each pretended to have the better. Yet his Majesty said, *they had both done bravely, and neither was overcome; and there*

therefore order'd the Constable to *make them Friends*, but they were so obstinate, that he turn'd them out of the Lists in a Passion, and his Majesty appointed them to be secur'd in two distant Forts, and after long Imprisonment, they were reconcil'd from the Teeth outwards, but never sincerely.

5. The Emperor had been long intent upon concluding a League with his Brother the Arch-Duke of *Austria*, the Duke of *Milan* and *Venetians*, for the Defence of *Italy*, which was at last concluded, the beginning of this Year, and afterwards the Pope, King of *England*, Duke of *Mantua*, and States of *Florence*, *Genoa*, *Pisa* and *Luca* came into it. Each of the Confederates was by it oblig'd to furnish a certain Proportion of Troops for the Defence of *Italy*. If any one of them dy'd, the others were to continue the League in respect of him, as if he were still living. Any other Prince might be admitted within a Year. Any Controversie arising between 'em, was to be decided by Course of Law, not by Force of Arms. Yet tho' this League was concluded against *France*, no Army appear'd in the Field for 6 or 7 Months after, and consequently the Action was very inconsiderable. The Emperor appointed *Prosper Colonna* his General in *Italy*, which the *Marquis de Pescara* resenting, he went away into *Spain*, and visiting his Imperial Majesty at *Valladolid*, made his complaint, was favourably receiv'd, and well pleas'd with the gracious Answer he receiv'd. All hopes of Peace with *France* being laid aside, the Emperor order'd 6000 *Germans* to march into *Italy* and join his other Forces and the *Spaniards* Pope *Adrian* carri'd out of *Spain*. The King of *England's* Troops were to act in conjunction with his Imperial Majesties in the *Low Countries*, but did little. *D. Antony de Zuniga*, Grand Prior of the Knights of *S. John*, was appointed Viceroy of *Catalonia*. Part of the *Spanish* Foot that were at *S. Sebastian* being order'd thither in their way through *Valladolid*, they fell out with the *Flemings*, and running to Arms, would have Butcher'd all the Strangers in the Town, had not the *Spanish* Nobility and Gentry interpos'd, for which some of them were Executed the next day. Money, the Sinews of War being wanting, the Emperor assembled the *Cortes* or Parliament at *Palencia*, *Cortes* of *Castile*. where they readily granted him a Supply of 400000 Ducats, to be rais'd at three times. Among other Laws

Enacted there, one was, *That all Natives, not being Servants, might wear Swords.* After the Cortes broke up, the Emperor resolving to enter *France* by the way of *Navarre* in Person, Summon'd all the Nobility and Gentry to attend him, and set out from *Valladolid*, which the King of *France*, who was then ready to pass over the *Alps*, understanding, he alter'd his Resolution, and thought better to stay at home, and secure his own, than hazard all by aiming at another's Right. Upon this Consideration he gave the Command of his Army in *Italy* to the Admiral of *France*. Another Reason that oblig'd King *Francis* to lay aside his intended Journey, was the Conspiracy of *Charles Duke of Bourbon*, who being his near Kinsman, but highly oblig'd, because that Account was not made of him as was due to his Birth, had laid a Design, with the assistance of the Emperor and King of *England*, to Usurp the Crown of *France*. This Practice being discover'd to King *Francis*, he visited the Duke, told him what he had heard, but without seeming to give Credit to it; and therefore desir'd him to attend him in his Expedition to *Italy*. The Duke, pretending Indisposition, promis'd to follow the next day, but laid hold of that opportunity to make his Escape into *Italy*, where he afterwards serv'd the Emperor, and continu'd a Mortal Enemy to *France* till his dying day.

Duke of
Bourbon.

Duke of
Milan
wounded.

6. In the State of *Milan* Duke *Sforcia* riding out, was on a sudden set upon and wounded in the Shoulder by *Boniface Visconti*, who being well Mounted made his escape. Several Persons were apprehended upon Suspicion, that this Design lay deeper, and many would have it to be a practice of the *French*; but others affirm, *Boniface* did it to revenge a private Grudge of his own, so that no further certainty of the Design can appear. In the mean while, the Admiral of *France* had pass'd the *Alps* with 30000 Foot and 4000 Horse, and was marching with all speed through *Piemont* into *Lombardy*. This was at the beginning of *September*, when the Emperor was come to *Logrono* on the Frontiers of *Navarre*, whence he proceeded to *Pamplona*; but Money falling short, and the Plague raging in his Army, he dismiss'd the greatest Part of the Forces, leaving the rest under the Command of the Constable of *Castile*, to whom we shall return anon.

In *Flanders*, the *English* and *Flemish* Troops being ^{English and Flemings in} 30000 Foot and 6000 Horse, ravag'd all the Country before them, and meeting no Opposition broke through *Picardy* into the *Ile of France*, till they came within 11 Leagues of *Paris*, which put that City into a great Consternation; but the *French* Troops assembling from all Parts, they fearing least their Retreat should be cut off, hasted back into *Flanders* without having done any Thing considerable. A *French* Soldier taken in a Skirmish promis'd the Governor of *Flanders*, if he would give him his Liberty, so to dispose Things at *Hedin*, that he would in a dark Night have that Place betray'd to him. The Governor giving Credit to his Words let him go, and he inform'd *Pontdormie* the *French* Governour in those Parts with what he had promis'd, who dispos'd all Things for cutting off the *Imperialists*, and then the Contriver of this Project return'd to give an Account of what he had done. Three Thousand Men were sent with him to surprize *Hedin*, and he led them into the Mouth of the Cannon and small Shot ready to Discharge on them, and a Party of Horse to cut off their Retreat. However, some Chambers that had been Buried under Ground to blow up the *Imperialists*, flying back upon the *French* broke their measures, killing *Pontdormie* and his Kinsman *Canaple*, and by that means the *Flemings* had leisure to get off, and return home with the loss of about 100 Men.

7. In *July* this Year 1523. the Castle of *Milan* was surrendered to the Duke, for the *French* Garrison being much weakened by Sicknes, and despairing of Relief Capitulated, and march'd away; so that when the Admiral of *France* came thither with his Army, it was too late. *Prosper Colonna* hearing of his Approach with ^{French re-} 30000 Men, took the Field, thinking to make good ^{turn to} all the Passes upon the River *Tesin*, because the *Vene-* ^{Milan.} *ans* and other Confederates having fail'd of sending their Forces in due Time, he was not in a Condition to give the Enemy Battle. He order'd *Antony de Leyva*, who was about *Asse* and *Alexandria*, to join him with all his Forces, and to send Two Thousand Men that were in *Alexandria* to *Cremona*, as being a Place of more Consequence. Duke *Sfortia* was left in *Milan* with 4000 *Spaniards*, and as many *Germans*, all the Horse posting themselves along the River *Tesin*, which the Enemy

Enemy must pass to come to *Milan*. An Hundred *Spaniards* were sent to give the *French* some check in passing the River *Avia*, which they did to Admiration, keeping them a great while in Play, and at last resolv'd to their Army. This done, the Waters being very low, and consequently little likelihood of hindring the Enemy from passing the River, *Colonna* retir'd in good Order to *Milan*, and the Admiral without any Opposition pass'd the *Tesin*. *Antony de Leyva* with some Troops was sent to secure *Pavia*. Upon *Prospero* retiring to *Milan*, the City was in such a Consternation, that had the *French* laid hold of the Opportunity then offer'd, they might have entred it without the loss of a Man; but the Admiral spending, or rather trifling some Days along the River; *Colonna* had leisure to repair the Works about the City, and raise the Spirits of the Towns-men, so that they all took Arms and resolv'd to stand upon their Defence. This done, he sent the necessary Orders to *Antony de Leyva*, and the Marquis of *Mantua*, the Popes General, for protracting the War, till the *Venetian* and other Confederate Forces could join him, and he be in a Condition to take the Field: The Admiral coming before *Milan*, and Understanding he had let slip his Opportunity, instead of attacking the City, drew back and encamp'd a Mile from it, between the Roads to *Lodi* and the River *Tesin*, intending to block up the City. From hence he sent *Peter Bayard* with 8000 Men, and Ten Pieces of Cannon to take in *Lodi*, which being forsaken, he put a Garrison into it, and being join'd by *Rence de Cere* a Roman Baron, who brought him 4000 *Italians*, he resolv'd to attempt *Cremona*, where the Castle was still held for the *French*, but those in the Town had taken Care to throw up strong Works between themselves and it. Three Days he batter'd the Place, and having made a breach of 30 Paces resolv'd to attack it, but the continual Rain that fell for Four Days together obstructed, and want of Provisions, which were cut off by the *Venetian* and *Imperial* Armies, oblig'd him to draw off and return to the Admiral, who order'd him to take his Post at *Monza*, on the other side of *Milan*, which caus'd that Place to suffer much want, being shut up on both Sides. Nor was this all, for the *French* having destroy'd the Mills, there was no grinding of
Corn,

Corn, and therefore above 100000 Persons for a whole Week eat no Bread, till they had made Hand-mills that supply'd them. *Prosper* being quite spent with Sick-ness, and having acquainted the Emperor with it, his Majesty order'd *Ferdinand de Alarcon* to come from *Naples* to his Assistance, till *Charles de Lanoy* Viceroy of *Naples* came with the other Forces. *Alarcon* coming to *Milan* at the beginning of *November*, began to give the necessary Orders, where *Colonna* by Reason of his Indisposition could not attend, and first drew up a Mount so high that it over-look'd all the *French* Camp, where planting some pieces of Cannon he did them much harm, and continually haras'd them with real and false Alarms. *Antony de Leyva* from *Pavia* took Care to cut off the Enemies Provisions, which reduc'd the Admiral to the necessity of joining his Forces, and therefore order'd *Bayard* to come to him from *Monza*, by which means the City was left open on that side to receive Supplies from the Country. This Design of starving the City failing, the Admiral attempted to have it betray'd to him, and had agreed with an Ensign to give him Admittance, but the Conspiracy being timely detected, the Traitors were deservedly executed. Nothing succeeding, Winter being advanc'd, for it was the latter End of *November*, and the Viceroy of *Naples* drawing near, the Admiral, who had spent Two Months in vain before the City, drew off his whole Army and retir'd to *Biagras*.

8. In the mean while Pope *Adrian* dying, Cardinal *Julius de Medicis*, Nephew to *Leo* the 10th was chosen Pope, and took the Name of *Clement* the 7th; but being press'd to confirm the League concluded by *Adrian* his Predecessor against *France*, would give no positive Answer. *Charles de Lanoy* Viceroy of *Naples* had us'd all possible Diligence to assemble his *Spanish* and *Italian* Troops, in Order to relieve *Milan*; where as soon as he arriv'd, that famous Commander *Prosper Colonna* Dy'd. The Viceroy prevail'd with the *Venetians* to join their Forces to those of the Emperor, at least till 6000 *Germans* he had order'd to be rais'd should join him, so did the Horse belonging to the Church commanded by the Marquess of *Mantua*, and then he pressed the *Florentines*, *Sienseses*, and *Lucans* to pay their Quota's of Mony agreed upon by the League. It was now

1524.
Bayard
youngd.

now the beginning of the Year 1524. when all the *Imperial Forces* being join'd, the *Marquês de Pescara* with 3000 Foot, and *John de Medicis* with some Horse were sent by Night to surprize *Bayard*, who was Quarter'd in a Town call'd *Rebec*, with 3000 Foot and 500 Horse, about a League distant from the Admiral, and Four from *Milan*. The Viceroy follow'd with the rest of the *Imperial Army*, and the *Marquês* coming upon the Enemy before he was discover'd, and giving a furious Charge, put them into such a Consternation, that they made but little Opposition, but Fled, leaving all their Baggage, and several of their Number slain. This Advantage gain'd, the Confederates return'd to *Milan*, where they spent but a few Days, and then on the 5th or 6th of *February*, the whole Army advanc'd towards the Enemy. That very Day the Army march'd out, the Duke of *Bourbon*, by the Emperors Order join'd it, with the Title of his Majesties Lieutenant. They took up their Quarters at *Binaso* Ten Miles from *Milan*, and about Four or Five from *Biagras*, where the *French* lay, who made not any Motion, as if they were inclinable to a Battle. Whereupon having provided for the Security of *Milan*, the whole Army pass'd the River *Tesin*, on the 2d of *March* to cut off the Enemies Provisions, lodg'd at *Gambala*, and took *Garlasco* and *S. George*; the first secur'd their own Provisions coming from *Pavia*, and the latter obstructed the supplying of the Enemies Camp. This made the Admiral, after putting a Garrison into *Biagrasso* to remove his Camp over the River to *Vegeven*. Here the *French* say, they offer'd Battle, but the *Spaniards* say, they could never draw them to it, which is most likely; because a few Days after the latter took *Savirana*, and the *French* shut themselves up in *Novara*, expecting the Supplies that were to come to them. The *Imperialists* remov'd to *Camarino*, and by that means obstructed the Supplies that were to come out of *Piemont* to the Admiral. At the same Time *John de Medicis* took *Biagrasso* by Storm, and then possessing himself of the Pass through which 6000 *Grisons* were to break into the *Venetian Territory*, made them return to their own Homes. No hopes remaining now, but in a Body of 12000 *Swiss*, that were marching to join the *French*, the Admiral remov'd from *Novara* to meet them, and march'd towards

Admiral
drove out
of Italy.

wards Romagnan, the Imperialists keeping continually in their Rear, where they did great Execution, insomuch that the Admiral labouring to keep his Men in good Order was shot through the Arm, which oblig'd him to leave Bayard and Vandenesse to bring up the Rear, where they behav'd themselves most gallantly, but were both kill'd. Thus the French continu'd retreating, and the Imperialists pursuing them, till they pass'd the Mountains through the *Kaldessasso*, and the *Swiss* by *Val de Augusta*. Some of their Cannon was taken, the rest the *Swiss* carry'd off with them. Thus ended that mighty Expedition of the Admirals, to the great Satisfaction of Monsieur *Laurech*, whom the Admiral had affronted for loosing the Battle of *Bicoque*, whereas he now return'd home beaten without fighting, and yet with the loss of most of his Army, and part of the Cannon and Baggage. After his Departure, the Garrisons of *Lodi* and *Alexandria* capitulating to return Home, deliver'd those Places; and thus the whole State of *Milan* was restor'd to Duke *Sforcia*.

9. Whilst these things were doing in *Italy*, the Emperor as was said before, had given the Command of the Army in *Catalonia* to the Constable of *Castile*, ordering him to break into the Province of *Bearne*, which was done with much difficulty; the *Alps* at that time which was *November 1523* being almost impassable. Several Towns of smaller Note were there taken without any Opposition, only *Sauveterre* the Metropolis of the Province, being well Garrison'd held out some Days, till a Breach being made the Garrison Capitulated. Here the Troops of *Aragon* Commanded by D. *Charles de Pavia* join'd the Constable, who having plunder'd all the Country, and lain Four Days before *Bayonne* without any Success, receiv'd Orders from his Imperial Majesty to March back, and sit down before *Fuenterrabia*, whence he was not to stir till he was Master of it. Accordingly he came before it about the latter end of the Year, where the Army continu'd all that cold Season, which cost the Lives of many Men; but about the beginning of the Year 1524, the Emperor sent fresh Supplies, with which the Works were vigorously carry'd on, and a Battery planted against the weakest Place in the Wall. At the same time, the Constable held Intelligence within with *Peter of Navarre* Son to the

Spaniards
enter
France.

the Famous Man of that Name, who dy'd a Prisoner in *Spain*. This his Son was in the *French* Service with about 500 *Navarrois*, and being desirous to be Reconci'd to his Prince corresponded with the Constable, One *Franget* a Gentleman of a good Family, and ever accounted a Soldier was Governor of the Place, who dismaying at the discovery of this Correspondence, and the *Spaniards* finding out the weakest Place of the Wall, Capitulated to March out with Bag and Baggage, and be conducted to *Bayonne*, but without any Marks of Honour. Upon these Terms the Town was deliver'd, *Peter* of *Navarre* restor'd to the Emperor's Favour, and the Garrison conducted into *France*. There *Franget* the Governor being tax'd with Cowardice for delivering that strong Place, before any Necessity forc'd him, was on a publick Scaffold at *Lions* degraded of his Gentility, his Arms craz'd, and he declar'd no better than a Peasant.

Embassy
from per-
sia.

10. In *March* this Year, the Emperor remov'd his Court from *Vitoria* in *Burgos*, where he receiv'd an Embassador from the *Sophi* of *Persia*, who sent to join in League with him against the *Turk*. *Ferdinand Magallanes* having discover'd the Streight of his Name, and through it, sail'd to and discover'd the *Molucco* Islands, his Imperial Majesty had order'd a Fleet to be fitted out in order to conquer them, but the King of *Portugal*, pretending they fell within the Limits of his Jurisdiction, the *Spaniards* and *Portugueses* having by the Pope's Authority divided the World betwixt them, to avoid Contention, a great meeting of able Cosmographers was held at *Elvas*, commission'd by both Princes to determine within whose Limits the said Islands fell. Much time was spent among them in Debate, and nothing concluded, whereupon some time after, to prevent a War, the King of *Portugal* lent his Imperial Majesty a considerable Sum of Money by way of Mortgage, so that he was never to be disturb'd in the quiet Possession of those Islands, till the Money was repaid, which has not been to this day. The Emperor, after some stay at *Burgos*, remov'd to *Valladolid*, where it was concluded that his youngest Sister, the Princess *Catherine*, should Marry King *John III.* of *Portugal*, by whom she had a numerous Issue, but outly'd them all, tho' Seven of her Sons were Sworn Heirs

to

to that Crown. The Germans that had serv'd at the Siege of *Fuenterabia*, were Commanded to the County of *Roussillon*, to defend the Frontiers about *Perpignan* and *Saulses*.

11. *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, who, as was said before, fled out of *France*, and came over to the Emperor's Service, after the *French* were expell'd *Milan*, advis'd the Imperial Generals to make an Iruption into *France*, perswading them there were many of his Party in the Kingdom, who, when once they saw him at the Head of an Army, would Declare for him, and that it would be an easie Matter to make themselves Masters of *Marseilles*. It being resolv'd in a Council of War to follow his Advice, 5000 *Spanish*, 7000 *German*, and 5000 *Italian* Foot, with 1000 Horse, were appointed for this Expedition, under the Command of the *Marquis de Pescara*. The Viceroy of *Naples*, with the rest of the Forces, was to remain in *Piemont* to defend *Italy*. *Bourbon* and *Pescara* pass'd the *Alps* with the Army at the Valley of *Geneva*, having sent their heavy Cannon to *Savona*, for *D. Hugo de Moncada*, who commanded the Gallies of *Naples* to carry it by Sea. Being come to *Nice* they Victuall'd that place, and *Villafranche*, and waited some days for the Gallies which were not yet arriv'd. There they saw a Vessel, taken by *Andrew Doria*, then in the *French* Service, in which was the *Prince of Orange*, who brought the Emperor's Orders, which before he was taken, he cast into the Sea, ty'd to a Bullet. The Army and Artillery being join'd, they advanc'd towards *Marseilles*, without meeting any opposition, because the King of *France* had put all the Force he could make there into *Marseilles* no other place thereabouts being tenable. The Lord of *Brión* and *Renso de Cervi*, a *Roman* Gentleman, Commanded in the Place, which was invested on the 19th of *August*. In the City was a strong Garrison, with Plenty of Provisions and Ammunition, the Works about it were many, and those good, defended by an incredible number of Cannon, its Scituation is on a Craggy Rock, for the most part incompact with the Sea. At the Mouth of the Harbour are Two high Cliffs, with Forts on them, and several Pieces of Cannon. The first thing the *Marquis of Pescara* did, was to make himself Master of *Toulon*, a Port not far distant from *Marseilles*, which

Imperialists in France.

Marseilles Besieg'd.

which he kept all the time the Siege lasted, to secure any Vessels that came to him. This done, he open'd his Trenches near the Hermitage of *S. Lazarus*, on a rising Ground, all the Country round about being small Valleys and Hillocks, and having carry'd them on close to the Works, not without much opposition, the Besieged making a Brave Defence, in one Night they rais'd a Battery, on which were planted 8 whole Cannon, 2 Culverins, and 8 Demi-Cannon. Next Morning the Battery began to Play, and held on furiously till 3 in the Afternoon, at which time one of the Besieged, on the Wall scoffing at the Besiegers, the Cannon which ceas'd not to Batter the Wall furiously, being level'd to that place where he stood, made such Havock in the Stones, that he was toss'd, after an unaccountable manner, quite out of the Works, where he fell senseless, but without any hurt. Two Soldiers ran and brought him to the *Marquis of Pescara*, whom he inform'd, that within the Breach there was a great Mine to Blow them up, in case they gave an Assault, and the Streets of the Town all lin'd with Musketeers in the Houses, and Cannon at the end of them. This, and the News that the King of *France* was Marching with a Powerful Army to Relieve the City, put the *Marquis* into such a Consternation, that the next Morning he broke up the Siege, and burying his heavy Cannon, marcht away with such Precipitation, that they scarce rested Day or Night, and in 25 Days they spent between *Marseilles* and *Milan*, they never lay still but one. Being come into the State of *Milan*, they put 3000 Men into *Pavia*, under the Command of *Anony de Leyva*, and sent away an Exprest to the Emperor, acquainting him with the present Posture of Affairs. The King of *France* follow'd with a powerful Army, but his Actions and Misfortunes there, require another Chapter.

Siege
rais'd.

CHAP.

C H A P. XII.

The King of France enters Italy, takes Milan, and lays Siege to Pavia, several small Actions of the Imperialists, they are Reinforc'd by 12000 Germans, the Battel of Pavia, the French routed, King Francis Taken with many Men of Note, and many more Slain.

1. **K**ING Francis being ready to set forward, and considering the hazard of War, he appointed his Mother the Lady of *Luisa* Governess of the Kingdom, giving her full Power to Act as absolutely as he could himself. The causes he alledg'd for his expedition into Italy, were the wrongs he pretended had been done him for some Years past by the Emperor and his Allies, who had taken from him the Dukedom of *Milan*, and Lordship of *Aste*, and plunder'd the great City of *Genoa*, driving his Forces out of all those Places. Which Reasons oblig'd him to go in Person to recover his Right, and therefore he thought fit to commit the Government of the Kingdom during his absence, to his Mother the Lady *Luisa*. Having thus settled his Affairs at home, he March'd with all possible expedition towards *Lombardy*, leading 6000 *Swiss*, 6000 *Germans*, 10000 *French* and *Italians*, 2000 Men at Arms, and 2000 Archers. With this Force he pass'd the *Alps*, Marching directly towards *Milan*, which he hop'd to possess himself of before the *Imperialists*, who as was said before, were Marching with Precipitation could come to relieve it.

2. *Charles* of *Lanoy* Viceroy of *Naples*, receiv'd the News of the King of *France's* Approach at *Aste*, where he had been all the Summer. Thence he sent *Antony de Leyva* to raze the Castle of *Novana*, and advis'd the Duke of *Milan*, who was then at *Pisciquion* to throw himself into that City, which he and most of the Inhabitants had forsaken, because of the *Plague* that rag'd in it. But the Duke despairing of being able to defend *Milan*, chose rather to stay where he was.

From

The HISTORY of

From *Novara*, *Antony de Leyva* hasted to secure *Pavia*, The Viceroy stay'd at *Aste* till he understood the King of *France* was come to *Turin*, and the Duke of *Bourbon* to *Alva*, when finding all the Country in confusion upon the Approach of the *French*, he remov'd to *Alexandria*, where having left 2000 *Italian* Foot in Garrison; on the 20th of *October* at Night he March'd to *Pavia*, there to receive the Duke of *Bourbon* and Marquis of *Pescara*, who came thither the next Day; where understanding the Duke of *Milan* was at *Piageto*, and had Writ to the *Milanese*s to make the best Terms they could with the *French*, they sent to him to come to *Pavia* to Consult about the Defence of that State. The *Imperial* Commanders were at a stand, perceiving the *Venetians* did not assist them, and that they had not a sufficient Force to oppose the King of *France*, who was reported to be at that time 45000 Strong, and therefore they resolv'd to leave *Antony de Leyva* with 6000 Foot and 200 Men at Arms in *Pavia*; and to March themselves with the Duke to Defend *Milan*. The Approach of the *French* admitting of no delay, they March'd the 22th of *October*, tho' the Men were half Starv'd and Bare-Foot'd, and quarter'd that Night at *Chavrela*, and *Binasco* in the way to *Milan*. That Night some *Milanese*s who sided with the *French*, fell upon the Stragglers that were left behind, either because they were Tir'd or Sick and cut off many of them. Next Day the Army set out in the Morning, and that Night got into *Milan* without any Opposition, taking up their Quarters at Pleasure, because there were Houses enough and but few Men. The Duke came not, *Ferdinand Castinot* who had Charge of the Artillery sending him Advice, that the *French* were all upon the Banks of the River *Tesin*, and he therefore retir'd with his Charge to *Pavia*. This caus'd the *Imperial* Commanders to conceive a jealousy of the Duke, that he held some Correspondence with the *French*, and the more because at *Milan*, they found all the Works in a ruin'd Condition, and no Provisions, but the Natives in a strange Consternation. Besides at the same time, the *Imperialists* entred the City at the *Roman* Gate, some advanc'd Troops of the *French* got in at the other end through the Gate call'd *Barcelina*, and took up their Quarters in the Neighbouring. Both Parties being

see'd;

Tir'd, and the Night Dark and Cold, no Action pass'd between them, but the next Morning the Imperial Generals seeing no possibility of securing the Place, above 11000 of the Inhabitants being destroy'd by the Plague, and knowing the Castle accounted impregnable, was well provided, they resolv'd to March away, and secure *Lodi* and *Cremona*, which was accordingly put in execution, the *Marquis de Pescara*, with 200 *Spaniards*, repulsing the *French*, who thought to obstruct or retard their March, which they continu'd to *Marignano*, ten Miles from *Milan*, and as many from *Lodi*. Before they could reach this place, the *Milaneses* before mention'd, who serv'd under the *French*, fell upon some Advanc'd Parties of Foot, of whom they kill'd many, and took 50 Prisoners. After a few Hours rest, at *Marignano* they pass'd the River *Lambra*, at Midnight over a Bridge at the Town, which they broke to prevent any Pursuit, and so came undisturb'd to *Lodi*, which is on the River *Adda*, and incompass with Morasses, that render it inaccessible, especially to Horse, except by the Three Roads that lead to *Milan*, *Pavia* and *Cremona*, which are but narrow. Finding this City very ill provided, and worse fortify'd, and supposing the King of *France* would pursue them without intermission, as indeed he ought to have done, they cross'd the River the next day, and quarter'd themselves in the Country of *Giaradada*. From hence the Duke of *Bourbon* went away through the *Venetian* Territories into *Germany*, there, with the assistance of the King of the *Romans* to raise some Forces.

3. The *Marquis of Pescara* and *Basto* were left at *Lodi* with Five Companies of *Spanish* Foot, who seeing the *French* gave them more Leisure than they had expected, us'd all possible Diligence in fortifying and providing the place, and having made a considerable Progress, they sent for Supplies of *Spaniards*, who came to them, and there they continu'd 14 Days, without hearing any Tidings of the *French*. That King having put such Forces into *Milan*, as suffic'd to Besiege the Castle, took no care to pursue his Enemy, which its thought, would have been the better Course, but made haste to sit down before *Pavia*, that *Antony de Leyva* might not have time to fortifie himself. Duke *Sforcia* understanding his Design, went down the River *Po* to *Cremona*. *Antony de Leyva* distributed the Posts, and caus'd abundance

Lodi Fortify'd.

dance of Hand-Mills to be made, in case the *French* should possess themselves of both sides of the River, that he might not be distress'd, having no Money to pay his Soldiers, he order'd the Citizens to maintain them according to their Abilities, and that he might not want Cash for other Uses, seiz'd all the Plate, as well belonging to Churches, as Seculars, and Coin'd it, with this Inscription, *The Imperialists Besieg'd in Pavia, anno 1524.* The King of *France* invest'd *Pavia* on the 28th. of *October*, and presently drew his Lines of Contravallation and Circumvallation, incamping the greatest part of his Army in a Park, incompass'd with a Wall. After making a fruitless Attack on the Bridge of the River *Tesin*, and destroying all the Water-Mills, he order'd his Cannon to be planted, and on the 6th of *November*. began the Battery. 4. In the mean while the *Imperial* Generals seeing themselves forsaken by all the Princes and States of *Italy*, sent, as has been mention'd, the Duke of *Bourbon* to bring 10 or 12000 *Germans*, and what Succours he could get of the Arch-Duke *Ferdinand*. The Marquises of *Pescara* and *Basto* were to secure *Lodi* with 3000 *Spanish* Foot, 300 Men at Arms, and 300 Light-Horse. The *Imperial* Army at this time was so contemptible in *Italy*, that a Bill was put upon the Statue of *Pasquin* of *Rome*, to this effect: *Whosoever can bring Tidings of the Imperial Army, lost some days since among the Mountains on the Coast of Genoa, shall be well rewarded; Otherwise they shall be lookt upon as Thieves, if they conceal it.* The Marquis de *Pescara*, who was streightned in *Lodi*, the *French* being possess'd of all the Country about it, one Night gather'd all his Men in the Castle of that place, and letting out 2000 of them with their Shirts over their Coats, because the Snow lay upon the Ground, march'd away with them to *Melza*, a Town inclos'd with an indifferent Wall and Towers, and 2 good Ditches. It is near 5 Leagues from *Lodi* above *Milan*, has about 1000 Inhabitants, and in it were *Ferome* and *James Trivulcio*, Commanders of the *Milanezes* that sided with the *French*. Neither the Deepness of the Ways, nor a River they were to Wade up to the Breast in that dismal cold Weather discourag'd the *Spaniards*, but they follow'd their Leader, and coming to the Place before Break of Day, with the help of their Pikes, and handing one another, in many

Melza surpris'd.

many of them got upon the Wall, by that time the Centinels gave the Alarm, which was answer'd by Drums and Trumpets in the Town. The Spaniards who had mounted, divided themselves, one part going to break open a Gate to let in their Companions, the other advancing to engage the Enemy in the Market-place, whom they soon Defeated, killing some, and making all the rest Prisoners, for none escap'd. This done, the Marquis brought together all the Prisoners and Booty; and return'd with it the same day to *Lodi*.

5. At *Pavia* the King ceas'd not to Batter the Wall, and having made some small Breaches, gave several Assaults without any success, one of which lasted Seven Hours, and in it the French are reported to have lost 2000 men. The King finding he gain'd little by open Force, thought to have cut off that Branch of the River *Tesin* which runs by *Pavia*: but the great Rains that fell so swell'd it, that the Stream bore down all his Damms, and the Besieg'd cast up good Works on that side, that they might defend themselves, in case that Design should succeed at any other time. At the same time the Pope's Embassador was in the French Camp, on pretence of mediating an Accommodation, but it appear'd, that the Design was to join with them against the Emperor, for soon after the Duke of *Albany* marcht from the Camp with 10900 men towards *Naples*, and was to be join'd by the *Ursins*, and *Jeanin de Medicis*, the Pope's Nephew, with 3000 Foot, but this fell to nothing, for upon the News that the Germans were come into the Imperial Camp, the Duke return'd with *Jeanin de Medicis*, who had left the Emperor's Service to take up with the French. This Detachment was made, in hopes the Viceroy of *Naples* would abandon *Lombardy* to save his own Charge, but he was resolv'd to make Head against the King there, and the King was much blam'd for weakning his Army at such a time, and the consequence made it appear, that he had taken wrong Measures. However, the Siege was carry'd on with all possible Vigour, and *Antony de Leyva* did not only labour to make good his Works, but in several successful Saltes cut off a considerable number of the Enemy, Nail'd Pieces of Cannon, and took 3 more. Nor was he free from trouble within, for the German Soldiers were ready to Mutiny for want of Pay, whom he, for the pre-

Siege of
Pavia.

sent appear'd with Part of that we mention'd before, he had Coin'd of the Plate of Churches. After which, he found means to send an Account to the Viceroy of the Distress he was in. The Viceroy was himself in no better Condition, but having receiv'd 3000 Ducats from the Duke of *Milan*, employ'd one *Cisneros* an Esquire, who was fled for having murder'd a Soldier, to contrive the conveying of this Money into *Pavia*, for which Service he was to have his Pardon. *Cisneros* with a Soldier his great Friend, whose Name was *Romero*, pretended to Desert to the *French* on Account of the Murder, and being kindly receiv'd found an Opportunity to get into the Town with his Companions, having the 3000 Ducats upon them, sew'd up in their Doublets. With this Supply, *Antony de Leyva* pacify'd the *Germans* once more, and being Suspicious that their Colonel corresponded with the Enemy, invited him to Dinner, and there poison'd him.

*Defeat of
the Spaniards near
Genoa.*

6. Whilst these Things were doing at *Pavia* and about it, the *Marquess de Salusse* the Kings Lieutenant at *Savona*, understanding that *D. Hugo de Moncada* had sent the *Genoese* Fleet, to batter down one of the Gates of *Varas*, and lay ready with 4000 Men to break into that Place; hasted thither with what Forces the shortness of the Time would permit him to gather. His coming encourag'd the Townsmen, so that they Earth'd up their Gate almost beaten down, and the *Genoese* Fleet discourag'd at the arrival of this Succour, stood away to Sea. *D. Hugo* thus forsaken by his Fleet, began to retire towards *Genoa*; but the *Marquess* pursu'd him so close, Cannonading him from his Ships that he put his Forces to the Rout, and took him with a great Number of his Men Prisoners. Nor was this all, for at Sea he took Two Gallies, and the Admiral of *Genoa*, in which was a considerable Booty. The Emperor was at *Valladolid* when *Pavia* was Besieg'd, and understanding what Resolutions his Commanders had taken, gave all the necessary Orders, that they should receive Supplies of Men from *Germany*, and Money from *Spain* and *Naples*. But in the midst of these Cates he was seiz'd by a Quartan Ague, which oblig'd him to remove to *Madrid*, but before his Departure, he sent away his Sister the Princess *Catherine* to *Portugal*, where she was Marry'd to that King. The same

same Year the Lutherans in Germany, had several Meetings in order to carry on their Designs, but being as yet not grown to so great a Head, as they did soon after, upon Orders sent them from the Emperor, to submit themselves to the Determinations of the last Diet at Worms, they for some time carry'd on their Projects with more Privacy.

1525.
 17. Having thus concluded with the Year 1524, we now come to begin that of 1525, famous for the taking of the King of France, who still continu'd in his Camp before Pavia. Our Author says, the King at this time sent to challenge the Marquess of Pescara to Fight him with such a number of Forces, as he should assign, but this being below the Dignity of a King, and no other Authors making mention of it, must needs be a gross Mistake; besides, that the Marquess was not General of the Emperors Forces, but under the Command of Charles de Lannoy Viceroy of Naples, so that it could not be in his Power to accept of such Challenge had it ever been sent, which makes me believe, some of that Marquess his many Flatterers invented it, and impos'd upon the Author. By the 6th of January 12000 Germans the Arch-Duke of Austria had rais'd were come to the Imperial Camp, under the Command of George of Austria, and with them the Duke of Bourbon, who meeting in Council with the Viceroy, the Marquess and Duke of Milan, it was resolv'd to draw near to the Enemy, the better to streighten them, and endeavour the Relief of Pavia. The Marquess of Pescara having made a Speech to the Spaniards, encouraging them to maintain their Ancient Honour, and not to be discourag'd for want of Pay, which they should be sure of as soon as they had Defeated the French; it is most wonderful, that they were not only satisfy'd to stay, but offer'd what Money they had to Pay the Germans, and gather'd so much among them, as serv'd to give every German Souldier a Crown, and provide several Necessaries for the Train of Artillery, of which an exact Account was taken, that they might be repaid out of the first Money. On the 24th of January the Army march'd from Lodi, to Ferdinand Castriot Marquess of Crivita de S. Angelo, a Greek, descended from the Renowned Scanderbeg, led the Van, consisting of 500 light Horse. Next follow'd the Viceroy of Naples, General of all the Imperial For-

12000
 Germans
 came to the
 Emperors
 Camp.

Order of
 the Imperi-
 al Army.

ees, accompany'd by the Duke of *Bourbon*, and several Commanders of Note, with about 200 Men at Arms. Then the Marquis of *Pescara*, General of the *Spanish* Foot, at the Head of 6000 of them. After him march'd 2000 *Italians*, all old Soldiers, and next to them the Train of Artillery, which was so inconsiderable, it consisted of only 4 Brass and 2 old iron Guns, 3 Waggons of Powder, and 2 of Ball, and 5 or 6 Carts loaded with Boats to lay Bridges where there was occasion, and with this Train 200 Pioneers, who follow'd not the Army 2 days. *George* of *Austria*, with his *German*, brought up the Rear. That Night the Army incamp'd at *Marignano*, which is the mid-way to *Milan*, and the next day turning short, they strook into the Road to *Pavia*, and in 2 days came to *S. Angelo*, which being a small Town, Garrison'd by the Enemy, that might hinder the resort of Provisions to the Army, the Marquis of *Pescara* having made a Breach in the Wall, entered and took it by Assault. On the 30th of *January* the Army mov'd from that place, and tho' it was but 12 Miles from *Pavia*, they spent 5 or 6 days by the way, and at last incamp'd close to the *French* Army, in sight of *Pavia*, the Garrison of which place having discover'd them, gave all Demonstrations of Joy, firing all their Cannon and Small Shot, making Illuminations on the Towers, and Ringing their Bells. The *French* at the same time saluted them with above 50 Pieces of Cannon they had planted on that side to receive them, but it did no execution. The Army intrencht, and drew nearer and nearer, till they were within Musquet-shot of the Enemy, who threw up 3 or 4 Mounds, and from thence did some harm with their Cannon. Thus they spent 6 or 7 days, and Want still increast in the *Imperial* Camp, so that every Soldier had but a small Loaf for his Allowance every Day, and the reason was, because they had no Money, for which Reason the Country brought in no Provisions.

Actions between the Two Armies.

8. All the while the *Imperialists* lay in this Place, they ceas'd not to keep the *French* away with continual false Alarms; so that their Men being tir'd, began to make no great Account of these little Stratagems, which the Marquis de *Pescara* observing, he drew out 1400 *Spaniards*, and in the dead of the Night gave such a furious Attack upon a part of the Works, where 5 Com-

panies

panies of *Italians* were upon the Guard, that he broke through, and piercing into the Camp kill'd many, took some Prisoners, nail'd and dismounted some pieces of Cannon, and retir'd in safety with a considerable Booty. This made the *French* more Cautious for the future, and the King resolving not to stir from before *Pavia* till he was Master of it, order'd all the Forces he had dispers'd about the Country, to repair to the Camp, and threw up great Works on that side the *Imperialists* lay. Ammunition growing scarce in *Pavia*, Captain *Francis de Haro* choosing about 30 Men of his Troop, with every one a Bag of Powder behind him on his Horse, took a Compass one Night till he fell into a great Road that comes from *Milan*, where talking *French* in the Dark with such as he met, he pass'd on undiscover'd till being near the City, he and his Company made their way to the Gate, where making a Signal agreed upon, they were admitted. *Gaspar Moyano* who was Governor of *Alexandria*, and had there a Garrison of *Italians*, understanding that 2000 Men of the Garrison of *Marseilles*, who had landed at *Savona*, were Marching to the King's Army, drew out what Force he could, and pursuing overtook them as they were passing the River *Mura*, where he put them to the Rout, took as many as he thought fit, disarm'd and stript the rest, and return'd with the Booty and Seven Colours to *Alexandria*. Besides this the Duke of *Milan* having receiv'd Information, that *John Luis Palavicino* who serv'd the *French*, was gone with 2400 to possess himself of *Cremona*, which was but weakly guarded, he sent *Alexander Bentivoglio* to secure that Place; *Palavicino* who might have secur'd himself in *Cazal* Major was not so contented, but came out to meet *Bentivoglio*, by whom he was Defeated and taken Prisoner.

9. The Two Armies had now lain close to one another above 20 Days, and the *Imperialists* having spent all their Provisions, were reduc'd to such Extremity, that half their Men were spread about the Country to get Provisions for themselves and their Companions, for in the Camp there was no Bread to give them. Being in this necessitous Condition, the General Officers met to Consult what was best to be done; but as is usual upon such Occasions, Opinions vary'd. Some were for retiring to *Cremona*, and expecting the Succours, the Emperor had promis'd others for getting into *Mi-*

Battle of
Pavia re-
solv'd.

lan, where the Enemy had laid up great Store of Provisions, others for retiring to *Naples*, and leaving *Antony de Leyva* to make the best Terms he could ; but at last the Marquis de *Pescara* gave his Opinion, that there was no safety but in Fighting, which was at last agreed to, and the Battle appointed to be the next Day, because it was the Emperor's Birth Day. This resolution being taken, the Guards were doubled that none might go over to carry Advice to the Enemy ; Captain *Arriano* took upon him to carry the News into the City and perform'd it, the Men were order'd to be in a readiness by Nine at Night ; the Foreign Ministers that were in the Camp, and all the Baggage was sent away to *S. Angelo*, and then all things were dispos'd for the Battle. The first thing was the throwing down about 60 Fatbom of the Park-Wall, for the Army to March in. This Park belongs to a Monastery of *Carthusians* call'd *La Certosa*, and runs up near to *Pavia*. On one Side of it runs the River *Grabalon*, which near the City falls into the *Tesin*, the rest being inclos'd with the Wall already mention'd. In the midst of it is a good House call'd *Mirabeli*, with a large Ditch about it fill'd with the Water of a Brook that was hard by. Within the Park lay a great part of the *French* Army. At Ten of the Clock that Night, the *Imperialists* set Fire to their Hutts, which the *French* perceiving, thought they had been going off, and Orders were given to pursue them in the Morning. At break of Day the Guards were drawn off and join'd their several Bodies, and then they began to March into the Park in the following Order. The Men at Arms were divided into Three Squadrons, the first was led by the Viceroy as Captain General, and consisted of about 300 Men, the 2d by the Duke of *Bourbon*, as the Emperors Lieutenant, containing above 200 Men, and the 3d by *Ferdinand de Alarcon*, being about 200 more. As soon as in the Park, these Squadrons drew up on one Side, The Marquis of *S. Angelo* advanc'd with about 400 light Horse, to drive some of the Enemy out of the House of *Mirabeli*, which he perform'd and return'd to his Post. The *Spanish* Foot being about 6000, and Commanded by the Marquis of *Pescara* led the Van, next follow'd the 12000 *German*, and 2000 brave *Italians* brought up the Rear, conduct

ing the four pieces of Cannon before mention'd. At Sun rising they discover'd the Enemy moving towards them. The first Body of 500 Men at Arms was Commanded by Monsieur d'Alarcon, and supported by 5000 *Swiss*. At a small distance from them was the King, Henry d'Albret King of *Navarre*, the Prince of *Scotland*, the Admiral of *France*, with many more Men of great Note, and 2000 Lances. Next follow'd about 15000 *Germans*, 10000 *Swiss*, then 15000 *Italians* and 10000 *French*. Besides these about 10000 *French* and *Italians* were left to make good the Trenches.

10. Being drawn up in this Order, the *French* plac'd 20 pieces of Cannon, besides several Field-pieces before them, and began to play upon the *Imperialists* killing some Men, which oblig'd the *Spaniards* to shift their Ground, and draw towards the House of *Mirabeli*. Monsieur d'Alencon, who as has been said, led 500 Men at Arms, and 5000 *Swiss* taking a Compass behind some Trees, fell into the Rear of the *Imperialists*, where meeting with the 2000 *Italians* before mention'd he fell upon, and broke them, but they tho' so much inferior in Number, made such a brave Opposition, that those who had bore them down by their Multitude, came no more into the Battle. By this time the *Imperial Men* at Arms began to Advance, and the King of *France* quitting the Advantage of his Cannon, March'd forward to meet them. The shock was great and bravely Maintain'd; but the *Imperialists* being inferior in Number, the Marquis de *Pescara* sent Captain *Quesada* with 200 *Spanish* Musketeers to their relief, who coming upon their Flank, kill'd many Men of Note, and so frighted their Horses, that many of them ran away against the Will of their Riders. Many that surrendred themselves Prisoners were kill'd without any Mercy, and Monsieur de *la Palisse* after Quarter given him, was basely Butcher'd. All the Emperor's principal Officers behav'd themselves with extraordinary Bravery; Among them the Marquis of *Civita S. Angelo* being in the midst of his Enemies, had the Reins of his Bridle which he had neglected to Chain out, and the Horse finding himself at Liberty, run him into the thickest of the *French*, where he was struck through the Body by the King himself. In the mean while, the Marquis of *Pescara* Advancing towards the King, Francis Brother to the

The Ar-
mies in-
gage.

the Duke of *Lorraine*, and the Duke of *Norfolk* oppos'd a Body of *German* Foot against him, the *Spaniards* say they were 15000, the *French* say but 5000, whom the *Spanish* Foot receiv'd with such continual peals of Shot; that after a great many had been kill'd, the rest betook themselves to Flight. Nor is it only in this Particular that the Two Nations vary, for the *French* affirm, that the whole Body of *Imperial Germans* spent their Shot upon their Men at Arms, who were abandon'd by the whole Body of *Swiss* that was to Support them, those People either taking Quarter, or making the best of their way to *Milan*. And indeed the *French* Relations have much more resemblance of Truth than the *Spanish*, which to Magnifie their own Nation, attribute all the Honour of the Day to the Marquis de *Pescara*, and his 6000 *Spaniards*, making them to Act in all Places at the same time, and leaving 12000 *Germans* as only Spectators of their Exploits. In fine, the *French* Forces had given way on all Sides only the Men at Arms, tho' faintly made some Opposition, and the whole Force of the *Imperialists* was like to fall upon them; which the King perceiving, he thought of saving himself, and in Order to it, took the way towards the Bridge over the River *Tesin*. Being almost forsaken by all his People, a stragling Musketeer Shot his Horse, and one *John de Urbica* a *Biscainer* and Man at Arms, coming up as he fell, and clapping the Point of his Sword to his side where his Armour join'd, bid him Yield. The King being in that Danger, said, Give me my Life, for I am the King. Tho' it was spoke in *French*, the *Biscainer* understood it, and bid him Yield; to which he answer'd, I Yield my self up to the Emperor. No sooner were these Words spoke, but the *Biscainer* looking up, saw his Cornet surrounded by *French*, and in Danger, whereupon, without thinking to ask the King for any Pledge, he only desir'd him to take notice, that he wanted a Tooth before, and so went away to rescue his Cornet, leaving the King with one Leg under his Horse. Presently after came up to him another Man at Arms, of *Granada*, call'd *James d'Avila*, who bid him Yield. The King told him who he was, and that he had yielded himself Prisoner already. *Avila* ask'd him, whether he had given any Pledge? and being told, he had not, ask'd one; whereupon the King gave him His bloody Sword and Gauniles.

King
Francis
taken.

Gannlet. As *Avila* was labouring to get him up, one *Pita*, a Man at Arms of *Galicia*, came by, and assisted him, but as the King rose, he took off his Jewel of the Order of St. *Michael*, that hung at his Breast by a small Gold Chain, for which the King offer'd him 6000 Ducats, but he was resolv'd to carry it to the Emperor. When the King was got up, some Musquetcers hap'n'd to pass by, who would have kill'd him, not believing him to be the King, had not *Monsieur de la Motte*, who follow'd the Duke of *Bourbon*, come that way. He perceiving there was a Contention among the Horse and Foot, the former *defending*, the other *indeavouring to kill him*, desir'd to see him, which as soon as he did, *he fell upon his Knees*, which the *Spanish* Soldiers perceiving, they were convinc'd *he was the King*. Then *James d'Avila* took off his Helmet, and the King going to wipe the Sweat off his Face, blooded it a little, because his hand was hurt, which made many believe he had been wounded in the Face, but it was a Mistake. Many other Soldiers came about him, and took the Feathers he wore on his Crest, others cut Bits of his Coat, like Relicks, to carry away as Memorials, so that in a short time *they left him no Coat*. He behav'd himself all this while *with much Undauntedness*, seeming to be pleas'd at what the Souldiers did.

11. The Squadron of Men at Arms, and the *Swiss*, Rout of the *French* Commanded by *Monsieur d'Alencon*, who, as was said, had broke the *Italians*, seeing their Army Routed, gather'd all that fled that way, and took the Road toward *Vigevano*, a good Town 18 Miles from *Pavia*, where many of the *French* Nobility had left their Equipage under a good Guard. Many got to the Bridge, which was defended by *Guevara*, a *Spaniard*, then in the *French* Service, who having receiv'd as many as he could, seeing the *Imperialists* draw near, broke the Bridge, and made his way to *Turin*, and thence to *France*. A great number, who could not come time enough to the Bridge, or miss'd the way to it, took the River, which being then swollen, they all perisht in it. *Henry* King of *Navarre* seeing all lost, betook himself to Flight, and was pursu'd by a Man at Arms, call'd *Ruy Gomez*, *Christopher de Corcissa* a light Horseman, and *John de Perina* a Foot Souldier, who came up with him one after another, not knowing who he was, but supposing he must

must be some Person of Quality by his rich Accoutrements, these Three took him, and the Marquis of *Pescara* gave 1000 Florins in Gold to each of the Horse-Men, and 800 to the Foot Soldiers for him, giving Bond besides to Pay 3000 Florins more to each of the Horse-Men, at a certain Day, which he not performing, *Rui Gomez* afterwards su'd his Heirs for that Summ. Many of the *French* fled towards *Milan*, most of whom were kill'd by the Country People, who assembled in Troops for that Purpose, and many Women were observ'd to be among them. The News being spread Abroad, that the King was Taken, several *French* Gentlemen who might have got off, came in and surrendered themselves Prisoners; saying, *They would not return into France leaving their King in Captivity*. The *Imperial* Generals being inform'd where the King was, came to him, and paid him all the Respect imaginable, he ever behaving himself with much Prudence and Magnanimity. At last came the Duke of *Bourbon*, who alighting, would have kiss'd his hand, but the King would never consent to't, whereupon, the Tears standing in his Eyes, he said, *If Your Majesty had follow'd my Advice in some things, You had not been now in this Condition, nor had the Plains of Italy been stain'd with the Blood of the Nobility of France*. To which the King in some Disorder answer'd, *Patience, since Fortune does not favour*. This done, the King was Mounted, and they all mov'd together towards *Pavia*, but as they came near the Gate, the King stopping his Horse, desir'd of the Generals, *That they would not put so great an Affront upon him, as to carry him Prisoner into that place, which he had so long Besieg'd & with so great a Power, without being able to take it*. Upon this it was resolv'd, *He should be quarter'd in a Monastery without the Walls, the Guard of him being committed to the Lord Alarcon, the Army taking up its Lodging in the French Tents*. The King of *Navarre* was put into the Castle of *Pavia*, where he continu'd a long time, till he Brib'd a Servant belonging to the Marquis *del Gasto*, and fled with him into *France*. Next day after the Battle a Country Fellow came into the Camp, demanding a Reward, *Because, as he said, he had kill'd the Prince of Scotland*. This Prince, when the Battle was lost, put on a Green Coat a Servant of his wore, and throwing away his Helmet, took the Way for-
wards.

wards. Not far from the Field of Battle, he met a Company of Peasants, who were there, expecting to fall upon whosoever was Beaten, he desir'd one of them to shew him the way to *Vigeven*, and he would reward him. One offer'd his Service, and the Prince going before, the more to oblige the Fellow, told him who he was, promising to make his Fortune, if he would go into his Country with him, or else to give him 200 Ducats as soon as they came to *Vigeven*, where his Equipage was, and in Earnest he gave him a Gold Chain. The Treach'rous Peasant, when they came to a Bogg, bid him, *strike over it*, which, as soon as he attempted to do, his Horse sunk in up to his Belly, and then the Clown coming behind with a Sword, cleft his Skull, which done, he came away, to demand his Reward, shewing the Chain, as a Token of the Truth of his Assertion. The Reward this perfidious Wretch receiv'd, was such as he deserv'd, for *he was Hang'd*. The dead Prince's Body was taken up, and deposited in a Monastery in *Pavia*, till it could be convey'd into his own Country.

12. The Army continu'd in that place 5 or 6 days. *The Booty*, The Booty of all forts was of incredible Value, and a *Prisoners* vast quantity of Provisions was found in the *French and Slain*. Camp. All Prisoners that were below Ransome were soon dismiss'd, and some light Horse sent along to secure them from the Peasants. Some of the Imperialists follow'd the chase as far as *Milan*, where they were enrich'd with the Plunder of the *French* and revolted *Milaneses*, the City declaring for its Duke, others had the same Success at *Vigeven*, where they found great Wealth. The Principal Men kill'd on the *French* side were *Francis*, Brother to the Duke of *Lorraine*, *Monsieur de la Tremouille*, the Admiral of *France*, *Galeas de S. Severin*, Master of the Horse, the Marshals *Chabanès* and *Foix*, the Duke of *Norfolk*, Count de *Tourre Buffy d'Amboise*, the Baron de *Buzancois*, *Beaupreau*, *Morosin*, first Querry, and about 8000 men. The Prisoners were King *Francis*, the King of *Navarre*, the Count *S. Paul*, *Luis*, *Monsieur de Nevers*, *Fleuranges*, Son to *Robert de la Marc*, the Marshal of *Montmorenci*, *Laval*, *Brion*, *Lorges*, *la Rochepor*, *Monteian*, *Annelot*, *Imbercourt*, *Frederick Bossolo*, *la Roche du Main*, *la Mailleraye*, *Monpesat Bois*, *Courton*, *Langcy*, and very many more of Great Quality.

The

The Duke of *Milan* soon came to the Camp, and would not have seen the King, but that he was perswaded to it by the Generals. Expresses were immediately sent into *Spain*, as also to the Pope, *Venicians*, and other States of *Italy*, of whom great Sums of Money were extorted under Colour of Friendship, so that all the Army receiv'd Three Months pay. The *Germans* were sent home, and the King was put into the strong Castle of *Pieiquiton*, where he was kept under a strong Guard of *Spaniards*, where he continu'd till the Emperors Orders came for carrying of him into *Spain*, as was afterwards done.

C H A P. XIII.

The French quite expell'd Italy, Conditions of Peace offer'd on both sides, King Francis carry'd into Spain, a great Conspiracy against the Emperor Disappointed, Discoveries in America, and Conquest of Peru.

Duke of
Albany
expell'd
Italy.

1. **T**HE Duke of *Albany*, who as was said before, had been Detach'd from the *French* Army for the Kingdom of *Naples* receiv'd the News of the Defeat at *Pavia* and Imprisonment of the King, when he was near *Rome*, and preparing to make his Entry into that City. The Nobility of *Naples* had provided a Force to oppose him, and the Duke of *Sessa* and Family of the *Colonna's*, had also gather'd Forces against him. The dismal News of the Kings misfortune made all the Favourers of the Duke fall off, and he himself Dismay'd and knew not what Course to take, but resolv'd to March off the best he could with his Men, but the *Colonna's* and other *Imperialists* pursuing him close, kill'd, and took many of his Men, and possess'd themselves of all his Baggage and Cannon, he himself with such as could follow him escaping to *Civita Vecchia*, where *Andrew Doria* was with the *French* Fleet, who receiv'd and carry'd him and his Company into *France*, so that now there was not a Town; nor Body of Men in all *Italy* for the *French*.

2. When

2. When the News of the Victory at Pavia was brought to *Madrid*, the Emperor was weak and spent by his Quartan Ague, and such was the greatness of his Soul, that he never alter'd his Countenance, nor gave the least Token of Joy; but withdrew into a Private Oratory, where he continued an Hour giving Thanks to God. The Court was soon fill'd with Nobility and Foreign Ministers coming to Congratulate this Success, yet at his coming out to them he continu'd the same Calmness, and attributed all to God, nor did he ever suffer any Publick Rejoicing to be made at Court, or in any Part of the Kingdom, but only Thanksgiving in the Churches, and his Letters to the Grantees to acquaint them with this great News, he expresses his greatest Satisfaction is in the Hopes that this Success may give a lasting Peace to *Christendom*. See the Letter to the Marquis of *Denia* brought by the Author, Page 652. Dated *March* the 15th, 1525. Several great Councils were held to debate what was to be done with the King, where the Three Principal Opinions deliver'd were: *First*, That he should be kept in perpetual Imprisonment, but with all Respect imaginable. The *Second*, That he should be set at Liberty, upon his engaging and giving Security never to make War. The *Third*, That he should be set at Liberty with as much speed, and upon the best Terms that could be had. Many besides insisted, that the Emperor ought to make his Advantage of the late Success, to revenge himself on the King of *France*, ordering his Forces on all sides to invade *France*, then in a Consternation for the loss of its King, and so considerable a part of the Nobility as had been kill'd or taken. The Emperor was sensible how much this Advice was for his Interest, but it was not his Inclination to make War on Christians; nor did he aspire to the universal Monarchy, as his Enemies have falsely insinuated, as plainly appears by his Behaviour at this Time; for instead of making the Advantage he might have done of so great a Victory, he made overtures of Peace, order'd his Army in *Italy* to keep in its Quarters, and commanded that none of his Forces on the other Frontiers of *France* should invade upon pain of Death. Besides, he sent to several Princes, exhorting them not to molest the *French* Dominions, and appointed *Adrian de Croy*
a Knight

The Emperors behaviour upon the News of the Victory at Pavia.

a Knight of the Golden Fleece, to go comfort the King. As soon as the Emperor made his intention known, the Council began to draw up the Conditions upon which the King was to be set at Liberty, and *Adrian de Croÿ* had it in his instructions, to acquaint him, that nothing could retard his Delivery, and giving Peace to *Christendom*, but the not complying with them. He was also order'd, in his way, to visit the King's Mother, to shew her his Instruction, to give her to understand, she must not expect her Son's Liberty, unless that were fulfill'd. It was nevertheless resolv'd, that the Emperor, tho' he sent a Message by word of mouth, should not write to the King till he had first receiv'd a Letter from him, but that he should answer one deliver'd him from the King's Mother by this Messenger above-mention'd: The Letters from the Queen to the Emperor, and his Answer, only contain: the first, a request of *Good Usage*, and *that he might be restor'd to Liberty, and Peace concluded*; the latter, the *Emperor's assurances of doing all in his power that shall tend to the releasing of the King, and making an advantageous Peace for all Christendom*. They are both at large to be seen in our Author, page 653, & 654. neither of them is Dated.

Conditions
proposed to
the Empe-
40r.

3. Before *Monsieur de Croÿ* saw the King of France or his Mother, they had resolv'd to send the Archbishop of *Embrun* to the Emperor, to Treat about the King's Liberty, and accordingly the King's Mother writ to the Emperor to send him a Pass, which was readily granted: In the mean while the King sent *Monsieur Brion* to the Emperor with a Letter writ with his own hand, in which he desires him to expedite his Deliverance, and to do it on such Terms, as may be Honourable to them both. The Letter at large is in the Author, p. 655. without Date. The Conditions propos'd to the King of France in the Instruction *Monsieur de Croÿ* carry'd, were, First, *That an Universal Peace for all Christendom be establish'd, each Prince giving Security for Himself and his Allies, and forgiving past Injuries.* 2dly, *That they both employ their Forces against the Infidels, each sending 5000 Foot, and 2000 Horse, and endeavour to bring other Christian Princes into the League.* 3dly, *That the Dauphin Marry, Mary, Daughter to the King of Portugal and Queen Ellenor, and as a Portion both Princes Renounce all Claims they have upon one another's Dominions.* 4thly, *That*

the King of France restore the Duchy of Burgundy, with all its Dependencies, as also the City of Terovenne, the Town of Hedin, and all the Earldom of Artois. 5thly, That the Duke of Bourbon, and all his Adherents, be restor'd to their entire Possessions, and the Duke be stil'd, King of Provence. 6thly, That Satisfaction be given to the King of England. 7thly, Again, Restitution of all that follow'd the Duke of Bourbon be restor'd. 8thly, That the Prince of Orange, D. Hugo de Moncada, the Lords of Bonse & Autroy be set at Liberty, and the Prince of Orange restor'd to what was taken from him in the War in Britain. 9thly, That several other Persons therein nam'd be restor'd. 10th, That after the Peace there be a Free Trade between the Subjects of both Crowns. 11th, That before the King be set at Liberty, he cause this Agreement to be ratify'd in all the Parliaments. 12th, That the King, when set at Liberty, shall ratifie this Accord, and cause the Dauphin his Son to do it when he comes to the Age of Fourteen.

4. The Emperor had Summon'd the Cortes or Parliament to Meet, before he receiv'd the News of the King of France his Imprisonment; at them there was a great Concourse not only of Nobility and Clergy, but of Foreign Ministers from several Courts. Many good Laws were there Enacted, particularly against Vagabonds, Blasphemers and Gypsies. The States address'd the Emperor, that he would be pleas'd to Marry the Princess Elizabeth of Portugal, tho' the English Embassadors press'd for him to take to Wife their Princess Mary, afterward Wife to his Son Philip the II. A Supply was given the Emperor of 200 Millions of *Maravedies*, which is 104166 l. 13 s. 4 d. At this same time came to Court Monsieur de Brion, before-mention'd sent by the King of France, and some overtures of Peace were made, but nothing was solidly Debated. At length D. Hugo de Moncada, who had been set at Liberty by the King of France his Order, brought Letters from him and the Lady Regent, containing Proposals to this Effect. 1st, That the Emperor's Sister Eleanor, Queen Dowager of Portugal, promis'd to the Duke of Bourbon, be Marry'd to the King of France, and Mary Daughter to the said Queen, to the Dauphin. 2dly, That the Emperor give the Duchy of Burgundy in Dowry with his Sister. 3dly, That the King of France would renounce all Claim to the Duchy of Milan, as also

Conditions
offer'd by
the King.

to the State of *Genoa*, and to the Kingdom of *Naples*, and to all Debts due from the same. 4thly, That he renounced all Sovereignty over *Flanders* and *Artois*, and would oblige the States of *France* to consent to and Confirm it. 5thly, That he would deliver up *Heldin* & *Tournay*, in the Condition they were in, and take an Oath never to lay any Claim to them. 6thly, That for the Lands along the River *Some*, which the Emperor pretend'd did belong to the Earldom of *Artois*, he would pay what should be agreed upon between the Emperor and his Mother. 7thly, That when the Emperor went to be Crown'd, or was engag'd in any War, he would Pay half the Charge of his Army, and Serve in its Person. 8thly, That if the Emperor would go into *Italy* by Sea, he would send his whole Fleet to *Barcelona* to attend him. 9thly, That he would Pay all such Summs as the Emperor was indebted in to the King of *England*, to the full satisfaction of that King. 10thly, That he would restore the Duke of *Bourbon*, and give him his Daughter in Marriage, with such a Portion as became a Princess, and if he went not himself in Person upon any Occasion with the Forces he had promis'd to assist the Emperor, the said Duke should have the Command of them, and all Offences past be forgotten. 11thly, That he would give sufficient Security for the Performance of these Articles, and the Parliament of *Paris* should ratifie them.

King
Francis
carry'd in-
to Spain.

5. The Emperor answer'd, that he would not loose his Right to *Burgundy* upon any Account whatsoever, but expected it intire as his Great Grand-Father Duke *Charles* had it; that for *Naples*, the King of *France* had no Title to it, and therefore nothing to Renounce, and as touching his Sister *Ellenor*, he would not agree to her Marriage without the Consent of the Duke of *Bourbon*. The King made other offers of Money, but the Emperor would hearken to nothing that was not the restoring of *Burgundy*. Thus the time was protracted till the King grown weary of his Confinement, press'd the Viceroy of *Naples*, that he would not carry him into that Kingdom as was intended; but rather into *Spain*, where he might Treat personally with the Emperor. The Viceroy approv'd of his Proposal, thinking it might be much to his Advantage, if he were instrumental in promoting the Peace of *Christendom*, by bringing

bringing those Two Monarchs to Confer together. Having therefore order'd all things for his Voyage, without acquainting any Body with his Design, but giving out that he would carry the King to *Naples*, he Embark'd with him on the Coast of *Genoa*, with 17 Gallies well Mann'd with *Spaniards*, and contrary to the expectation of all Men steer'd his Course for *Spain*, where he touch'd at *Palamos*, *Colivre*, and *Barcelona*, and at last Landed at *Valencia*. Thence they travell'd by Land to *Requena*, whether, *D. Francis Ruiz* Bishop of *Avila* was come, with many other Persons of Quality from the Emperor, to Conduct and Welcomè the King. From *Requena* he went to *Guadalaxara*, where the Duke del *Infanto* treated him Nobly, and thence to *Madrid*, where he was lodg'd in the Castle, and continu'd there till set at Liberty. *Ferdinand d'Alarcon* was left to Guard him, and he was Treated as became so great a Prince, for he was suffer'd to take the Air abroad, and to Hunt as often as he pleas'd. When the King came into *Spain*, the Emperor held the Cortes or Parliament at *Toledo*, which were mention'd before, and his Court was full, not only of his own Nobility, but with the Embassadors of several Princes, *Charles de Lannoy*, Viceroy of *Naples*, having left the King at *Madrid*, repair'd to *Toledo*, and was honourably receiv'd. Then the Emperor sent to Compliment the King, and to assure him of his good intentions towards him; but the Emperor being resolv'd to have the Dukedom of *Burgundy* restor'd to him, and the King being very positive to the contrary, the Debate held longer than the King could have wish'd.

The better to carry on the Treaty, a Truce was agreed upon betwixt the 2 Crowns, for 8 Months, to commence in *June*, and the Emperor granted to the Lady *Margaret de Alenson*, Sister to King *Francis*, to come into *Spain*, to Visit him, and manage his Affairs. After the Cortes had made several Good Laws, and granted the Emperor the Subsidy before mention'd, they broke up, and his Imperial Majesty went away to *Segovia*, where he had a Noble Reception, where having spent a few days, he remov'd to *Bayraco*, to take the Diversion of Hunting. At the same time the King of *France* fell sick, as was thought, for Grief of his Confinement, and at a place call'd *S. Augustin*, 6 Leagues from *Madrid*, the Em-

peror receiv'd an Exprefs from *Ferdinand d' Alarcon*, giving him an Account that the King's Life was in danger. Upon this Advice the Emperor resolv'd to visit and comfort him, and accordingly fet forward immediately, came to *Madrid* that Night, being the 28th of *Septemb.* and went in his Riding-Habit to see the King, who seem'd to be much better when they acquainted him with the Emperor's coming. The Emperor took off his Hat as soon as he came into the Room, and going to the Bed, embrac'd the King, who rais'd himself up to receive him, saying, *Sir, Here is your Slave.* No, said the Emperor, *My good Brother and Friend at full Liberty.* The King reply'd, *No, I am your Slave.* And the Emperor rejoind again, *You are my Friend, at full Liberty, and my good Brother.* After this they discours'd some time, the Emperor advising him to be of good comfort, to take care of his Health, and be assur'd all things would go well. After which he withdrew to another Apartment in the Castle, and the King found himself much better. Next day the Emperor gave him another Visit. The same Day *Madam d' Alenfon* came to *Madrid*, whom the Emperor went out to meet and conducted her to her Brother, where he left them together, after many kind Expressions, and went away to *Toledo.* There he receiv'd the Pope's Legate *Salviati*, and renew'd the Treaty with him and the King of *France's* Sister, but they could not come to any Agreement. The great Master of the Knight of *S. John of Ferusalem*, *Philip de Lisle Adam* who had been expelled *Rhods* by the *Turks*, came to *Toledo* with several of his Knights, and was well receiv'd by the Emperor, who bestow'd the Island of *Malta* on the Order, where it has continu'd ever since. It was propos'd by the Pope's Nuncio, that the Emperor should by Force of Arms, put his Holiness in possession of the City of *Rezzo*, and Town of *Ruberia*, withheld from him by the Duke of *Ferrara.* To which the Emperor answer'd, *That might be better done in a peaceable manner*, which Answer was not acceptable to the Pope's Nuncio.

7. *Madam d' Alenfon* finding no Success in her Negotiation, resolv'd to return home, but visiting her Brother, she concerted with him, that he should make his Escape, disguis'd like a Black, that carry'd Wood into his Chamber for the Fire, leaving the said Black in his Bed.

K. Francis
attempts
to Escape.

Bed. This Design was discover'd to the Emperor, by a *Frenchman* of the King's Bed-Chamber, who had receiv'd a Cuff from *Monsieur de la Rochpot*, and knew not how to Revenge himself. Care was taken to Disappoint the King, and no more said of it. This Design failing, the Treaty was again set on foot, the King at last consenteth to restore *Burgundy*, but demanded the E. Sister *Ellinor* in Marriage, and with her the Counties of *Ma-son* and *Oseri*, which was consented to, the Emperor giving the Duke of *Bourbon* the Investiture of *Milan*, in satisfaction for the Loss of his Sister, which had been promis'd to him. Ever since the Viceroy brought the King of *France* into *Spain*, the Duke of *Bourbon* had conceiv'd a mortal hatred against him, as if he had design'd to rob him of his Share of the Honour gain'd in that Action. The Enmity continu'd some time, and they endeavour'd to do one another all the Harm they could, but at last the Emperor reconcil'd them, tho' in reality it was only superficially. The *Pope* and *Venetians* were highly displeas'd at the carrying the King into *Spain*, believing the Emperor design'd to make him a perpetual Prisoner, and aspir'd to the Universal Monarchy. All the other Princes of *Italy*, and the King of *England*, were affected with the same Jealousie, and therefore easily agreed to oppose the Emperor, and oblige him to set the King at Liberty; nor was his Mother wanting to solicit them on his Behalf, that with their United Power they might compel him, through Fear, to do what he refus'd to grant by fair means.

The Duke of *Milan* forgetting all the Obligations he ow'd the Emperor, because a Sum of Money was demanded of him to defray the Charge of the War, which had been made to establish him, was easily drawn into this League against his Benefactor. The Confederates the better to carry on their Designs, propos'd to the Marquis of *Pescara*, that they would make him King of *Naples*, and General of the League, if he would join with them, and so order Affairs, as they might cut off the *Imperial* Army. He kept them in Hand, as if inclin'd to admit of the Proposals, till he had acquainted the Emperor with the whole Affair, who being unwilling to break first, order'd him to be upon his Guard, to go on in that Manner of Dissimulation, the better to discover the Designs of his Enemies; but not

*A great
Conspiracy
against the
Emperor
frustrated.*

to innovate any Thing, till the Confederates had given open Provocation. They fearing, least the Emperor and King of *France* should agree before they had executed what they had in Hand, made haste to raise Men and prepare for War, and being now in a readiness acquainted the Marquis, who still kept them in Suspence. He seeing the Day was now appointed for the Conspiracy to break out, there being no longer Time to Dally, communicated the whole Affair with *Antony de Leyva*, who is said to have known it by another way, and to have acquainted the Emperor with it before the Marquis. They Two, and the other *Imperial* Commanders having taken their Measures they were to go upon, the Marquis writ to *Ferom Moron* the Duke of *Milan*'s Secretary, who was the Contriver of all this Plot, to come to him speedily to *Novara* to put what they had Concerted in Execution. *Moron* suspecting nothing came, as he us'd to do, and was presently Arrested, a Confession of the whole Contrivance extorted from him, and he deliver'd to *Antony de Leyva*, who was ordered to carry him to *Pavia*, and secure that City. Several Parties were sent at the same Time to possess themselves of other Places in the Dukedom, and the Marquis with the rest of the Army possess'd himself of *Milan*, besieging the Duke in the Castle, which he refus'd to surrender, pretending to justify himself. The Confederates were much surpriz'd when they understood what had happen'd, and every one of them endeavour'd to clear himself of the Imputation of that Conspiracy.

8. The Marquis of *Pescara* presently sent Advice to the Emperor of what he had done, desiring him to order Duke *Sforcia* to deliver the Castles of *Milan* and *Cremona*, and to give him leave to take *Parma* and *Plasencia* from the Pope, as being concern'd in the Conspiracy. The Emperor, tho' satisfy'd with what was done, would not proceed further against the Duke, till legally Convicted, and was unwilling to break with the Pope; but rather at his Request granted the Investiture of *Milan* to the Duke of *Bourbon*, (as was hinted before) in Case Duke *Sforcia* dy'd. In *November*, this Year was concluded the Match between the Emperor, and the Princess *Elizabeth* Daughter to *Emanuel* King of *Portugal*. This same Year dy'd the Marquis of *Pescara*

carra at Milan, and was buried at Naples. D. Alonso de Avalos his Nephew, and Marquis del Gasto succeeded him in the Title; and in the Command of the Army in Conjunction with Antony de Leyva, till the Emperor appointed the Duke of Bourbon Captain General. The Body of King Philip the First, which his Wife Queen Joanna had kept 20 Years with her at Tordesillas, was now Bury'd at Granada. In Germany, Thomas Munzer, once a Priest, and follower of Luther, falling off from him set up a New Opinion of his own, the Professors whereof were since call'd Anabaptists. This Man pretending to Revelations, drew after him 300000 of the Peasantry, promising to exempt them from paying Taxes to their Sovereigns, or Rent to their Landlords. This Multitude in several Bodies plunder'd the Country and made great Havock, but at last they were in several Battles routed and cut to Pieces, by Truczes General of the League of Suabia, and the Duke of Guize in such sort, that few of that vast Number escap'd. In October, the Marquis de Mondejor Captain General of the Kingdom of Granada, passing over to Africk with a Fleet to gain the Fortrefs of Penon de Velez, was Repuls'd by the Moores, many of his Men kill'd, and no fewer taken.

Anabap-
tists.

9. During the Time of the Rebellion, before spoken of in the Kingdom of Valencia; the Rebels in spight to the Gentry, because the Moores paid double the Rent of Lands that Christians did, forced all those Infidels to be baptized. After all was pacify'd, the Moores return'd to their Old Sect, which giving great Scandal, it was Decreed in a great Consultation of Learned Men, that since they made no Opposition when Baptized, they ought to be compell'd to live as Christians, and several Divines were appointed Commissioners to see it perform'd. The Apostate Infidels to the number of 15 or 16000, rather than comply, fled to the Mountain call'd Bernia, and there made themselves strong, continuing there from April till August, when perceiving that Forces were gathering against them, they came down and submitted upon Assurance of Pardon. The Emperor not satisfy'd with this gave strict Orders, that all the Moores in that Kingdom should be Baptiz'd, and at that Time there were reckon'd to be in it but 22000 Christians, and 26000 Moorish Families. The Con-

Rebellion
and Con-
version of
Moores.

sion began in the City *Valencia*, where the *Infidels* being but few in number, there was no difficulty in baptizing them. But at *Almonacir*, they shut the Gates and stood upon their Guard, so that the Place was formally Besieg'd, from the 20th of *October* till the 14th of *February*, when the Place was entred by Force; the Ring-leaders executed, the rest Baptiz'd, and the Walls thrown down. The Lord of the Town of *Cortea* going thither with 17 Gentlemen to see his *Infidels* Converted, was by them Murder'd with all his Company. On the 23d of *November*, the *Moores* of the Vales of *Uxo* and *Almonacir*, and of the Country of *Segorbe*, and along the River *Monuedre* betook themselves to the Mountain *Ospadan* with their Wives and Children, resolving to Die rather than turn Christians. *Queen Germana*, who then Govern'd that Kingdom, sent the Duke of *Segorbe* 3000 Men to reduce the *Infidels*, but this small Party could neither beat them out of that Place of Strength, nor Guard all the Avenues to it, so that they were supply'd with Provisions by the other *Moores*, and coming down in Parties did much harry Plundering and Burning the Country. To endeavour to prevent these Mischiefs, the Train'd Bands of *Valencia* took the Field, but neither then was any thing done, till the Emperor order'd 4000 *Germans* that were then at *Perpignan* to march with all speed against the *Infidels*. These joining 6000 *Spaniards* who were there before, and dividing themselves into Twelve Battalions, began to climb the Mountain, the *Moores* resolutely defending it, so that they kill'd 62 Christians, of whom 33 were *Germans*, yet by Three in the Afternoon the Top of the Mountain was gain'd with great slaughter of the *Infidels*. The *Spaniards* kill'd none but Old Men and Women, taking the others for their Slaves, but the *Germans* in revenge for their Companions that been kill'd spar'd none, so that above 5000 were put to the Sword. Thus ended the Conversion of the *Moores* in the Kingdom of *Valencia*.

Discoveries in America.

10. In the Fourth Chapter of this Book, we gave an Account of the Discovery and Conquest of the Kingdom of *Mexico*, in the Year 1520, and this Year 1525 furnishes a Subject no less glorious in the Kingdom of *Peru*; the Relation whereof must be deliver'd with as much Brevity as may be, the Actions of this mighty Emperor

Emperor's Life being indeed too great for so small a Volume. *Christopher Columbus* in his Second Voyage having discover'd the Continent, in that part call'd the Province of *Peria*, left no Colony there, but brought back the News, to encourage the *Spaniards* to extend their Conquests. The first Planters there were *James de Neiveffa*, and *Alonso de Hojeda*, who built the Town call'd *Nuestra Senora la Antigua del Darien*, or in short, *Darien*. For several years nothing known of the South Sea, till *Blasco Naves de Balboa*, quarrelling with some *Spaniards* about dividing of Gold, given them by a *Cacique*, whose Name was *Panquiaco*, he promis'd to shew 'em where there was Gold enough to satisfy their Avarice, who shew'd him the Way over the Mountains, from the Tops of which he discover'd the *South Sea*, and went down to it in the Year 1513. He presently sent the *Catholick King* an Account of what he had Discover'd, and soon after *Perez Arias de Avila* went over thither with 1500 Men in 42 Ships. He Sail'd from *Spain* in the Year 1514, and arriving at *Darien* in time, built the Towns of *Nombre de Dios* and *Panama*, the one on the North, the other on the South Sea. The South Sea being once discover'd, all endeavours were us'd to find a Passage to it out of the North Sea, that there might be a Direct Course to the *Molucco Islands*, whence the *Portuguese* bring Spice, sailing about thither Eastward.

Ferdinand Magellanes, by the *English* commonly call'd *Magellan*, a *Portuguese*, undertook to find out this Passage, and being furnish'd with 5 Ships, sail'd from *S. Lucar de Barrameda*, on the 20th of September 1519, and after suffering much by Strefs of Weather, and Mutineers, and being forsaken by one of his Ships which return'd home, he fell into the Streight of his Name, which in some places is not above a League and a half over, tho' above an Hundred in length. Being out of the Streight he steer'd North-West, and after 40 days sail discover'd abundance of small Islands, and landed on the Island of *Zebu* or *Sabo*, where *Magellan* Preach'd the Holy Faith, and converted the King, Queen and all the Islanders, who perswaded the People of a neighbouring Island to do the like. This encourag'd *Magellan* to hope he might convert the rest of them, but landing in order to it, on the Island *Mautan*, he was there kill'd by the *Indians* on the 27th of April 1521. After this the new-converted King repenting, invited 30 *Spaniards* to Dinner, and there murder'd them. The rest, who were not above 150, repair'd to 2 of their Ships, and leaving the other two sail'd away, touch'd at *Borneo*, and from thence turn'd back to *Tidore*, whither they came in November 1521, and loading with Spice the Ship, call'd *Victoria*, held on her Course, and turning the *Cape of Good Hope*,

Hope, arriv'd safe at *S. Lucar de Barrameda*, on the 6th of September 1522, being the first that ever Sail'd round the World; the Commander's Name was *John Sebastian Cano*. Thus much of the Discoveries of *Magellan*; now to return to the Continent of *America*.

II. After the Town of *Panama* was Built, many Discoveries in South America. Spaniards sail'd thence Northward to the Provinces of *Nicaragua* and *Guatimala*, but none Southward till in the Year 1525; Three Rich Inhabitants of *Panama*, which were *Francis Picarro*, *James de Almagro*, and *Ferdinand de Luque* resolv'd to Discover towards the South, hoping to find great Riches under the Line. They agreed that *Francis Picarro* should go upon the Discovery, and accordingly he set out the first time with 120 Men, and discover'd about 700 Leagues. Attempting to Land, the *Indians* oppos'd him, kill'd several of his Men, and wounded him in seven Places, so he return'd to *Panama* ill pleas'd having got nothing but Blows. Yet he concluded the Country was Rich, because the *Indians* he Fought with, had abundance of Gold about them, and were adorn'd with Pearls of Value. *James de Almagro* went out to see *Pizarro* before his return, and coming to *S. Johns River*, lost an Eye there in a Battle. Afterwards the Two Partners met at *Chichama* near *Panama*, gave one another an Account of their Misfortunes, and set out again with 200 Men upon their Discovery. They met with a People so Barbarous, that they would not allow them to Water, but wounded some of them. However they resolv'd to make War upon those Rich and Bold *Indians*, tho' most of the Men were against it, yet the Commanders prevail'd, *Pizarro* was left there, and *Almagro* sent to *Panama* for more Men and Warlike Stores. He soon return'd with 80 Men more and some Horse. This encourag'd *Pizarro's* Followers, and not liking the Place they were in to Plant, they went further to *Camarez*, where the *Indians* were so full of Gold, which was their chief Aim, that they resolv'd to settle there; but the *Indians* made such vigorous Opposition, that *Almagro* was forc'd to return to *Panama* for more Men, and in the mean while, *Pizarro* took up in an Island which he call'd *del Gallo*, or of the Cock. The Men misliking this undertaking, sent their Complaints to the Governor of *Panama*, who order'd that none should be forced to go with *Almagro*, so that he could not get a Man, and those with *Pizarro* should have Liberty to return if they pleas'd, which they all did to 13, who stuck by him with one Ship. With these he went almost in despair to the Island *Gorgona*, thence to the Coast near *Tangarara*, thence to *Montape*, thence to *Chira*; and lastly to the Vale of *Tumbes*, where he set About *Peter de Candia* who went up the Valley till he discover'd a flat

the Palace, belonging to the Kings or Ingas of *Cuzco*, the Capital of all those large Provinces. *Pizarro* inquir'd into the Nature and Customs of the Country, and leaving Two of his Companions there to learn the Language, return'd to *Panama* well satisfy'd, resolving to go over with all Speed into *Spain*, to beg of the Emperor the Conquest of those Countries, which he call'd *New Castile*, or by another Name *Peru*, because the River which Parts them from the other Provinces before discover'd is so call'd. *Pizarro* had spent 3 Years in these Discoveries, and spent so much Money, that he and his Companions could scarce defray his Voyage into *Spain*. At length they set him out with a 1000 Ducats, when he came into *Spain*, got a Grant to Discover and Govern those Provinces with the Title of *Adelantado*, that is Lieutenant, and Captain General of *Peru*, and immediately several Persons of Note flock'd to him, through Covetousness of the vast Wealth, he told them was to be had. He set out well pleas'd from *Sevil* with this Company, and with Three Brothers, *Ferdinand*, *John*, and *Gonzado Pizarros*, and *Martin de Alcantara* his half Brother by the Mothers Side.

§ 12. *Pizarro* returning to *Panama*, *Almagro* was offended that he had got all for himself, tho' *Almagro* had shar'd in the Danger and Expence, and whatsoever *Pizarro* could say to Excuse himself, they continu'd Enemies as long as they liv'd; and not long so, but after their Deaths, their Parties continu'd by the Names of *Pizarrists* and *Almagrists*. Some superficial Reconciliation being made for the present, Two Ships were fitted out with 150 Men, with which *Pizarro* Sail'd for *Tumbez*, where the *Indians* had kill'd the 2 Men left there. The Weather would not permit *Pizarro* to land at *Tumbez*, and therefore he sail'd on towards the River *Penis*, and came to *Coaque*, a Town of Note, where many of his Men fell sick of the Small and Great Pox, of whom some dy'd, and others remain'd very deform'd, but they took all patiently, because of the great Wealth they found. Here some Recruits came to *Pizarro*, from *Nicoragua*, with whose assistance he made himself Master of the Island *Puna*, but 12 Leagues distant from *Tumbez*. By Prisoners taken here he understood that some *Monant* had the Sovereignty of all that Coast for 1200 Leagues, as far as *Chili*, and had his Residence at the City *Cuzco*; many other Particulars were told him, but what pleas'd him most was, that he understood the Two Brothers *Guatear* and *Atabaliba* were at War for the Crown, which might prove a great advantage to him. He sent some of the Prisoners to tell *Atabaliba* he would assist him against his Brother, with them went 3 *Spaniards*, who were presently sacrific'd to the Idols. This made him Sail over to *Tumbez*, where having vanquisht *Atabaliba's* Governour, he

he built the Town of *S. Michael*, the first the Christians had in those parts, seated on the Banks of the River *Chirra*, in the Province of *Tangarare*. Then he advanc'd into the Country to upon *Atabaliba*, who was in the Vale of *Caxamalca*. By the Messengers came to him from *Guaxcar*, to desire his Friends and others from *Atabaliba*, to forbid him going farther upon of Death. To the former he gave a pleasing Answer, but told latter he could not avoid Proceeding, being sent by the 2 great Princes of the World, the Pope and the Emperor, to treat about important affairs, many more Messages pass'd to the same effect. *Pizarro* advanc'd to *Caxamalca*, where he did not then find *Atabaliba*, but the next day he came attended with a multitude of *Indians*, thinking to sacrifice all the *Spaniards*. They were drawn up ready to receive him, & after some words had pass'd between the *Christians* fir'd & fell on, which so surpriz'd the *Indians*, they knew not which way to turn themselves. *Pizarro* broke thro' them, & pull'd down their King, who was carry'd on mens shoulders, his men presently fled, & the *Spaniards* pursu'd 'em till night killing abundance, without the loss of a Man. This hapned in the year 1533. Next day the *Spaniards* plunder'd the *Tambo* of *Caxamalca*, that is, the King's Pallace, and the Baths where *Atabaliba* had been taking his Pleasure, and found Infinite Wealth. *Atabaliba* was put in Chains, & profer'd for his Ransom to give as much Gold and Silver as would fill a large Room up as high as he could reach with his hand standing a Tiptoe. The Condition was accepted, but the abundance came in daily, all being too little to fill that vast Room, the *Spaniards* divided it among 'em, and each Horseman's share came to 8900 *Pesos* of Gold, each being 16 *Royals* or 8 *Shillings* & 260 *Marks* in Gold, each *Mark* is 8 *Ounces*. Every Foot Soldier had half as much as a Horseman. The Commanders had some 30 others 40000 *Pesos* a man. *Pizarro* had over and above his share, the Seat *Atabaliba* fate upon on the mens shoulders, which was beaten Gold, and weigh'd 25000 *Ducats*. *Almagro* hearing of *Pizarro's* Success went to *Caxamalca*, where *Pizarro* honestly gave him his share, and they were Friends for some time, and both 'em sent away *Ferdinand Pizarro* with a 5th of the Booty for the King, and to carry him the News of what had been done. *Atabaliba* being afterwards accus'd by an *Indian*, who serv'd as Interpreter, for designing to make his escape, and destroy the *Spaniards*, was formally try'd, condemn'd and executed, but with how much Justice, may be gather'd from the miserable ends, all that had hand in his death came to. The *Indian* Interpreter was Hang'd. *Pizarro*, *Almagro* and the rest, were some of 'em Executed, and others Stabb'd. After killing the King, *Pizarro* set out towards *Cuzco*, by the way defeated a great number of *Indians*, receiv'd *Mangue Inca*, Brother to *Atabaliba*, & declar'd him K. but Tributary to Spain.

At *Cuzco* no Opposition was made, but a much greater quantity of Gold & Silver found, than had been before, for there were Temples cover'd with great Plates of Gold, Tombs cover'd with Silver & full of Treasure. *Sebastian de Benalcazar* with 200 Foot & 40 Horse, overthrew another Body of *Indians* & took the City *Cuzco*. Several other Battles were fought, in which the *Indians* were always worsted, & *Pizarro* grew daily Stronger, great Numbers resorting to him out of *Spain*, & and from other parts of the *West-Indies* upon the Fame of the vast Riches of *Peru*. This put *Pizarro* & his Companions in a Condition to Build Towns, *James de Mora* founded that of *Truxillo* & *Pizarro* that call'd *las Reyes* or the Kings on the Banks of the River *Lima*, which is now the Metropolis of those Countries.

A longer Volume than this we have in hand, would not suffice to contain the particulars of all actions in this Conquest, for after subduing the *Indians*, there were as bloody Wars among the *Spaniards*, as if they had been the most mortal enemies. The ground of these Civil Wars was the King's constituting *J. de Almagro* Marshal and Governor of 100 Leagues along the Coast, south of what *Pizarro* had discover'd. As soon as this Commission came, *Pizarro* & *Almagro* began to vary, but were soon reconcil'd, and they again renew'd their Partnership. This done, *Almagro* went away to discover the Coast of *Chili*, towards the Streight of *Magellan*. In the mean while *Ferdinand Pizarro* in *Spain*, obtain'd of the Emperor several Grants for his Brother, and had him created Marquis of *Atabillas*. According to the distribution of the Country made by his Majesty, *Cuzco* came to fall within *Almagro's* Lot, which upon that account, he demanded, and *Pizarro* refus'd to part with; thus the old Animosities were renew'd, and to such a pitch, that they both gather'd Forces, and made open War. This began 1536, and lasted till they destroy'd one another, for 1000 *Spaniards*, and above 1500000 *Indians* are said to have perisht in these Broils. At first *Almagro* posselt himself of *Cuzco*, where he took *Ferdinand* & *Gonzalo Pizarro*, whom he had tho'ts to put to Death, but was prevail'd with to forbear. In 1538 they fought another Battle, in which *Almagro* was taken, & *Pizarro*, to put an end to this contention, formally try'd, condemn'd & executed him, anno 1540. He left the K. his Heir, and was of such obscure Parentage, that no body could ever tell who his Father was, nor could he write or read. *Ferdinand Pizarro* was sent for into *Spain* for having put him to Death, and kept a long time Prisoner at *Medina del Campo*, but at last releas'd. In 1541 *J. de Almagro*, who to him that was executed, *J. de Rada*, and some of their friends, renew'd his Death, cutting the Marquis *Pizarro* in pieces in the City of *las Reyes*. This Francis *Pizarro* was Bastard Son to Capt. *Gonzalo*

Gonzalo Pizarro, his Mother laid him at the Church Door, he liv'd miserably in his Childhood, and was not taught to Read nor ever could do it. His Father taken pity on him, set him to keep Hogs at *Truxillo* where he was Born, some of them happening to be lost he durst not go home, but ran away to *Sevil*, and thence over to the *West-Indies*, where he had the Rise we have mention'd; and was the Richest private Man in the World.

As soon as the Conspirators had murder'd *Pizarro*, they declar'd the Young Man *James de Almagro* Governor, till the King should order otherwise. In short, he & his play'd the Tyrant, designing to make him K. and absolute Lord of it. The Emperor sent the Licentiate *Christopher Vaca de Castro* his Governor to reduce that Kingdom, who was forc'd to raise Forces, because the Young *Almagro* would not submit himself. They came to a Battle near *Chupas* on the 15th of *Septemb.* 1542 *Almagro* was beaten, fled to *Cuzco*, his own Officers apprehended him, & *Vaca de Castro* executed him & many of his followers. *Vaca de Castro* continu'd peaceably in the Government of *Peru* a Year and half, till *Blasco Nunnez Vela* a Gentleman of Quality of the Town of *Orizaba*, was sent thither as Viceroy. Of him & the Rebellion in *Peru*, we shall speak hereafter.

C H A P. XIV.

The Articles of Peace Concluded at Madrid, betwixt France & Spain, the King of France Marries the Emperor's Sister, & is set at Liberty, the Emperor Marries the Princess of Portugal, proceeding concerning the Monjebes.

1. **A**T the beginning of the Year 1526, the Commendary *Herrera* return'd from *Rome*, bringing Letters from Pope Clement the 7th, written with his own Hand, in which he labou'd to clear himself of the Imputation of having any hand in the Conspiracy against his Imperial Majesty, & rejecting all the Fault on the *Marquis of Pescara* & *Ferome Moron*. He also intreated the Emperor to Pardon Duke *Sforcia* & restore him to his Dominions. The Emperor knowing the Duke would ascribe the Benefit of his Liberty to the Intercession of the Pope & *Venetians*, & not to his Mercy, made little account of their fair Words. The King of *Fr.* was now brought to consent to the Restitution of *Burgundy* for purchasing of his Liberty; & only insisted, that it could not be perform'd, till some time after he was at Freedom, because the People would never deliver it whilst he continu'd a Prisoner for Security of Performance, he was to deliver to the Emperor Two Eldest Sons as Hostages. The Emperor thought good to take the Advice of his Council upon so Important an Affair, but finding their Opinions vary'd and could not be reconcil'd,

resolv'd to Conclude & Release the K. upon such Terms as
 should be had. Accordingly the Treaty was Concluded & Sign'd
 on the 14th of *January* 1526 at *Madrid*, by which perpetual
 Peace & Amity was establish'd betwixt the Emperor *Charles* the
 Fifth, & *Francis* the Ist K. of *France*, which far from being ob-
 serv'd, was the cause of the Mischiefs, & Slaughter we shall find
 in the Sequel of this History. Now for as much as the Ensuing
 War was ground on this Treaty, I will set down the Substance
 of all the Articles, that the Reader may thereby Judge on which
 Side the greatest Right was.

*Articles of Peace between France and Spain, Concluded at Madrid on
 the 14th of January 1526.*

In the Name of God, &c.

1. It is Agreed, That there be a sincere and perpetual Peace
 and Amity between the aforesaid mighty Monarchs the Emperor,
 and King of France, their Heirs and Successors, Subjects and Allies,
 who hereafter particularly nam'd, &c.

2. That there be free Trade and Commerce between the Subjects of
 both Crowns, and that neither side be oblig'd to Pay any other Cu-
 stoms or Impositions, than such as were in use before the War, and
 that the Sea be clear'd of Pirates, and all Commissions to Privateers
 be made void.

3. That the King of France within six Weeks after he is set at Li-
 berty, do restore to the Emperor the Dukedom of Burgundy, and all
 other the Lands and Possessions the Lord Charles Duke of Burgundy
 was possess'd of at the Time of his Death; and to which the Lady
 Mary Grand-mother to the Emperor was Heiress, but was outed by
 Louis the Eleventh King of France, and that the said Dukedom of
 Burgundy with all its Dependencies be freely restor'd to the said Em-
 peror for Him, and his Heirs, Males or Females to enjoy for ever,
 with any Dependance on, or Acknowledgment to the Crown of France;
 which Restitution is to be made in the most Authentick Form, so that
 neither the Present King of France, nor any of his Successors may ever
 lay any Claim to the said Lands, and the Subjects be for the Future
 resolv'd and Discharg'd of their Allegiance to that Crown.

4. That, forasmuch as the King of France alledges the Agree-
 ment aforesaid cannot be perform'd till he is at Liberty, therefore the
 said King shall be set at Liberty on the 10th of March next ensuing, but
 at the same moment of Time, he shall deliver as Hostages for his
 performance his Two Eldest Sons, that is, the Dauphine and
 Duke of Orleans, or else only the Dauphine, and 12 Noblemen of
 France nam'd by the Emperor. It being left to the Lady Regents choice
 to deliver either the Two Sons, or one and the 12 Noblemen, who shall
 remain as Hostages, till the King has caus'd this Treaty to be rais'd
 in the States General of France, by the several Parliaments, and by
 the

the Chamber of Accounts at Paris. This Ratification to be within Four Months after the King is set at Liberty, and the Emperor to see that when perform'd he will deliver up the Hostages, but at the same Time the Duke of Angoulesme Third Son to the King of France be put into his Imperial Majesties Hands. And in Case the Dukedoms of Burgundy be not restor'd within six Weeks, nor the Ratifications Exchang'd as aforesaid, within Four Months, in either of these Cases, the King presently shall return where the Emperor shall be at that Time, and there deliver himself up a Prisoner of War, as he is at present, which done, the Emperor shall Discharge the Hostages aforesaid.

5. To prevent all Occasion of War and Discord between the Crowns for the Future, his most Christian Majesty for himself and his Heirs renounces, and resigns up to the Emperor, all Pretensions of Right or Claim, he or they can have to any of the Countries or Dominions now in the Possession of his Imperial Majesty, and namely the Kingdom of Naples, the States of Milan and Genoa, and Earldom of Aste. His most Christian Majesty in like manner for himself and his Heirs and Successors makes over to the Emperor and his Heirs for ever the Cities of Arras, Tournay, and Tournasses, and the Towns of Metain, and S. Maure, with his Right to the Chastelancies of Lisle, Doway and Orchies, and to the Town and Castle of Hedin. And the Emperor, his Heirs and Successors shall for ever be exempt and free from any Homage or Fealty to the Crown of, on Account of the Earldom of Flanders and Artois, or of any other Lands, the said Emperor is now in Possession of by Virtue of this Treaty. And his Imperial Majesty for himself and his Successors renounces all Pretensions, or Rights which they may claim to any other the Dominions of France, and namely the Chastelancies of Peronne, Mondidiet, Roye, the Earldoms of Boulogn, Guines and Ponchieu, and the Towns, and Cities on the Banks of the River Somme.

6. That there be a League offensive and defensive between the two Crowns.

7. That for further Security of the Peace his most Christian Majesty Marry Ellenor the Emperors Eldest Sister, and Widdow to the King of Portugal.

8. That the Portion of the said Queen Ellenor be 20000 Crowns.

9. That the Emperor over and above gives the said Queen, and the Heirs of her Body, for ever the Earldoms of Malconoy and Auverrois, and the Lordship of Valkobrenne with their Dependencies.

10. The said Queen renounces all Claims or Pretensions by Right of Inheritance from her Grand-father Maximilian the Emperor, her Mother Philip and her Mother Joanna King and Queen of Castile, saving only the said Queens Collateral Right of Succession, in Case the Emperor and Arch-Duke Ferdinand her Brothers should Die without Issue.

XI. The said Queen shall have of her Brother Jewels, to the value of 50000 Ducats, to remain to her and her Heirs General.

XII. If the said Queen have Children by the most Christian King, the Eldest Son shall have the Dukedom of *Alencon*, with other Lands adjoining, to the value of 60000 Livers *per Ann.* and shall inherit from his Mother the Earldoms and Lordships of *Masconoy*, *Auxerroys*, and *Valsobrenne*; and other younger Sons shall have Dukedoms and Earldoms equal to those by the first Queen, and the Daughters Portions as is usual for Daughters of *France*.

XIII. If the King die before the Queen, she shall remain possesst of a Jointer of 60000 Francs *per Ann.*

XIV. And the said Queen surviving the King shall have liberty to depart out of *France*, whosoever she shall think fit, carrying with her her Jewels and Moveables, and shall enjoy her Jointer as above.

XV. For a further tie, *Francis* Dauphin of *France*, shall marry the Princess *Mary* of *Portugal*, Daughter to the above mention'd Queen *Ellenor* and King *Emanuel*.

XVI. Attwelve Years of Age the said Princess shall be carry'd into *France*, and be maintain'd till that time, at the cost of King *Francis*, as becomes the Wife of the *Dauphin*.

XVII. The King of *France* shall use all his endeavours to oblige *Henry d'Albret* to quit the Title of King of *Navarre*, and to renounce all his Right to that Crown, which if he shall refuse to do, then the said King shall neither directly nor indirectly give him any Assistance against the Emperor. And the said King shall further use all his Endeavours, that after the Death of *Charles* Duke of *Guelders*, the said Dukedom of *Guelders*, and County of *Zutphen* be deliver'd into the Emperor's possession, but in case, having us'd his Endeavours to this purpose, he shall not prevail, then he obliges himself not to give the said Duke any Succours whatsoever, but rather to send 4000 Foot and 300 Men at Arms, maintain'd at his own Cost, to the Assistance of the Emperor.

Emperor against him. And in case the said Duke Charles should leave any Issue Lawfully Begotten, the Emperor obliges himself to make Provision for them.

XVIII. The said King shall not any ways favour or support *Ulrich* Duke of *Wirtemberg*, nor *Robert de la March*, or their Children; but on the contrary, if they should raise any War against the Emperor, the said King shall be oblig'd to assist him according to the Tenor of the League defensive, nor shall the King protect any Prince in *Italy*.

XIX. The King shall furnish a Fleet at his own Cost, to carry the Emperor out of *Spain* into *Italy* to be Crown'd, but the Emperor shall put aboard his own Soldiers and pay them. Moreover he shall pay towards the Emperor's Expence 200000 Crowns besides six Months Pay for 6000 Foot, when the Hostages above spoke of are restor'd.

XX. The Emperor having oblig'd himself in the last War to pay to the King of *England* 122200 Crowns Yearly, in lieu of the Pension that King had from *France*, the King of *France* obliges himself to pay the said King all Arrears due to him on that account, and absolutely to clear his Imperial Majesty of that Debt.

XXI. The principal design of this Treaty being to establish an universal Peace among Christians, and to carry on some great Enterprize against the *Turks* and *Hereticks*; His Holiness shall be intreated to appoint a Time and place for a general Assembly of the Ambassadors of all Christian Princes to meet and confer about the means of carrying on a War against the aforesaid Enemies of the Church. And in case the *Turk* before this can be concluded should invade Christendom, the Emperor and most Christian King, shall joyn their Forces either Land or Sea, and move joyntly in Person against the common Enemy.

XXII. Within six Weeks at furthest, after the King shall be set at liberty, he shall restore *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon*, and his Friends, Followers and Allies, to all their Possessions, Lands, Moveables, and Writings that have been taken from them, and a general

general amnesty shall be granted for all Offences past, and all process against any of them stop.

XXIII. That all Prisoners taken on both sides, be set at liberty without any Ransom.

XXIV. That both Monarchs be oblig'd to deliver up any Rebels, or Out-laws that shall fly to their Dominions, whensoever they shall be demanded: But as for those who have, during the late War, been in Rebellion in the States of *Milan*, *Genoa*, and *Asti*, they shall be pardon'd and restor'd to their Estates, unless convicted of some other heinous Crimes, besides that act of Rebellion, and then the Prince in whose Dominions they are, shall, upon proof of their Guilt, command them to depart his Territories within a Month, whereof if they fail, they shall be deliver'd up to their Sovereign.

XXV. That all Prelates, Clergy-men, Noblemen, Towns, or Bodies Corporate, in either the Dominions of *France*, or the Emperor shall by this Treaty, be restor'd to their Possessions, Priviledges, Immunities, and all other Rights they enjoy'd before the War.

XXVI. That the King of *France* shall confirm and ratifie all the Priviledges and Immunities the People of *Spain* can prove to make out to have been granted to them by his Predecessors; and Judges shall be appointed to decide all Controversies about Wrongs done before the War broke out.

XXVII. That whereas King *Francis* and his Predecessor, prohibited the vending any Cloaths of *Catalonia*, *Roussillon*, or other the Dominions of the Crown of *Aragon* in *France*, or so much as carrying them through his Territories, it be now allow'd the subjects of the said Crown of *Aragon*, to carry their Cloaths through *France* into any other Dominions, but not to sell any there, nor shall any other Customs or Duties be exacted from them, than what they pay'd twenty Years ago.

XXVIII. That the Lady *Margaret* Archduchess of *Austria*, *Dona*ger of *Savoy*, and Aunt to the Emperor, be restor'd to the Earldom of *Charalot*, and Lordships of *Noyers* and *Chinon*, taken from her during

during the War, which she shall enjoy during her Life, and after her they shall devolve to the Emperor, his Heirs and Successors. And for the profits of the said Lands receiv'd by his most Christian Majesty, he shall pay to the said Princess the sum of 250000 Livres.

XXIX. That whereas Queen *Germana, Dowager of Aragon*, affirms, that the Towns and Lands of *Mar-segni, Tursen, Gaverdey, and Gabaret, &c.* were adjudg'd to her by a decree of the Parliament of *Paris*, and the said Lands are with-held from her by *Henry d'Albret*, his most Christian Majesty; shall take care to see her put in possession of them.

XXX. That *Philibert* Prince of *Orange* be restor'd to his said Principality of *Orange*, and to the Lordships of *Dampierre, Tretes, Masafon, and la Pyreire* in *Dauphine*, and to the right he pretends to Lands in *Britany*, and elsewhere, as his Title shall be made out in due course of Law.

XXXI. That *Philip de Croy* Marquis of *Areschombe* restor'd to all Lands, Lordships, and Possessions, fallen to him by his Father, Mother and Uncle, and to all he was possess'd of before the War.

XXXII. That the Princess of *Chinay* be put in possession of all the Lands she can make out her just claims to.

XXXIII. That Count *Henry of Nassau*, Marquis of *Cenete*, have right done him as to part of his Wife's Portion, and the King be oblig'd to pay him what shall appear to be due.

XXXIV. That *Astolphus* of *Burgundy*, Admiral of *Flanders*, be allow'd to sue for his pretensions in *Cambresi*, as he did before the War.

XXXV. That the Lord de *la Chaulx* be reimburs'd the Money he was forc'd to pay for the Ransome of his Sons, who being Students in the University of *Paris*, ought not to have been detain'd.

XXXVI. That *William de Vergi*, Baron *Daintrach*, be allow'd to sue for the Lordship of *S. Disier* in *Pereboys*, to which he pretends a right.

XXXVII. That the Lords de *Fresnes, Gavres, Ad-rian de Croy, de Reulx, de Meleny, and de Spinay* be restor'd to the possessions they enjoy'd before the War.

XXXVIII. That

XXXVIII. That at the request of the King, the Marquis de Saluzzes his Mother and Sisters, and Frederick Beauje be restor'd to their Possessions; but any other that pretends a better Title to those Lands, shall have the liberty to try his Title at Law.

XXXIX. That the Bishop of Grace be restor'd to his Bishoprick, and all other Rights; and that all who are concern'd in the Murder of his Brother, be punish'd.

XL. That the Lord of Luz be restor'd to his Estate, and have right done him, as to his other Pretensions.

XLI. That in this Peace and Alliance shall be included, the Pope, the Kings of England, Hungary, Poland, Denmark, Portugal, and Scotland, Ferdinand Archduke of Austria, the Dutchess Dowager of Savoy, Electors and other Princes of the Empire, and Leagues and Cantons of Germany, and others that may be mention'd within six Months.

XLII. That the King of France shall ratify this Treaty in the first Town of France he comes to after being set at Liberty, and shall oblige the Dauphin to do the same when he comes to 14 Years of Age.

XLIII. That the Emperor and King of France, when he is set at Liberty, shall solemnly Swear to observe all the Articles of this Treaty.

XLIV. That this Peace be proclaim'd in the Dominions of both Their Majesties, on the 15th of February next ensuing.

To the due performance of which Treaty, the Most Christian King accordingly, and the Embassadors on both sides solemnly Swore. Concluded at Madrid, on Sunday the 14th of January 1526, Sign'd Francis, Charles de Lanoy, D. Hugo de Moncada, John Aleman, Francis Archbishop of Embrun, John Silva, Chabat.

2. The Solemnity of Swearing was perform'd, the Archbishop of Ambrun saying Mass, and the King and Embassadors taking an Oath upon the holy Evangelists, and by the holy Sacrament of the Altar. Besides, the King of France promis'd upon the Faith of a Prince, and of a Christian, to return into Spain and deliver himself up a Prisoner within six Months, in case he could not fulfil what had been

K. Francis
Marries the
Emperor's
Sister.

Converses
with the
Emperor.

agreed upon; but no part of it was afterwards ob-
serv'd. Five or six Days after, *Charles de Lorraine*
Viceroy of *Naples*, was privately Contracted to the
King by Commission from *Q. Ellenor*, and then to
Her, by Commission from the King. This done, the
Emperor went again to Visit the King, who came
out to receive him, and they were both Lodg'd in the
Castle, where they continu'd two Days in a very
familiar manner, with great outward tokens of
Friendship. The Peace being proclaim'd, *King*
Francis and *Queen Ellenor* met at *Illescas*, where
they were Marry'd, but did not Bed together, part-
ing two Hours after. The Emperor and King re-
main'd some Days after together, till at last these
two Monarchs set out from *Torrejon de Ar-*
lasco, and coming to a Cross where the Roads part,
one for *Illescas*, and the other for *Madrid*, to which
two places they were design'd, the Emperor took
King Francis aside, and askt him, Whether he was
fully resolv'd to perform all that had been agreed
between them? The King answer'd, He was re-
solv'd to fulfil the whole, that no-body would hin-
der him, and if he did not, the Emperor might
look upon him as *Lasche, & Meschant*; that is, a
false and base Person. These words are here par-
ticularly mention'd, because they gave occasion to
Challenges which afterwards pass'd between them.
Having thus discours'd a short time, they took off
their Hats, saying, *God keep you Brother*. The Em-
peror went away to *Toledo*, and the King to *Ma-*
drid, whence he continu'd his Journey to *Fuente-*
bia, and so into *France*.

The Empe-
ror Marries
Elizabeth
of Portugal

3. The time drawing near when the Emperor
was to Marry *Elizabeth* Princess of *Portugal*, he
was conducted to the Frontiers of that Kingdom
by the Princes her Brothers, and prime Nobility.
On the Borders she was met and receiv'd by the
Duke of Calabria, the Archbishop of *Toledo*, and
many Persons of Quality, sent by the Emperor to
that purpose, who conducted her to *Badajoz*, where
they remain'd seven Days, being Entertain'd all
that while by the City with extraordinary demon-
strations of Joy. Thence they took their Journey to

Seven

and arriv'd there on *Saturday* the 3d of *March* 1526, the Reception was such as became the Wealth and Dignity of that City, with all the Pomp and Magnificence that had been prepar'd for His Imperial Majesty. Eight Days after the arrival of the Emperor, came the Emperor, and was that same Night Marry'd by the Pope's Legate, and the Marriage consummated to the great Satisfaction of all the Kingdom. In the mean while, the King of *France* was Travelling towards the Frontiers, to be exchange'd for the Hostages agreed upon, and several Articles were by the way adjust'd, touching the Formality of making the Exchange, which are too tedious to be insert'd, but the curious Reader may see them in *Sandoval*, Vol. 1. Pag. 735, 36, and 37. K. Francis
set at Liberty.

Being come to the place call'd *Hirunyanzu*, on the Banks of the River *Tolosa*, which parts *France* and *Spain*; the Gentlemen who attended the King, made a Stand with him on the edge of the said River, so did the Lady *Lenysa* the King's Mother, with the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans* on the *French* side. In the middle of the River was a large Bark moor'd fast with several Anchors: Then the King, Viceroy of *Naples*, and the number of Gentlemen agreed upon, went into one Boat, and at the same time, the *Dauphin*, Duke of *Orleans*, and Monsieur de *Laurach*, attended by an equal number, went into another; then moving equally, came both at one time to the opposite sides of the Bark in the middle of the River, into which the King came with 12 *Spaniards*, and the Princes with 12 *Frenchmen*, exactly at the same moment. There, as had been agreed, the King was exchange'd for his two Sons; he going into their Boat, and they into his, and so landing on the opposite Shores. The King rode away with speed to *S. Jean de Luz*, and the next Day to *Bayonne*. The Viceroy deliver'd the two young Princes at *Fuenterabia*, to *D. John de Towar* Marquis of *Bersinga*, who receiv'd them for the Constable his Father; after which, *Lanoy* went over to *Bayonne*, to be present at the Ratification of the Peace, as had been stipulated. Thus was the King of *France* set

at Liberty, after some few Days above a Years Imprisonment. At first he shew'd some Inclination to fulfil the Capitulation, but went away to *Paris* without ratifying the Treaty, tho' the Viceroy said not to press him to it.

4. The Constable of *Castile* was appointed by the Emperor to conduct his Sister towards *France*, but to keep still three Days Journey behind that King, and stop at *Victoria*, till the Viceroy of *Navarre* brought him the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans*, whom he was to receive of him, and deliver him the Queen to be convey'd to her new Husband the King. He going away to *Paris*, as has been said, without ratifying the Peace, and the Viceroy after him, the Constable receiv'd fresh Orders to turn back with the Queen and the two Princes to *Burgos*, where he should have farther Instructions how to proceed. He accordingly obey'd, and gave mighty Obligations under his Hand, to be faithful in keeping the two young Princes, which he dying, were renew'd by his Son the Earl of *Haro*, and the Marquis of *Berlanga* his Brother. The Constable sent to intreat the Emperor to order, That all Governors of Ports where the Princes came, should resign their Governments into his Hands, and they be discharged of that Trust during his stay there; and that the Viceroy of *Navarre*, and Generals on the Frontiers, should allow him what Troops he demanded for their Security. Of the King of *France* he demanded 10000 Maravedies a Day for keeping of them, that is, 5*l.* 4*s.* 2*d.* At *Burgos* the Constable receiv'd a Letter from His Imperial Majesty, in which he granted his Request, order'd him to come forward to *Palencia*, left it to his Discretion, whether he would carry the Princes to *Valladolid*, and charg'd him to give them all possible good Usage, but to take special care they were safe. They were remov'd to several places, and afterwards more closely confin'd on account of their Father's proceedings, of which we shall see more hereafter.

5. The Emperor continu'd at *Sevil* till the 18th of *May*, where Queen *Germana*, who had been *Granada* Wife before to the Catholick King, and to the Marquis

Duke of Brandenburg, was Marry'd to Ferdinand of
 Aragon Duke of Calabria. The City of Granada
 had intreated His Imperial Majesty to Honour it
 with his Presence, to which he condescended, and
 sent Orders for the Entertaining of his Court. In
 his way he pass'd through Cordova, Ezija, and Jaen,
 which places he had never been in before, and came
 to Granada on the 4th of June 1526, was receiv'd
 with great Pomp, Lodg'd in the Alhambra, a strong
 Place, formerly the Residence of the Moorish Kings,
 and seem'd to be pleas'd with this City above any
 other in Spain. Here a Petition was presented to
 him in behalf of the Moriscoes, that is, the Con-
 verted Moors of that Kingdom, complaining of many
 Wrongs done them by the Clergy, Judges, and o-
 ther Officers; it troubled him much that Chri-
 stians should be guilty of such Enormities; where-
 upon Visitors were appointed to go and enquire into
 the Wrongs done, and to examine how the Morif-
 cians liv'd. These Visitors executing their Commision,
 found there was much Injustice done to the Moors;
 and at the same time that they continu'd rank Ma-
 homitans; for tho' they had been 27 Years Baptiz'd,
 there were not 27 of them Christians, which the
 ancient Christians were to blame for, because they
 conniv'd at, and did not Instruct them. An As-
 sembly was appointed to consider of Means to re-
 dress these Mis-carriages, and at length resolv'd that
 the Inquisition which had been settled at Jaen should
 be remove to Granada, to terrify the Moriscoes who
 were come thither from several parts. 2dly, That
 all Crimes they had committed till then should be
 forgiven them; but if for the future they did not
 amend, the Inquisition should proceed against them.
 3dly, That they should not Speak Arabick, but Lin-
 gua Franca, and that all Contracts and Writings
 should be in Spanish. 4thly, That both Men and
 Women should leave off the Moorish Apparel, and
 be Habited like Christians. 5thly, That no Taylor
 or Goldsmith should for the time to come presume
 to cut Garments, or make any Jewels after the
 Moorish Fashion, for till then they wore no other.
 6thly, That when any Moorish Woman was to be
 Deliver'd,

Morisco's
of Granada

Deliver'd, a Christian should be by, that they might perform no *Mahometan* Ceremonies. 7ibly, That there should be Colleges Erected at *Granada*, *Guadix*, and *Almeria*, to Instruct the *Morisco* Children, because there was no relying on their Parents. The *Moriscoes* hearing of these Resolutions, particularly what concern'd the Inquisition, had a meeting among themselves, and besides their usual Taxes, presented the Emperor with 80000 Ducats. This Money, and some more given to Favourites, prevail'd so far, that His Imperial Majesty order'd the Inquisition should not Confiscate their Goods, and that they should be permitted to wear their *Moorish* Garb during his pleasure. In this City His Majesty instituted the Council of State, to Consult about the most important Affairs, relating to the Government of *Germany* and *Spain*. Several Great Men that were not nominated to be of this Council representing it, the Emperor suppress'd it five Months after at *Valladolid*. On the 4th of *July*, at 11 of the Clock at Night, and again at 4 in the Morning, there were two shocks of Earthquakes at *Granada*. On the 15th of *September*, it was publicly declar'd at Court, That the Empress was with Child. This Year 1526, there was great plenty of Corn and Fruit, which together with the thinness of the Water about *Granada*, was the cause of some Mortality. The Emperor order'd an Hospital to be Erected in that City for Foundlings, and assign'd it a Revenue of 150000 *Maravedies per An.* that is, 86 l. 2 s. 6 d. Besides, he assign'd 18000 Ducats of the Monies the *Moriscoes* presented, to begin the Structure of an Apartment for him in the *Alhambra*.

C H A P. XV.

The War renew'd in Lombardy ; Articles of the League against the Emperor ; French Apology and Answer to it ; Cremona taken by the Confederates ; Rome enter'd by the Spaniards and Colonnas ; Germans in Italy.

NO sooner was King *Francis* at full liberty in his own Dominions, but he began to Court Pope *Clement VII.* and King *Henry of England.* The Pope, the better to disguise his Designs, writ a Letter to the Emperor full of Friendly Expressions and Protestations, advising him to release the King of *France,* and settle the Peace of *Christendom.* But the Emperor who was acquainted with his Practices at the *French Court,* and many others, where he was stirring up the Princes of *Europe* against him, sent a courteous Answer, acquainting him with the delivery of the King, and endeavouring to satisfy him as to other points. And perceiving *K. Francis* put off the ratifying of the Treaty of *Madrid* from time to time, he sent Orders to the Viceroy of *Naples,* to press him upon that Point ; and the answer the King gave, was, That he had no power to dismember any part of the Kingdom, without the consent of the whole, but desir'd the restitution of *Burgundy* might be exchange'd into any Sum of Money. This breach of Faith, put the Emperor upon seeking rather to conclude a Peace with the Pope and *Venetians,* than to enter upon any new Treaty with a Man who had so notoriously falsify'd the last. In the mean while, *Anthony de Leyva,* and *D. Alonso de Avalos,* press'd Duke *Sforcia,* who was besieg'd in the Castle of *Milan,* so that he could not hold out long. However, perceiving his Obstinacy, they resolv'd to use all possible Means to prevent his being Reliev'd, and in order to it, would oblige
the

Peace broken in Milan.

the Citizens to take an Oath of Fidelity to the Emperor; and upon this account, as also for some Money they demanded, the business ran so high, that the Citizens took up Arms, and the Duke came out of the Castle to their Assistance. In fine, the City was in danger of being utterly Ruin'd, for 3000 Spaniards, and as many Germans, that were in Milan, committed such intolerable Outrages, that abundance of the People fled out of the City, some in Despair Hang'd themselves, and others cry'd to Heaven for redress. They humbly begg'd of the Duke of Bourbon, *Anthony de Leyva*, and Marquis *del Gasto*, to deliver him from those wicked Men. The Duke demanded 30000 Ducats, and the Milanefes apprehending they should be never the better when they had given him the Sum, he wish'd the first Bullet the Enemy fir'd at him might be his Death, if he did not ease them. This Curse is said to have fallen upon him at *Rome*, as we shall shew in its place. *Lewis Vistarini*, who was in the Emperor's Service at *Lodi*, betray'd that City to the *Venetians*. At the same time, an Alliance was concluded between the Pope, *Venetians*, *Florentines*, and Duke of *Milan*, with the specious Title of *The most Holy League*, for the Defence and Liberty of *Italy*, and its Confederates. It was pretended the Emperor might come into it, but at the same time it was form'd against him. The Kings of *France* and *England* enter'd into the Alliance; the Articles whereof it consisted, I shall here set down in substance, the whole being too tedious; but nothing material in them shall be omitted.

The LEAGUE, call'd *Most Holy*, between Pope *Clement*, the King of *France*, *Venetians*, Duke of *Milan*, and *Florentines*, against the Emperor *Charles* the Fifth.

The Preamble contains, That the Pope desiring to settle Peace in *Europe*, after the King of *France* had been set at Liberty, sent his Nuncio to him to treat of the Means; between whom, and the *Venetians*, and Duke of *Milan*, leaving allowance for the Emperor and King of *England* to come in, the said Treaty was concluded upon the following Articles.

I. That the Confederates shall Defend and Support one another against all their Enemies, not including the Dominions of the Pope or *Venetians* out of *Italy*. Articles of the League call'd Most Holy.

II. That there be place left to come into this Alliance, first for the Emperor, the King of *England*, as Protector of the League, the Archduke of *Austria*, and other Princes of *Christendom*: But so, as the Emperor shall not be admitted, unless he restore the *Most Christian King's* Children he has as Hostages, upon a reasonable Ransom, and unless he leave the Dukedom of *Milan* to that Duke, and all other the Dominions of *Italy*, as they were before the War; and that he go not into *Italy* to be Crown'd, otherwise Attended, than as the Pope and *Venetians* shall think fit; and that he pay the King of *England* the Money he owes him within three Months after the conclusion of this Treaty.

III. That

III. That an Army be rais'd in *Italy* for the Common Defence of the Confederates, and at their common Charge, consisting of 30000 Foot, 2500 Men at Arms, and 3000 Light Horſe, with a ſuitable Train of Artillery, of which Number the Pope ſhall furniſh 800 Men at Arms, 700 Light Horſe, and 8000 Foot; *France*, the *Venetians*, and Duke of *Milan* their Proportions, and ſo in the Train of Artillery. The whole to be maintain'd till the Enemy is expell'd *Italy*.

IV. The King of *France* ſhall have a powerful Army beyond the Mountains, either to obſtruct the paſſage of the Enemy into *Italy*, or to give him a ſtrong Diverſion in his own Dominions; and that not only by Land, but with a Fleet at Sea.

V. That the Confederates raiſe what *Swiſs* they ſhall think neceſſary to make up the aforeſaid Army, and the King be aſſiſting to them therein.

VI. That as ſoon as this Treaty is ratify'd, the Emperor be requir'd to deliver the King of *France* his Children, as aforeſaid; and in caſe of reſiſtance the Confederates oblige him to it by force of Arms.

VII. That the Confederates be ever oblig'd to Aſſiſt and Support one another, and to that purpoſe *Italy* be oblig'd, upon occaſion, to ſend the King 10000 Foot, and 2000 Horſe; and be them the like Number when requiſite.

VIII. That a Fleet be compos'd of at leaſt 20 Gallies, beſides other Ships; of which Number, His *Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty* to furniſh 12 Gallies, the Pope 5, and the *Venetians* the reſt; that the Duke of *Milan* contribute to the Charge, which may be ſent in caſe the *Genoeſes* come into the League.

IX. The King of *France* promiſes never to attempt any thing againſt the Dukedom of *Milan*, but to protect and defend that Duke againſt all his Enemies,

enemies, he paying the said King such a Pension as the Pope and *Venicians* shall adjudge, provided it be not less than 50000 Ducats.

X. And that this Peace may be perpetual, all Persons who have forfeited their Estates by following the King's Party, are to be restor'd.

XI. The King will Marry Duke *Sforcia* into the Royal Family of *France*, and will prevail with the *Swiss* to enter into League with him for defence of his States, the Duke paying them certain Pensions.

XII. That the Earldom of *Aste* be restor'd to his Most Christian Majesty, or at least the Government of it be conferr'd on his Son, the Duke of *Orleans*.

XIII. That *Anthony Adorno* remain posselt of the Government of *Genoa*, provided he enter into this Alliance; or that the Government of that City be alter'd, as the Confederates shall think fit, the supreme Dominion of it still continuing in the King.

XIV. In case the Emperor should not consent to the 2d Article of this Treaty; then the Confederates, as soon as they have expell'd his Forces out of *Milan*, shall employ their Army in Conquering the Kingdom of *Naples*, which shall be put into the Hands of the Pope, he paying the King of *France* 60000 Crowns in Gold yearly, for his Pretensions on that Kingdom.

XV. In case any of the Confederates fall off from this League, yet the rest shall continue firm as before. If any one Dye, his Successor may be admitted, and the Pope shall cause the College of Cardinals to approve of it.

XVI. That the Confederates take the Pope's Family into their Protection, and support them in the degree they formerly had in *Florence*.

XVII. That

XVII. That the *K. of England* be Protector of this League, and in consideration of it, the Confederates offer him and his Heirs an Estate in *Naples*, with the Title of Duke or Prince, worth 3000 Ducats yearly; and some other Estate in *Italy* worth 10000 Ducats for the Cardinal of *York*, for his good Service in bringing about the League.

XVIII. The Confederates cannot enter into any other Confederacies with any Princes but what are here mention'd; and if they be already in League with any, the same to be void.

XIX. That before the ratification of this Treaty each of the Confederates name his Allies, so they be neither Subjects, nor Enemies of any of the other Princes. The Pope nam'd the *K. of England* and Marquis of *Mantua*; *K. Francis*, the Kings of *England*, *Scotland*, *Navarre*, *Portugal*, *Poland*, and *Hungary*, the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Lorraine*, and *Guelders*, and the 13 Cantons of *Switzerland*; the *Venetians*, the *K. of England*, each reserving a right of naming others.

XX. That the *K. of France* six Days before every Month give Security for the payment of the 40000 Ducats he is to allow monthly towards the Charge of the Army.

XXI. That this Treaty be ratify'd within a Month, and in case the Duke of *Milan* cannot perform it, being Block'd up, that the Pope and *Venetians* Sign for him.

Sign'd the 22th of *May*, 1576

2. The chief Promoter of this League was Pope *Clement VII.* who besides many Benefits and Favours, was beholding to the Emperor for having always supported him against his most implacable Enemy Cardinal *Voltieri*, maintain'd him in the Government of *Florence*, and at last rais'd him to the Papal Throne. Notwithstanding all which Obligations,

Pope Clement's Ingratitude.

negations, he presently embrac'd the *French* Interest, calling the Troops sent by his Predecessor, from the Emperor's Service, and at last openly Confederating against him. But the Pope alledg'd in his Indication, That he had withdrawn his Forces, because the *French* were provok'd to enter *Italy*, by the Irruption made by the Duke of *Bourbon* into *Provence*; whereas the Emperor might have contented himself with expelling the Admiral out of *Italy*, without Invading *France*. All Endeavours were us'd to raise the Confederate Army in time, to Oppress the *Imperialists*, and Relieve Duke *Sforcia*; yet they were disappointed; for he was so streightly Blockt up, that being absolutely destitute of Provisions, he was forc'd to surrender the Castle of *Milan* on the 24th of *July* 1526, Capitulating to be conducted to *Como*, where he had a Garison, and to be allow'd the Revenues of that Place for his Subsistence, till the Emperor should order otherwise. But he presently went away to the Enemies Army, and enter'd into the Confederacy. The Confederates had set out a Fleet of 37 Gallies, and some Ships, under the Command of *Andrew Doria*, and *Peter Navarro*, who was then in the Service of *France*: These meeting with *Charles de Lanoy*, and *Ferdinand de Alarcon*, bound for *Italy*, with 30 Ships, and about 8000 Men, had a fierce Battle, in which the *Imperialists* lost a Ship or two, and were forc'd into *Corsica*, where they refitted, but could not come to Relieve *Genoa*, the Enemies Fleet lying before it, and doing much Mischief along that Coast.

3. The Emperor being at *Granada*, receiv'd the *French* Embassadors, who came to acquaint him, That it was not in the power of their King, to perform the Article that concern'd *Burgundy*, and therefore demanded he would restore his two Sons for a moderate Ransom, or else he would recover them by force of Arms. At the same time, the Embassadors of the Confederates press'd him to draw his Forces out of *Lombardy*, not to carry an Army into *Italy*, and to pay the King of *England*, or else they would all make War on him. The Emperor nothing daunted, answer'd, That the Nation could

The King of
France de-
clares.

not hinder the King of *France* from fulfilling of Articles, especially since it had consented to them: That he ought not on any account to forsake his Wife: That the Duke of *Milan* was his Subject, and he ought to Punish him as a Rebel: That his *Spanish* Forces were well posted, since he was to go to be Crown'd in *Italy*: That he would not quit *Naples*, which was his Right on several accounts: That he would go into *Italy*, when, and in what manner it should please him, and if they all made War on him, he should be able to defend himself with the Assistance of his good Subjects, and the Help of God: And that he would pay the King of *England* with the King of *France's* Money.

4. After *Solyman*, that mighty Emperor of the *Turks*, had subdu'd the Island of *Rhodes*, as was before mention'd, he resolv'd to extend his Conquests on the Continent; and in order to it, enter'd *Hungary* with an Army of 200000 Men. *Lewis* the young King of *Hungary*, being forsaken by all the Princes of *Christendom*, ventur'd to meet him with the Forces of his own Kingdom, being 40000 Horse and Foot, resolving to dye in Defence of his People, as he expresses it in his Letter to the Emperor Dated the 27th of *August* 1526, being the Day before the Battle, which was fought in the Plains of *Mohatz*, where most of his Army was Cut in pieces, and he endeavouring to escape, perish'd miserably in a Morass. Having obtain'd so great a Victory, the *Turk* immediately possess'd himself of *Buda*, and dividing his Army, sent several Bodies to Ravage *Austria*, *Stiria*, *Carinthia*, and *Carniola*; as appears by the Archduke's Letter to the Emperor to be seen at large in our Author. The Emperor was extremely troubled at this News, and writ to all the Grandees and Prelates of *Spain*, desiring their Advice and Assistance; see this Letter at large to the Constable in *Sandoval*, which is the same taken from the Originals, as was sent to the other great Men. Next, His Imperial Majesty commanded publick Prayers to be made throughout all *Spain* for the Safety of *Christendom*, and sent his Brother 200000 Ducats as a present Supply, till he could be able to assist him with all his Forces.

Sandoval,
pag. 758.

p. 560.

p. 561.

5. 1st

In September, this Year, the King of France sent the Archbishop of Bourdeaux his Embassador, to the Emperor, to perswade him again to deliver his two Sons upon some reasonable Ransome. His Imperial Majesty was much offended, and Answer'd, That tho' the King pretended his Subjects would not permit him to deliver up *Burgundy*, yet no Man could hinder him from delivering himself up a Prisoner again, as he had sworn to do, and as his Predecessor King *John* had done, when releas'd by the *English* upon the same terms. Besides this Answer in publick, he took the Embassador aside and told him the King his Master had done *Lasche* and *Meschancement*, that is, False and Base, which were the very words we mention'd before, the King had bid him use if he did not perform the Treaty. King *Francis* to justify himself, writ to all the Princes of Christendom excusing his Conduct, and caus'd an Apology to be Printed and dispers'd abroad, call'd *Apologia dissuasoria Madritia conventionis*, or, an Apology to dissuade the Observation of the Treaty of *Madrid*. The substance of this Apology was, That the King charg'd the Emperor with breaking the Treaty of *Noyon*; invading the Dutchy of *Milan*, refusing the acknowledgement to the Crown of *France* for the Earldoms of *Flanders* and *Artois*, drawing the Duke of *Bourbon* into Rebellion, and invading *Provence*. That these Motives induc'd him to march into *Lombardy*, where he was taken and carry'd Prisoner into *Spain*, and being threaten'd with perpetual Imprisonment, had been forc'd to accept of such unjust Conditions, as the Emperor was pleas'd to impose on him, and which he could not be bound to observe, as having before protest'd, that if he were compell'd to unreasonable Terms, he must of necessity break them, and having sworn at his Coronation, not to alineate any thing belonging to the Crown of *France*. That yet to save his Conscience, he had propos'd it to the great Men and Councillors of his Kingdom, who all declar'd, he could in no wise perform such unreasonable Articles. That the Parliaments would admit of no such Alienation, and all the People of *Burgundy*

The
French A-
pology.

gundy exclaim'd against it. And that the Prince's his Friends and Confederates were all of the same Opinion; and therefore he had been oblig'd for his own Defence, to enter into a strict Alliance with them. Then he calls upon all Christian Princes, imploring them not to see Him and his Children wrong'd, and so concludes; But not one word of his Oath to return to Prison upon non-performance. See the Apology more at large in *Sandoval*, page 763, &c.

Answer
to the Apology.

6. The *Imperialists* were not wanting in setting out a large Answer to this Apology, retorting on the King all he charg'd upon the Emperor. First; as to breach of Faith they prove it upon the King, in the Treaties of *Paris* and *Noyon*, as the case was decided by the King of *England*, when at *Calis* he was constituted Umpire, to adjudge which of the two had infring'd the Articles of those Treaties, and the King of *England* absolutely declar'd against *France*. Then they bring many instances of the King's unjust Proceedings, as his agreeing with Pope *Leo X.* to divide the Emperor's Dominions in *Italy*, his encouraging the Rebels in *Spain*, his invading *Flanders* and *Navarre*, and much more to the same purpose. As for *Milan*, they urge the King of *France* had first commenc'd the War without any right to that Dukedom, which is undoubtedly a Fief of the Empire. In relation to *Flanders*, they plead the Imperial Dignity takes off all acknowledgment of Superiority to another; besides that the fealty for those Provinces was unduly introduc'd by *Philip I.* Concerning the Duke of *Bourbon*, that no promises from the Emperor, but the King's refusing to do him Justice, oblig'd that Prince to fly to his Imperial Majesty's protection. That the Earldom of *Provence* of right appertains to the Emperor, and not to the King, and so the Earldom of *Anjou*. That the King had not been conquer'd by Fortune, but by dint of Valour, convey'd into *Spain* at his own request, treated there as if in his own Kingdom, and had himself there propos'd to yield up all his pretensions in *Flanders*, *Milan*, *Genoa*, and *Naples*, and in lieu of *Burgundy*, to Conquer *Florence* and *Venice* for

for the Emperor, and to bear half charge in the Emperor's Wars, and serve him in Person. That he was never threaten'd with perpetual Imprisonment, but had liberty to walk abroad and Hunt. That the King understanding the Designs were carrying on against the Emperor, had endeavour'd to make his escape, which yet his Imperial Majesty took no notice of, only ordering he might be more strictly observ'd. That the Protestation mention'd in the Apology, was never made. That all Conditions, provided they be possible, ought in Justice to be perform'd; besides that the Emperor ask'd no more than what was his due, and at the same time gave him in Marriage his Sister, who next his Brother, was Heiress to all his vast Dominions. That the Parliament of Paris acted like Flatterers, in telling him he was not bound to the Observation of the Treaty. That what was requir'd of him, and he had sworn to perform, was no Alienation, but Restitution. That the Burgundians mention'd in the Apology, had been instructed what they were to say before the Emperor's Embassadors. This, and much more to this effect, the curious Reader may see in Sandoval, as above, immediately after the Apology.

7. The King of France, in his Letter to the Princes of the Empire, dated the 6th of October 1526, grants Liberty for their Expresses to pass through France into Spain, laments the Desolation of Hungary, and danger of Germany, caus'd by the discord among Christian Princes, complains of the Emperor, desires them to use their Interest to incline him to Peace, and justifies all his own proceedings. In fine, the Letter is so worded, that any Person unacquainted with the History of those Times, reading it, would think the Emperor guilty of many Faults, and King Francis a most zealous Man for the good of Christendom. The Pope at the same time threaten'd loud and thundr'd out Excommunications, which, tho' they terrify'd some, yet others made less account of them, as proceeding from a Person so prejudic'd. On the 23d of June 1526, Pope Clement writ again to the Emperor, but his

King Francis
his Letter.



Letter being much to the same purport of his other Messages before mention'd, and the Emperor's Answer not unlike those already recited; and having already too long taken up the Readers Attention with these Messages and Apologies, I will omit them, referring the Reader who is curious to see such Authentick Testimonies to *Sandoval*, Page 788, &c. where besides these, are the Emperor's Letters to the College of Cardinals, and Princes of the Empire.

8. The Emperor's Affairs at this time seem'd to be but in an ill posture, because he had always entertain'd thoughts of Peace, and therefore had but a weak Army in *Italy*. On the other side the King of *Navarre* rais'd Men to recover his Kingdom. The Confederate Army in *Italy* was reported to be 6000 strong; the *Milaneses* worn out with so many Wrongs done them, were ready to declare for the Enemy, and King *Francis* rais'd Forces to assist the *Navarrois*, and invade the Low-Countries. These Considerations oblig'd the Emperor to send Orders to the Archduke his Brother, to raise some *German* Troops and send them into *Italy*. In the mean while the Duke of *Urbino*, General of the Confederates, who lay with their Army to cut off Provisions from *Milan*, sent *Malatesta Baillon* with 8000 Foot, and some Horse to reduce *Cremona*, where the Castle held for Duke *Sforcia*. *Baillon* having batter'd the place, gave two Assaults, and was repuls'd both times with great loss, so that he durst not make any further attempt; but the Duke of *Urbino* coming with the whole Army to carry on the Siege, the Garrison was forc'd to Capitulate, to march out with all the marks of Honour, if not releiv'd in ten Days, which was accordingly perform'd, and Duke *Sforcia* put into possession of that place. About the same time the Out-laws of *Sienna*, which place was then under the Emperor's protection, having gather'd 6000 Men with the Assistance of the *Pope* and *Florentines*, ravag'd all the Country, and at last fate down before the City; but the Besieg'd making a vigorous Sally, routed their Enemies, and for that time deliver'd themselves from Oppression. Now also *D. Hugo de Moncada* who

Cremona
taken by the
Confederates.

who came with the Character of the Emperor's Embassador, arriv'd at *Rome*, and finding nothing to be done there, but that his Predecessor, the Duke of *Sessa*, was gone thence, he left that City too, and went away to *Naples*. As soon as he was gone the Pope began to persecute the Family of the *Colonna's*, because they sided with the Emperor, and rais'd Men in the Territory and City of *Rome*. D. *Hugo* to put a stop to his proceedings, and give some diversion to the Confederates in *Lombardy*, resolv'd to carry the War to the Pope's own Door, and in order to it, consulted with Cardinal *Colonna*, and *Charles de Lanoy*, Viceroy of *Naples*. Among them they gather'd 1500 Foot, and as many Horse, and march'd towards *Rome* with all speed, sending out Parties before to prevent any Intelligence might be given of their march, and by this means came to *Rome* in the Morning by break of Day unperceiv'd, and entering at the Gate of *S. John Lateran*, cry'd Liberty, Liberty. The Pope hearing the Alarm, fled with all that were about him to the Castle of *S. Angelo*. D. *Hugo* march'd through the City, and passing the River, possess'd himself of the *Vatican* Quarter, and sacred Palace, which the Soldiers plunder'd; as also *S. Peters*. The Pope being sensible he had no Provisions to hold out in the Castle, had a Conference with D. *Hugo*, and agreed upon these Articles, That there should be a Truce between the Pope and the Emperor for four Months. That he should withdraw his Army out of *Lombardy*. That he should pardon the *Colonna's*: And that D. *Hugo* should immediately withdraw his Forces and return to *Naples*, which he accordingly did; but the Pope perform'd not on his side, which cost him dear. At the same Dy'd D. *Lewis de Cordova*, Duke of *Sessa* the Spanish Embassador at *Rome*. This account of the Action in *Rome Sandoval* here justifies against *Jovius*, who represents it in a very odious manner: See in the Author Page 806,

The Action above mention'd only serv'd to aggravate the Pope, who pretending to observe the Truce agreed upon, recall'd his Forces out of *Lombardy*, and yet order'd 4000 Men more to be rais'd,

D. Hugo
de Mon-
cala en-
ters Rome
with Ex-
ces.

Pope a-
gainst the
Colonna's.

which being done, he fell upon the Lands of the *Colonna's*, tho' pardon'd by the Capitulation, burnt and destroy'd 14 Towns of theirs, Excommunicated and Depos'd the Cardinal, and would have gone further yet, but that at the same time the Viceroy of *Naples* and *Ferdinand de Alarcon* arriv'd at *Gabia* with 37 Ships, and 7000 *Spaniards* and *Germans* aboard them, tho', as was said before, they had by the way sustain'd some loss, meeting the *Pope's* and *French* Gallies. This being made known to the *Pope*, he drew back his Forces about *Rome*, and the Viceroy joining those of *D. Hugo de Moncada* and the *Colonna's*, which altogether made up 20000 Men, march'd towards that City, which the *Pope* abandon'd, fearing to be there. The Duke of *Bourbon* was then at *Milwa* with 15000 Men; and the *Florentines* fearing him, offer'd 500000 Ducats for him to take them under his Protection; but he threaten'd to Plunder *Florence*, unless they would give him a Million. The Viceroy advancing into the Lands of the Church, laid Siege to *Fronsobona*; but the *Pope* having considerably increas'd his Army, sent to Relieve that place; which was accordingly done, the Viceroy not thinking convenient to hazard a Battle. Thence the *Imperialists* march'd and encamp'd at *Esperano* near the Frontiers of *Naples*, but in the Ecclesiastical Territory, and the *Pope* posted his Army at *Posea*, five or six Miles from the others; it being now the latter end of *November*, they both intrench'd, and no considerable Action was perform'd.

Germans
come into
Italy.

10. In *Lombardy*, when the *Pope* had withdrawn his Forces from *Milwa*, the other Confederates did the same, upon the News that *George Fronsberg* was marching into *Italy* with 12000 *Germans*, The *Venetians* drew off to cover their own Dominions, and the *French* to the Bank of the River *Adda*, to streighten the *Imperialists* in *Milwa*, and hinder the passage of *Fronsberg* and his *Germans*. The Duke of *Urbino* did all he could to obstruct their passing the *Po*, but could not prevail, tho' he lost many Men, and among them *John de Medicis*, kill'd by a Musket-ball. *Fronsberg* encamp't near *Plasencia* and *Parma*,
being

being supply'd with Artillery, Ammunition, and Provisions, by the Duke of *Ferrara*. He being so posted, the other Imperial Generals prepar'd to take the Field and join him, so that the War was now vigorously carry'd on, which the Emperor finding himself weak, had before endeavour'd to protract. But being now superior in Strength, declar'd he would never desist, till the King of *France* perform'd what he had Sworn; and therefore he order'd the Dauphin and Duke of *Orleans* to be convey'd to the Castle of *Pedraza*, and there kept close.

§ II. Whilst these things were doing in *Italy*, the Emperor continu'd at *Granada*, making the best provision he could for War, and at the same time listening to the Proposals of Peace made by the King of *England*, who offer'd to be Mediator. But being no Sincerity in their Words, all these Overtures came to nothing. *Ferdinand* Archduke of *Austria* succeeding King *Lewis* in the Throne of *Hungary*, as having Marry'd his Sister, the Emperor writ to the Princes of the Empire, to be assisting to him against the common Enemy. His vast Expences in so many parts, had oblig'd him to anticipate his Revenues; and therefore to obtain some supply, he appointed the *Cortes* to meet at *Valladolid* on the 10th of *January* the following Year. In order to meet them, he set forward from *Granada* on the 10th of *November*, and was very long on the way, by reason of the great Rains and Snows that fell this Year throughout all *Spain*, the Winter proving the severest that had been known, so that there were mighty Floods, and much Sickness ensu'd. In *Germany*, *Luther* gain'd many Followers; and therefore the Emperor, as well to settle the Affairs of Religion, as to oppose the *Turk*, order'd the Diet to meet at *Spire*, and that in it no Innovation should be made in point of Religion; yet a Decree pass'd, giving leave to all *Germans* to Believe as every one pleas'd. At this Diet the King of *France* renew'd his Complaints against the Emperor, offering powerful Assistance against the *Turks*, if his Imperial Majesty were brought to a Peace; who was not wanting to Justifie himself before that Assembly. This

The HISTORY of

This same Year 1526, *Elizabeth* Queen of *Denmark*, and Sister to the Emperor, dy'd at *Brussels*, leaving a Son not long liv'd and two Daughters, of which *Dorothy* marry'd *Frederick* Count-Palatin of the *Rhine*, and *Christina* was first Wife to *Francis Sforcia* Duke of *Milan*, and after him to the Duke of *Lorraine*. This Year also, the Emperor going a Hunting, lost himself on the Mountains of *Granada* in pursuit of a wild Boar; and coming by Night to a Village of *Moriscoes*, was by one of them, for a Reward, conducted to *Granada*, where Lights were hung out in all places to show him the way.

C H A P. XVI.

The Cortes of Castile refuse the Emperor Supplies; the War in Italy; Rome taken and sack'd by the Imperialists; Imprisonment of the Pope; Actions of Lautrec in Italy; the whole manner of the Challenge between the Emperor and the King of France.

1. **T**HE Emperor, as was said in the last Chapter, set forward from *Granada* on the 10th of *November* 1526, and was a long time on his Journey, by reason of the badness of the Weather, and that the Emperess was with Child. He at length came to *Valladolid*, with his whole Court, on the 14th of *January* 1527; after which, there were such prodigious Floods, as had not been seen in *Spain* in the memory of Man. The mighty Snows that fell in *October*, *November*, and *December*, thawing, with much Rain in *January*, so swell'd the Rivers, that the *Pisuerga* at *Valladolid* came up to the Walls, a great part of the Bridge of *Gabezon* was carry'd away, and much more Harm done. At *Burgos*, a great part of the City was under Water, two Bridges, a Tower, and many Houses were carry'd away, and several People drown'd. The Conitable of *Castile*, and other Gentlemen, sav'd the Nuns of two Monasteries, who had otherwise perish'd. The Loss sustain'd here was prodigious, and proportionable to it in many other parts of *Spain*. On the 11th of *January*, the *Cortes*

1527
Emperor at
Valladolid

Floods.

Cortes met at *Valladolid*, as had been appointed, and unanimously agreed to give His Imperial Majesty no Money; which he perceiving, without the least discontent, dismiss'd them. Only the Religious of the Order of *S. Benedict* presented him with 12000 Pistoles. The next Day after the meeting of the *Cortes*, which was the twelfth of *February*, the Emperor sent for the Embassadors of the Pope, *France*, *England*, and *Venice*; and in the presence of several Great-men of his Court, shew'd how unjust their manner of proceeding was, since they press'd him to enter upon a Treaty of Peace, when none of them had sufficient Commission from their Masters to Treat, and therefore he requir'd them to procure sufficient Powers, and make such Overtures as might demonstrate they meant to deal sincerely, or else the World would be sensible the Calamities a War must cause would lie at their door. Here let us leave the Emperor, to return to the Actions in *Italy*.

2. We left the Viceroy of *Naples* at *Esperano*, five Miles from the Pope's Army, and the Duke of *Bourbon* preparing to take the Field: Accordingly, in *January* 1527, he march'd out with the *Germans* and *Spaniards*, leaving sufficient Garisons in *Milan* and *Pavia*; and passing by *Plasencia*, which the Confederates had secur'd, advanc'd to *Florenzola*, to join *Pronspersg* and his *Germans*, taking several Places of small note, but durst not attempt *Bologna*, because the *Marquis de Saluzzes* was got in with all his Forces. The Confederates would not venture to give him Battle, but endeavour'd to cut off his Provisions, and protract Time, hoping want of Necessaries and Money would produce some mutiny. In the mean time, the Pope had sent the Count of *Vandemont* of the House of *Anjou* and *Horace Baillon*, with a considerable Force to invade the Kingdom of *Naples*, running along the Coast in the *French Fleet* Commanded by *Andrew Doria*; they landing at several places, took *Salerno*, and other Towns, and drove *D. Hugo de Moncada* back into *Naples*, whence he came to oppose them. This being told the Duke of *Bourbon*, and seeing his Army began to be Mutinous for

Cortes at Valladolid

The War in Italy.

for want of Pay and Provisions, he resolv'd to march towards *Rome* to Relieve *Naples*, and by the way to punish the *Florentines* for adhering to the Pope, where he might get Money enough to pay his Army. The *Florentines* understanding his design, offer'd to put themselves under his Protection, paying 500000 Ducats for it, but he demanded a Million. These things being made known to the Pope, he earnestly press'd the Viceroy to come to an Accommodation, who believing the Emperor desir'd nothing but Peace, readily gave ear to it, and they soon concluded a Truce on these Articles: That both the Pope and Viceroy should withdraw and disperse their Armies. That the Duke of *Bourbon* should not advance towards *Florence* or *Rome*, but continue in *Lombardy*. That the *Florentines* should pay the 500000 Ducats. This was Sign'd on the 15th of *May*, and the Pope withdrew and dispers'd his Forces. The Duke of *Bourbon* would not stand to this Agreement, because it was concluded without Consulting him, he being the Emperor's Lieutenant and Captain-General. He therefore left *Anthony de Leyva* in the State of *Milan* with 3000 *Germans*, 1500 *Spaniards*, 2000 *Italians*, and some Horse, and mov'd towards *Florence*; which the Duke of *Urbino* perceiving, he hasten'd to prevent him, and got into *Florence* with the Confederate Forces. The Duke disappointed of his design at that place, leaving his heavy Cannon at *Siena*, Travell'd Day and Night till he came within sight of *Rome*, where the Pope had gather'd about 6000 Men of his late scatter'd Troops, and commanded the Townsmen to be in Arms. On the 5th of *May* in the Afternoon, *Bourbon* came before the Imperial City, and encamp't on the Mountain call'd *Sancto Spirito*, or of the Holy Ghost, sending his *Germans* down to the Wicket of the same name. All that Night was spent in contriving where to give the Assault, and making Scaling-Ladders for six Men to mount a-brest. The Imperial Army, according to the best computation, consist'd of 30000 Fighting Men, *Germans*, *Italians*, and *Spaniards*. Next Day, being *Monday* the 6th of *May*, the Army was drawn out to give the Assault, and

Rome taken and sack'd.

so eager were the Soldiers that they press'd for the signal, which once given they ran on as if nothing had stood in their way: Nor were the Defendants less Resolute; so that there ensu'd a bloody Conflict, many falling on both sides. In the heat of the Action the Duke of *Bourbon* appearing to encourage his Men where the greatest danger threatn'd, was shot with a Musket Bullet into the Thigh next the Belly, so that he presently fell, and Dy'd within an Hour. However, the Assault was vigorously carry'd on, and the Suburb enter'd, whence the Pope with 17 Cardinals, and the *English, French* and *Florentine* Embassadors fled to the Castle of *S. Angelo, Renso de Ceri* following them with 500 Men of the Garrison. After a considerable slaughter, and much pillaging, the Soldiers being now refresh'd, the Prince of *Orange*, who Commanded upon the Death of *Bourbon*, beat to Arms, and driving the Guards from the Bridges, broke into the City. In both the Attacks 5000 of the Defendants were reported to have been kill'd, and the whole City plunder'd, without sparing Churches, Monasteries, or Church-men, which Ungodly Work was carry'd on for seven Days. This was the Consequence of *Clement VII.* ambitious practices, but without the Consent or knowledge of the Emperor.

3. *Rome* thus reduc'd, the Castle of *S. Angelo* was belieg'd, and the Pope held out some Days before he would give ear to any Agreement, expecting the Duke of *Urbino* would come to his Relief; which accordingly he did, and the *Imperialists* march'd out as readily to give him Battle. A Letter writ from *Rome* at that time says, the Duke of *Urbino* was utterly Routed; yet *Peter Mexia* and other Authors say, there was no Battle fought, but that the Duke having continu'd some Days within 6 or 7 Miles of *Rome*, and finding no disorder in the Imperial Army as he had expected, march'd away. As soon as he was gone, the *Imperialists* return'd into *Rome*, where they found the Citizens with 8000 other Men in Arms, in order to cut off the *Imperialists*, with the assistance of the Confederate Army, but these Forces were easily Routed. The Pope see-

The Pope
secur'd.

ing

ing no hope left, obtain'd an Interview with the Viceroy of *Naples*, who was come to *Rome*, and after much debate they agreed, That the Pope should pay 400000 Ducats for the Ransome of those that were in the Castle, which he deliver'd up immediately, and put himself into the Hand of the *Imperialists*, and also the Castle of *Civita Vecchia*, and that of *Osia*, with its Port, and the Citties of *Plasencia*, *Parma* and *Rheggio*. This done *Ferdinand de Alarcon* was left in the Castle of *S. Angelo*, to secure the Pope till the Emperor's Will was known, which was done with all possible Respect and Honour. This News being brought to *Florence*, the People mutiny'd crying, Liberty and turn'd out of the City all the Family of the *Medicis*, and their adherents, declaring for the Emperor, who receiv'd advice of what had happen'd at *Valladolid*; and tho' the success of his Forces could not but be pleasing to him, yet he was much concern'd for the Sacking of *Rome*, Imprisonment of the Pope, and Death of the Duke of *Bourbon*; Therefore he immediately writ to the Pope offering him his Friendship, as also to several Princes to justify his proceedings. At the same time he sent Orders to his Generals to set the Pope at Liberty, yet so that he might not become an Enemy, which much perplex'd them, not knowing how to secure him when out of their Hands. In the mean while the Churches were shut up throughout *Italy*, a great Plague rag'd at *Rome*, which swept away 500 in a Day, and the sacred Pallace was burnt, with the Library, which was of a prodigious value, and all the Records. These misfortunes oblig'd the Pope to remove to *Gaeta* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, and ten Leagues from *Rome*, which obstructed his being set at Liberty till the 8th of *November* 1527. Two Days before the Pope remov'd, *Charles de Lanoy*, Viceroy of *Naples*, dy'd at *Rome* of the Plague, and *D. Hugo de Moncada* succeeded him, which was no way pleasing to the Pope, because of the Differences that had been formerly between them. In consideration of *Lanoy's* great Services, the Emperor gave his Son the Principalties of *Salmona*, and the Family still continues.

Plague at
Rome.

4. Some small time before this War, when no Man imagin'd any Danger could threatn'd *Rome*, there appear'd in that City a Man not known to any Body further, than that he was an *Italian*, and his Name *John Baptist*. His Habit and Life were very penitential, for he wore only a loose Garment of Sack-Cloath next his Skin, went bare Foot, fed poorly, and lay on the Ground. This Man went about the Streets of *Rome*, calling to the people to mend their Lives, for the Wrath of God was coming upon that City: Day and Night he repeated this in all places, was cast into Prison, and all to no purpose; for still he continu'd in the same tone, and held it till the City was taken and plunder'd. Whilst what we have mention'd happen'd at *Rome*, *Antony de Leyva* was not idle in *Lombardy*, for understanding that Duke *Sforcia* with his own and some *Venetian* Troops, intended to possess himself of *Marignano*, which is but ten Miles from *Milan*, he march'd out with what Forces he could make to that place, which the Duke perceiving he quitted his design. After this *Leyva* receiving information that *James de Medicis* lay at *Casal*, 12 Miles from *Milan*, he came upon him there unexpected at break of Day, and forcing the place, took or kill'd most of his Men.

5. On Tuesday the 21st of *May*, this Year 1527, Philip II. the Emperors was deliver'd at *Valladolid* of a Son, afterwards famous enough by the Name of *Philip II.* King of *Spain*. The Emperor when the Infant was brought to him said, *God make you a good Christian. I beg of God that he give you his Grace. May it please God to enlighten your Understanding, that you may know how to govern the Kingdoms you are to inherit.* This said, he went away a Foot, tho' it then Rain'd, to *S. Pauls* Church, to return Thanks to God. Against the 5th of *June*, when the Prince was to be Baptiz'd, there was a Gallery built, reaching from the foot of the Stairs of the House, where the Emperors lay, to the high Altar of *S. Pauls* Church, and most richly adorn'd with Flowers, Trees, Pictures, Plate, and several Triumphal Arches, in which were Concerts of Musick. All the Nobility then at Court attended

The HISTORY of

attended the young Infant, as did *Ellenor Queen of France* his God-mother, and he was Christn'd by the Archbishop of *Toledo*, assisted by the Bishops of *Ossna* and *Palencia*, all in their Pontificals. The Ceremony of the Church ended, one of the Kings at Arms cry'd out, *Hear, Hear, Hear, Philip, by the Grace of God, Prince of Castile, &c.* The *Thursday* following there was a sport us'd in *Spain*, perform'd by the Gentry, representing a skirmish with Canes instead of Spears, all richly Accoutr'd, well Mounted, and in bright Armour, and besides they kill'd several Bulls. When the Empress was Church'd, the publick Rejoycings were renew'd, but soon after *Valladolid* and the Country about growing sickly, the Court remov'd to *Palencia*.

*Discovery
of Witches.*

6. Because the Relation is somewhat strange, I will here briefly insert what happen'd this Year in *Navarre*, concerning the discovery of a number of Witches. Two young Girls not above eleven Years of Age, of their own accord appear'd at *Pamplona*, before the Council of that Kingdom, offering, if they might have their pardon, to discover many horrid Criminals that deserv'd to be punish'd. The pardon was accordingly granted, upon Condition they should make a full discovery, and then they own'd they were Witches, with many more, whom they could know by seeing their left Eye. One of the Council was appointed to go about the Country with these two Girls, and a good Guard of 50 Men to apprehend the Witches. At every Town they came to the Girls were shut up and all the Women, of whom the Magistrates had any suspicion, being seated in a-row, differently Habited and Veil'd, so that nothing but their left Eye was to be seen, one of the Girls was brought out and looking steadily on every Womans Eye, mark'd out which were Witches and which not; then the other being brought by her self pointed out the same, without ever making a mistake: And thus above 150 persons were convicted of being Witches and Witches. When apprehended they all confess'd, and their depositions all agreed, owning that when any Woman was admitted into the Society

Society, she had presently an *Incubus* allotted her, and was directed how to renounce the Catholick Faith: That done, they all made a Ring, and there appear'd in the midst of them a black Buck-Goat walking about and making a humming Noise, to which they all Danc'd, and then had a Collation of Bread, and Cheese, and Wine; but before Eating, they all Kiss'd the Goat under the Tail; then every one of the Witches got a-top of her Devil, who took the shape of a Buck-Goat, and flew away thro' the Air: But first they anointed themselves with an Ointment made of a Toad, a Crow, and other things. To prove this, the Judges allow'd one of the Witches to anoint herself, she did so, ran down the Wall of the House half way with her Head downwards, and then mounted into the Air and flew away. A Reward was promi'd to any that should bring her again, and certain Shepherds found her in a Meadow. Being askt, How it came to pass she had not made her Escape? She answer'd, That her Master would carry her but three Leagues, and left where the Shepherds took her up. There were many young Girls not above 11 or 12 Years of Age among them; and it was found they had kill'd some People, and done other Mischiefs. Much more they discover'd, but this may suffice for our purpose.

The King of *France* was not more concern'd at the taking of the Pope, than he was pleas'd at the Death of the Duke of *Bourbon*, whom the Parliament of *Paris*, on the 27th of *July*, declar'd guilty of High-Treason, confiscating his Estate, and ordering his Arms to be raz'd out in all places. At the same time, the King of *England*, by means of the Cardinal of *York*, join'd in League with him of *France*, engaging to furnish a Summ of Money monthly towards the War, without regarding that his Embassadors were then at *Valladolid*, offering his Mediation for concluding a Peace; and what is more, the Emperor declar'd to them, That tho' his Army was then Victorious in *Rome*, he would, in respect to the King of *England*, recede from the Article touching the restitution of *Burgundy*, which was the whole matter objected to obstruct the Peace, and accept of

League between
France &
England.

the sum of Money offer'd by the French King to Charles de Lanoy for the Ransom of his Sons, which was two Millions of Crowns, provided the other Articles of the Peace were observ'd. All this could not move King Henry from his Alliance with France, believing the Emperor could never withstand so many Enemies; and therefore a powerful Army of French, Swiss, and Germans was sent into Italy, under the Command of Francis Odette de Foix, commonly call'd Monsieur de Lautrec; who joining the French in Italy, march'd towards Alexandria, where Anthony de Leyva had left a good Garison of Germans, who was himself withdrawn to Milan, being himself unable to keep the Field against so great a Power, and the Imperial Troops at Rome refusing to stir till they were paid. In the way to Alexandria, the French plunder'd Bosco, and thence sent Caesar Fregoso, a Banish'd Genoesse, to possess himself of Genoa, which the Citizens Mutinying he perform'd; expelling the Family of the Adornos and the Spaniards, and then Lautrec Invested Alexandria, and Battering it three Days without intermission, made so great a Breach, that the Garison being unable to repair or make good, was forc'd to Surrender, and the Place was deliver'd to the Duke of Milan.

8. Anthony de Leyva understanding that Genoa and Alexandria, with other places of less note were taken by the French, gather'd the greatest Force he could from Como, Luca, and Rezzo, and shut himself up in Milan, making all necessary provisions to Defend himself, and sending Lewis Barbiano, with the Forces he brought out of Alexandria, to besiege Pavia. Lautrec not caring to have to do with Anthony de Leyva, march'd by within two miles of Milan and laid Siege to Pavia; where having made a Breach, the Besieged sent out to Capitulate; but the French enraged that their King had been taken by the Place, gave the Assault, enter'd the City, and che'd abundance of the innocent Inhabitants, plunder'd not only the Houses, but the Churches, Monasteries, and would have utterly ruin'd the Place, had not Lautrec, after eight Days barbarous Ravage, put an end to it. Duke Sforzia, after

King of *Pavia*, would fain have perswaded *Lanzarotti* to depart *Lombardy* till he had reduc'd *Milan*; but he pretending to rescue the Pope; had bent his Thoughts against *Naples*; and hurry'd on by his fate, would give no ear to the Duke; but leaving him and the *Venetians* to Block up *Antony de Leyva*, march'd away to *Plasencia*, where the more to strengthen his Party, he enter'd into an Alliance with the Duke of *Ferrara*, and Marquis of *Manua*. Yet he was forc'd to make some stay here; for as soon as he was gone from *Milan*, *Antony de Leyva* took *Bierassa* by Storm, which oblig'd him to send Count *Peter of Navarre* with a considerable part of his Troops to recover that Place: Where we must leave them for the present.

All this while the Embassadors of the Confederates were in *Spain*, endeavouring to amuse the Emperor with Overtures of Peace, but still innovating, and protracting time, their design being only to keep the Emperor in play, till they had made their Advantage. The Proposals made on both sides were many and various; but the Allies meaning nothing less than Peace, it was impossible any thing should be concluded, and therefore at length they all demanded leave to return to their Masters; to which the Emperor answer'd, That as soon as his Embassadors, then residing in *France*, *England*, and *Venice*, were brought to places where they might be exchanged, he would willingly dismiss them. But the King of *France* having receiv'd the news of the Pope's being set at Liberty, sent express Orders to his Embassadors to depart the Emperor's Court, that his King at Arms might formally Challenge the Emperor, the Pope's Imprisonment being one of the most plausible pretences for this Challenge, which I will not say somewhat particular in, as having all the original Papers that concern it out of the Secretaries Office. On the 22th of *January* 1528, the Emperor being at *Burgos*, *Guienne* a French King at Arms, and *Charles de Crevin* an English one, demanded Audience of the Imperial Majesty, which was granted them that morning between 10 and 11. At that time the Emperor came out into a great Hall, where the

The HISTORY of

Kings at Arms were with their Coats of Office thrown over their left Arms. The Emperor being seated, they came up to the lowest of the Steps on which his Chair was lifted, and *Clarencieux* in the Name of both, askt of His Imperial Majesty, That according to ancient Custom, their Privileges might be observ'd, and they be assur'd of their safety and good treatment when they had deliver'd the Messages they had from their respective Masters. The Emperor having assur'd them that their Privileges should be observ'd, *Guienne* the *French* King at Arms read a long Paper, containing in substance a Declaration of War and Defiance, alledging for his reasons, That the Emperor's Forces had taken the Pope and kept him Prisoner; That he refus'd to restore the King of *France* his Children, and did not pay the King of *England* the Money he ow'd him. See the original Paper in *Sandoval*, Vol. 1. Pag. 828. The Emperor answer'd upon the spot, That the King of *France*, as being his Prisoner, ought not to Challenge him; That he was as much concern'd as any Man for the seizing of the Pope; That the King's Children were his Hostages, and his Embassadors knew it was not his fault they were not set at Liberty; That he never deny'd his Debt to the King of *England*; and, That the King at Arms should give him that Paper, because it was long, and he would answer to it particularly. Then *Guienne* put on his Coat of Office; *Clarencieux* the *English* King at Arms spoke much to the same effect, and the Emperor answer'd as before. After which, *Clarencieux* put on his Coat of Office, as *Guienne* had done, and gave in Writing what he had deliver'd by word of mouth. The Emperor gave his Secretary strict charge, That the Kings at Arms should be taken care of, and no Affront offer'd them. On the 27th of *January*, the Secretary sent for the said Kings at Arms, and deliver'd to each of them his Answer in Writing; being, as to the substance, to the same effect as what the Emperor said by word of mouth; only recriminating the violation of the Peace on them, vindicating the Emperor's Proceedings more at large; and shewing that the Pope

ing actually then at Liberty, the main pretence of the Challenge was fallen to the Ground.

10. It was before mention'd that when the Emperor and King of *France* parted after the Treaty of *Madrid*, his Imperial Majesty told the most Christian King, that if he did not perform what was agreed between them, he would declare he had done *Lajchement* and *Meschantement*, that is, *Falsely* and *Folly*, which words accordingly the Emperor spoke to the *French* Ambassador at *Granada*, bidding him acquaint his Master with them, that since he was not as good as his Word, he might see the Emperor was. Now when the King at Arms deliver'd the Challenge at *Burgos*, his Imperial Majesty taking him aside, bid him know of his Master whether his Ambassador had acquainted him what he said to him at *Granada*. The King at Arms giving the Ambassador Notice of what the Emperor said, he writ a Letter to the Emperor, desiring his Imperial Majesty to give him these words under his Hand, because, tho' he had sent an account of them into *France*, he could not at present so precisely remember them, as he ought, which he could not so well answer to his Master, and therefore begg'd to have them in Writing. The Emperor accordingly return'd an Answer with those very words, which having been made known to the King of *France* by *Guienne* his King at Arms, he sent back the said *Guienne* into *Spain*, who came to *Monzon*, where the Emperor then was on the 7th of *June* 1528, and the next Day being introduc'd before his Imperial Majesty, deliver'd into his Hands a written Challenge, in which the King of *France* gave the Emperor the Lye, and demanded Field of Battle to fight him Hand to Hand. Then *Guienne* went out, and returning, deliver'd another Writing to the Secretary of State, containing a Vindication of King *Francis* his proceedings, and charging all the Faults before mention'd on the Emperor, much to the same purport, as we have before seen, mention'd on occasion of these Disputes. *Guienne* having deliver'd these Papers, would charge himself with no Answer, saying, he had orders to receive none, unless it were the Em-

peror's security for the Field of Battle, to which the Emperor said, he would not refuse the Combat, but that it belong'd not to the King of *France* to prescribe him Laws, and therefore he would send an Answer by a King at Armes of his own, which said, he dismiss'd *Guienne*, who was safely reconducted back to the Frontiers, and generously treated as he own'd himself.

11. Then the Emperor order'd *Burgundy* his King at Arms with all possible speed to repair to the presence of *Francis* King of *France*, and deliver to him a Writing, wherein he charges that King again with all his breach of Faith, repeats the afore-mention'd Words, that he had done *Laschement* and *Mesbehavior*, and appoints the middle of the River which parts *Spain* and *France* between *Fuenterabia* and *Andaye*, where the King was exchang'd for his two Sons, as the fittest place for their Combat, the Weapons to be appointed and security on both sides to be given when they are nearer together. Besides this, *Burgundy* was charg'd with a Paper in Answer to that deliver'd by *Guienne* to his Imperial Majesty's Secretary, which he in like manner was to deliver to the Secretary of *France*, being like that, nothing but Justification and Recrimination, whereof we have had too much already. *Burgundy* waited at *Fuenterabia* fifty Days for his safe Conduct, and having at last receiv'd it, set forwards and came to *Estampes*, about 14 Leagues from *Paris*, on the 2d of *September*, and was there met by *Guienne* King at Arms, who told him the King was then abroad a Hunting, conducted him to *Longemeau*, but would not suffer him to go to *Paris* till the 9th of *September*, when he was conducted to that City. Having there obtain'd admittance to the King's presence, His Majesty would not allow him to speak or read the Emperor's Answer, but still pressing for the security for Combat, which *Burgundy* still offer'd to produce, without hearing what *Burgundy* had to say, went away and left him, and tho' the King at Arms us'd the proper means to be hear'd, after that the King never would, and so he return'd into *Spain* as he came. *Burgundy* having made his report before the

the Council of *Castile*, it was there resolv'd, That the Emperor had done as became a Prince and a Gentleman, and therefore was not oblig'd to take any further notice of the Challenge, since the King of *France* had not acted as became him, refusing to bear the King at Arms, who carry'd the Security he demanded, and an Answer to all his Papers. Copies of all the whole proceeding were sent by the Emperor, together with his Letters, and the Resolution of the Council of *Castile* to all the Grandees, Prelates, and Cities of *Spain*, to acquaint them with the Fairness of His Majesty's Proceedings. And here let us conclude this Chapter, referring the Reader who desires to see these Proceedings at full length taken from original Records, to the last Book of *Samuel's* first Volume, whereof they fill the greatest part, and are too tedious for this Work. This Year also dy'd the Emperor's Son *John*, an Infant, and the Emperor held the Cortes at *Madrid*, where Prince *Philip* was Sworn Heir of *Castile*.

 C H A P. XVII.

The French Invade Italy with a mighty Army; lay Siege to Naples, where most of them Perish; they are no more Successful in Lombardy; Genoa made a free State; Articles of Peace concluded on between the Emperor and France.

BY what has been said, the Reader may judge, who it was that refus'd the Combat, whether King *Francis* the Challenger, or the Emperor who was Challeng'd. In fine, they never met in their Persons, nor was it fit they should; but their Armies fought their Quarrel with the utmost Bravery. *Louis*, under pretence of Rescuing the Pope, was bent upon the Conquest of the Kingdom of *Naples*; when he march'd, taking *Aquila* in his way, and leaving *Rome*. Many places sent him the Keys before he came near, and the whole Kingdom must have follow'd the Example, had not the Pope understand supply'd the *Spaniards* and *Germans* with Money,

which encourag'd them to take the Field on the 17th of February 1628. Their whole Force was but 12000 Foot, and scarce 1500 Horfe; the rest being either gone Home with their Booty, or Dead of the Plague. They march'd towards *Troya* in *Apulia*, that Country being proper for them to subsist till they had gather'd a better Army. *Laurec* came and encamp't within four miles of them, and then drew nearer, till withing Cannon-shot, where he routed 300 Imperial Horfe, and offer'd a Battle to the whole Army, which it had been a madness to accept of, the *Imperialists* being then but 21000 strong, and the *French* 60000, as the *Spaniards* report; but the *French* Authors do not mention above 35000. The Numbers being so unequal, the Imperial Camp broke up by Night without beat of Drum, and march'd away to meet *D. Hugo de Maccada* with the Forces under his Command; which done, they retir'd to *Naples*, whether they came about the middle of *March*, and took the necessary Precautions for the security of that Place. No sooner were they remov'd, but all the Province of *Apulia*, except *Manfredonia* and the City of *Melfi*, in which was the Prince of that Name with 2000 *Italians*, submitted to the *French*; who laying Siege to *Melfi*, after a vigorous Defence made by the Besieged, had it surrender'd to them.

Naples Besieged by the French 2. Almost all the Kingdom, except some few strong Holds, having submitted to the *French*, *Laurec* intending to put an end to the War, sat down before the City of *Naples* with his whole Army, now much increas'd by the addition of the *Italians* that came in daily. The first Day they Invested the Place, *D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga* General of the Horfe, in a Skirmish, routed 800 of them, and carry'd 200 Prisoners into the City. *Laurec* having planted his Cannon, labour'd daily to Streighten the Besieged, that no Supplies might come to them, hoping to Starve the Place, there being no probability of taking it by force, whilst so many brave Commanders were in it. To shut up the City closer, the Gallies of *France* and *Venice* were order'd to scour the Coast, and *Philipin Doria* Lieutenant to *Andrew Doria*, was appointed

appointed to lie at *Salerno* with eight Gallies. Thus the Emperor's Affairs in *Italy* were reduc'd to the lowest ebb they were ever at; and the worse, because his own Commanders were at variance, the Prince of *Orange* claiming the supreme Command as the Emperor's Lieutenant, and *D. Hugo de Moncada* as Viceroy of *Naples*. Things being in this posture, *D. Hugo de Moncada*, with the Consent and Advice of the other General Officers, fitted out six Gallies he had and two Brigantines, thinking to surprize *Philipin* at *Salerno*; but he having notice of the Design, was upon his Guard. Nevertheless *D. Hugo* attackt him with an undaunted Resolution; but two of his Gallies did not obey Orders, keeping aloof, and yet the Fight continu'd doubtful for a great while, till three Gallies *Philipin* had order'd to keep off as a reserve came in, and falling afresh on those that were before tir'd, the two Imperial Gallies before mention'd not coming to the Relief of their Company, the four that had engag'd were overpower'd, *D. Hugo* kill'd, and all of them taken, only the two that kept off fled. Thus dy'd this Gentleman, who had serv'd with much Bravery in several Wars, but for the most part prov'd unfortunate, yet preferr'd by the Emperor, and much in his Favour. Besides him, several Persons of note were kill'd in this Action, and many brave Soldiers, in all to the number of 700. The Marquis *del Gasto* and some others were taken, and of the Enemy about 500 were slain. This Loss for the present caus'd a great Consternation in *Naples*, and sunk the Emperor's Affairs, yet it produc'd some good; for *D. Hugo* being Dead, the Prince of *Orange* had no body to oppose him, and his Orders were without controule: Besides, the Imprisonment of the Marquis *del Gasto* and others, occasion'd the bringing over of *Andrew Doria* to the Emperor's Service. Provisions being spent in the City, *D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga* was sent out with 500 light Horse, 200 Men at Arms, and 5000 Foot, to fetch in Supplies. He advanc'd by Night to a plain eight Miles from *Naples*, through a very narrow pass between two Mountains. Here he receiv'd advice, that the Enemy was marching towards him; and

and considering that the loss of those Men with him would be the loss of the City, he founded a Retreat, which was perform'd with such confusion, that the pass being choak'd with the Foot and Carriages, the French had time to come up and kill about 300 Men, taking 1300 Waggons; and the Slaughter had been much greater, but that the French did not pursue their Advantage, being stop't by 1000 Spanish Foot, who gaining the Hills over the Pass, fir'd down, and by that means gain'd time for themselves and their Companions to get safe to *Naples*.

*Actions in
Lombardy*

3. *Antony de Leyva*, who we said was left at *Milan*, with very small Forces perform'd several notable Actions; and among the rest, marching from *Milan* with all his Troops, took *Pavia* by Storm. That done, he possess'd himself of *Biagrassa*, and then passing the River *Adda*, mov'd towards *Bergamo* a City of the *Venetians*, to favour the approach of the Duke of *Brunswick*, who join'd him there with 15000 *German* Foot, and 800 Men at Arms, but he was too much encumber'd with a Train of Artillery. They with their joint Forces laid Siege to *Lody*, which Duke *Sforcia* had so well Fortify'd and Garison'd, that they were forc'd to break up without it, being drove from before it by the Plague which rag'd in the Army, especially among the *Germans*, and by their Deserting, as well for fear of the Plague, as for want of Pay. Thus these *German* Auxiliaries return'd home at such time as the Earl of *S. Paul* came into *Lombardy* with 10000 *Swiss*, and 1000 Men at Arms, having Orders, in case the *Germans* march'd towards *Naples*, to keep upon their Heels, and second *Laurec*, but if they staid in *Lombardy*, to join the Duke of *Urbino* General of the *Venetians* against *Antony de Leyva*. The *Germans* being gone, *Leyva* put *Novara* and *Pavia* into the best posture of Defence he could, and return'd himself to *Milan*. The *French* and *Venetians* being now Masters of the Field, soon took *Biagrassa*, *Pavia*, and *Novara*, but not the Castle of the latter.

4. As *Philipin Doria* was refitting his Gallies after the late Fight, a Messenger come to him from *Manfred de Laurec*, demanding the Prisoners he had taken, whereto

whereat he was much offended, and answer'd, That being only Lieutenant to his Uncle, could not deliver up such Prisoners of Note, without his order, and therefore they must demand them of him. Here began his distaste to the French, and the Imperialists taking hold of the opportunity, made Overtures to him and his Uncle to come over to the Emperor's Service, which they afterwards did: But in the mean time Philipin carry'd away his Prisoners to Genoa, for fear the Venetian and French Fleets being now at hand, they might force them from him, or offer some other Affront. Peter Lando coming upon the Coast of Apulia with 20 Venetian Gallies, Mala, Polignano, Monopoli, and Brindez surrender'd to him, and he forbore attacking the Castle of the latter, to go away to lie before Naples, together with the Fleets of France and Genoa. He guarded all the Coast from Cape Minerva to Gaeta, and hang'd up at the Yard-arm any Country-people he catch'd the second time carrying Provisions into the City. Yet this did not deter the Peasants from carrying some Refreshments, for which they were well paid; and a famous Man among the Banditti's sent in several Supplies of Cattle, for which he was ill rewarded by a Spanish Governor of Capua, who hang'd him notwithstanding his Pardon. It was now the Month of June, and Naples had been thre Months Besieg'd, when Provisions began to grow so scarce that a Pullet was worth a Ducat, an Egg a Royal, and other things proportionably, and as Famine seldom comes alone, abundance of People sicken'd and dy'd in the City. At the same time a pestilential Disease rag'd in the French Camp, and such Numbers were carry'd off, that the Army visibly grew thin, and those who surviv'd began to slacken in their Courage. A Mutiny in the City between the Spaniards and the Germans had like to have ruin'd all; for they were just ready to give one another Battle, had not some Persons of Note interpos'd and pacify'd them.

5. After that Storm was blown over, 800 Spanish Sally from Foot and 400 Horse made a Sally upon 6000 of the Naples. Army, who were convoying a sum of Money, and some Persons of Quality newly landed from France,

France, into the Camp, and put them to flight, killing about 1000, and taking almost as many Prisoners. From this time forward the Besieg'd began to be more successful, taking several Convoys of Provisions, as they were coming to the Enemies Camp, where vast numbers Dy'd of the Plague, *Andrew Doria* being offended at the King of France because he pay'd not his Pension, refus'd to restore *Savona* to the *Genoefes*, as he had promis'd to do, and demanded his Prisoners, made his complaint to the *Marquis del Gasto* and others of them, through whose means he enter'd into the Emperor's Service, having waited till the time for which he was engag'd to France, was expir'd, he set up *S. George* his Colours, which are those of *Genoa*, and soon after went over openly to the Emperor's Service. The Articles granted him were, That *Genoa* should be a free State, and possess'd of *Savona*. That he should be the Emperor's Captain General. That he should be allow'd 6000 Ducats a Year for every Gallie he had. That the *Genoefes* should be allow'd to Trade throughout all His Majesty's Dominions. Afterwards he was made Prince of *Melfi*. Having thus chang'd party he Sail'd away to *Isola* with his Prisoners, where the *French* and *Venetian* Gallies came in sight of him, but durst not approach because of the Castle; soon after he pursu'd the *French* in their return home, and took from them some Vessels loaded with Horses, Cannon, and other Warlike Stores. Fortune began now to favour the Emperor, for the Pestilence had so weaken'd the *French* Army before *Naples*, that of 50000 who came before it, there were scarce 1000 sound Men left. Here began that contagious Distemper never before heard of, but now sufficiently known, and commonly call'd the *French-Pox*. *Lautrec* himself, and several other Persons of Note, Dy'd, so that the small remains of that mighty Army broke up from before *Naples* by Night, and march'd away, yet not so secretly but that the Besieg'd understanding it, pursu'd and took many of them, among whom was the unfortunate Count *Peter* of *Navarre*, of whom more hereafter. Such as escap'd fortify'd them.

Doria
comes over
to the Em-
peror.

themselves, with their General the Marquis of Saluzes, in *Aversa*, where they were Besieg'd by the Imperialists, and surrendr'd upon these Conditions, That the Marquis, and all other Commanders, except *Guido Rangon*, should remain Prisoners. That the *French* and *Venetians* restore all places taken by them in the Kingdom of *Naples*. That all Soldiers march away without Arms or Horses. That the Officers have Mules and Horses allow'd them to ride on. That the *Italians* do not serve against the Emperor in six Months. After this happy Success the Prince of *Orange*, and other Imperial Generals, in a short time recover'd all that had been lost in the Kingdom of *Naples*, except some few Towns in *Apulia*, and on the *Adriatick* Shore, which the *Venetians* had fortify'd and supply'd by Sea, and which prov'd very troublesome to reduce.

6. *Andrew Doria*, now Captain General of the Sea for the Emperor, pursu'd the *French*, as was said before, and took from them two Gallies, two Ships, and some other Vessels loaden with Corn. Then being of Intelligence with some principal Men in *Genoa*, where the Plague had consum'd the *French* Garrison, he Landed 500 Men, and proclaiming Liberty, with the assistance of the Inhabitants, drove *Trivulce*, the *French* Governor, with the small remains of his Men into the Castle. The Earl of *S. Paul*, the *French* King's General in *Lombardy*, being inform'd of the loss of *Genoa*, halted thither with 2000 Men, hoping to recover it, but was disappointed, and so return'd to Winter at *Alexandria*. The *Genoefes* kept the Castle so streightly Besieg'd, that *Trivulce* was forc'd to surrender it up to them, and so they hook off the *French* Yoak, and have continu'd a free State to this Day. Soon after 2000 *Spaniards* newly sent over, arriv'd at *Genoa*, and there being no need of them in that City, *Antony de Leyva* sent *Lewis Barbiano* to conduct them to him, which he did, marching them thro' by ways over the tops of Mountains, where they suffer'd very much want, and many were knock'd on the Head by the Mountain People, who hated the *Spaniards* ever since they plunder'd *Genoa*. The reason of marching that way was

was to escape the *French* and *Venetians*, who lay in wait for them, but were disappointed, they taking a great compass through the Lands of the Church, and coming out upon the *Po*, which they crossed without opposition, and joyn'd *Antony de Leyva*. The *French* having taken *Mortara*, and *Philip Ferruccio* quitted *Novari*, the *Spaniards* had only two Castles left in their possession, beyond the *River Tesein*. The Confederates therefore resolv'd to divide their Forces to cut off all Provisions from *Milano* and so to reduce *Antony de Leyva* by Famine. The *Venetians* were to post themselves at *Casal*, and *Duke Sforcia's* Troops at *Pavia* and *Vegeven*; but the Earl of *S. Paul* with the *French* Troops, resolv'd to march away to recover *Genoa*, and in order to it, took his way to *Landriano*, where, sending away the Baggage and the Artillery in the Van, he staid long behind with the main Body and Rear. *Antony de Leyva* understanding he was still at *Landriano*, part of his Forces gone before, and the *Venetians* parted from him, set out that Night with about 10000 Men from *Milan*, and marching all Night at break of Day surpriz'd the Enemy, who expected no such Salutation, and not giving them time to range their Battle, gain'd a compleat Victory, without any Loss or Danger, *Leyva* being all the while carry'd in a Chair because he was Lambe. The Earl of *S. Paul*, and many other Persons of Note, were taken, as were abundance of Horses, Cattle, Waggon, Baggage, Artillery, and Colours. This Victory gain'd *Antony de Leyva* great Reputation, which indeed he deserv'd for many more notable Exploits he perform'd; it was gain'd on the 21st of *June* 1529.

Peter of
Navarres
Death.

7. Count *Peter of Navarre*, who, as we said before, was taken at *Aversa*, being committed Prisoner to *Castelnovo* which he had formerly taken, was there one Morning found Dead in his Bed, and some would have it that he was stifled with his Bed-cloath by the Governor of the Castle, to prevent his being Beheaded, as the Emperor had order'd. This Count *Peter* was well Born in *Navarre*, when young took to the Sea, was afterwards Servant to Cardinal *John of Aragon*.

Aragon, then a Souldier under *Peter Montano*, General of the *Florentines*, who gave him 30 Ducats a Month, and after that 60 in the Quality of an *Ingénieur*: Next he turn'd *Privatier*, then went to *Naples* and serv'd against the *French* under the Great Captain, where he gain'd such Reputation, that he was made Earl of *Oliveto*. The rest of his Actions, and his going over to serve the *French*, have been mention'd in their proper places, so that it will be needless to make a Repetition, but so much I thought good to say upon the Death of this brave Commander.

§. Having done for this time in *Italy*, let us look back to other parts. On the 19th of *April* 1528, the Court remov'd from *Burgos* to *Madrid*; where Prince *Philip* was sworn Heir to the Crown, and the Cortes were held. In *August* the Emperor order'd the Diet to meet at *Spire*, appointing his Brother *Ferdinand* King of *Bohemia*, *Fredrick* Count *Palatine*, *William* of *Bavaria*, and the Archbishop of *Trent* and *Hildesheim* his Vicars, or Commissioners. The Imperial Majesty having resolv'd to go over into *Italy* to be Crown'd, in *March* 1529, set forward from *Toledo* towards *Aragon*, attended by all the Nobility of *Castile*, leaving the Empress to Govern those Kingdoms, and two Wills, one in *Latin*, and the other in *Spanish*, in the Custody of D. *John de Tavera*, Archbishop of *Santiago*, and President of *Castile*. In *January*, before his Departure, the Emperor publish'd a Letter to acquaint his Subjects of *Castile* with his intended Journey, which was in order to be Crown'd, to settle the Affairs of *Italy* that requir'd his Presence, and to give Orders how to oppose the *Turk*, who was reported to be invited into *Germany* by the *French*, yet he said he would make some stay at *Barcelona*, and in case things might be dispos'd for the Benefit of *Christendom*, without his Presence in other Parts, would return from thence into *Castile*; but whether he went over into *Italy* or no, his stay should be but short. The vast Expences of the War having exhausted the Revenue, and there being great need of Money to defray the charge of the Emperor's Journey and his Coronation, he Mor-

1529.

gag'd the *Molucco* Islands to King *John III.* of *Portugal* for 350000 Ducats. As soon as he was gone the *Empress* fell sick of an *Ague* and made her Will, but it pleas'd God she recover'd, but miscarry'd.

Emperors
Pope make
Peace.

9. The News being spread abroad in *Italy*, that the *Emperor* was coming over to be Crown'd with a mighty Fleet, and 8000 *Spanish* Foot, and the *Pope* being afflicted because the *Confederates* slighted him, he resolv'd to accommodate matters with the *Emperor*, and accordingly they agreed upon the following Articles, That there be a perpetual Peace between them. That the *Imperial* Army have free Passage out of *Naples* through the *Pope's* Dominions. That the *Emperor* give his Daughter *Margaret* in Marriage to *Alexander de Medicis*, and withdraw the State of *Florence* erected into a Dukedom. That the *Emperor* restore to the *Pope* all that had been taken from him. That the *Pope* invest the *Emperor* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, he paying a white Gennet as an acknowledgement. That Duke *Stefania* have Justice done him, &c. The *Emperor* swore the observation of this Treaty at *Barcelona* on the 29th of *June* 1529, and the *Pope* granted a Bull in the best form that could be, to enable his *Imperial* Majesty to hold the Kingdom of *Naples*, which was before incompatible with the Empire.

How the
French
Princes
were kept.

10. It has been said before, that the two young Princes of *France*, who were Hostages for the King their Father, were deliver'd to the Custody of the Constable of *Castile*, and kept at *Vallalpando*, where their *French* Servants were taken from them and committed Prisoners to the fortrefs of *Pedraza de Sierra*, for which I cannot assign the certain reason, but doubtless there must be a sufficient cause, if they had not been so treated; perhaps these Servants might contrive how to convey the Princes away, yet we must not insist on this, because it is only Conjecture. In *November* 1529, the *Emperor* gave Orders to the Constable to allow their Preceptors to have access to the Princes for their Instruction, but always in the presence of some trusty Person. A Letter was intercepted from the Servants to the King of *France*, complaining of their hard Usage, and implor-

restoring his Compassion to exchange them for o-
 f the Emperor's Subjects. From *Villalpando*
 Princes were remov'd to *Berlanga*, and thence to
Palaza de la Sierra, being always maintain'd at
 the charge of the Constable and his Brother, for
 with neither the Emperor nor King of *France* ever
 made any Satisfaction. When the Treaty of Peace
 was set a foot at *Cambray*, the King's Mother having
 obtain'd the Emperor's Pass, sent a Messenger into
 to visit her Grand-Children, and see what
 condition they were in. This Messenger gave in a
 Relation in Writing, where, after an account
 of his Journey, he says, he found the Princes in a
 Room that had but little Light, without any Hang-
 ings, where they sat on Stone Seats made in the
 Wall at a Window, secur'd within and without
 with strong Iron Barrs, the Wall eight Foot thick,
 and the Window so high they could scarce see the
 Sun. Their Cloaths, he says, were very mean and
 old, and they had quite forgot their *French*. Besides
 he mentions many other Circumstances to show
 how hardly they were us'd, too long for this place.
 The King of *France* perceiving all his hopes of rescu-
 ing the Princes by force had fail'd him, thought fit
 to try what might be done by fair means, and
 therefore sent his Mother into *Picardy* to treat with
Margaret Governess of the Low-Countries, and the
 Emperor's Aunt, and both of them being furnish'd
 with sufficient Commissions from the two Monar-
 ches, concluded a Peace more advantagious to *France*
 than to its Allies, who loudly exclaim'd against that
 King's want of Faith. The Treaty was carry'd on
 at *Cambray*, the Pope's Nuncio being Mediator, and
 concluded on the last Day of *July*. Afterwards
 on the 4th of *August* the King of *England* was com-
 prehended in the Peace, and on the 5th the Ladies
Margaret and *Lewsa*, and the *English* Embassador
 swore the observation of the Peace in our Ladies
 Church, where the Dean proclaim'd it; *Te Deum*
 was sung, and the Kings at Arms of all three Princes
 scatter'd Money, saying, *Larges, Larges*. On the 9th
 the King came to *Cambray*, swore the observation of
 the Peace, and there was a great rejoicing on both
 sides. The Articles agreed upon were in substance
 as follows.

R

II. Ar.

Articles between the Emperor and King of France, concluded on at Cambray, on the 5th of August 1528.

I. That there be a firm and perpetual Peace between the two Monarches.

II. That the Treaty of *Madrid* remain in full force, excepting only the 3d, 4th, 11th, and 14th Articles thereof, which relate to *Burgundy* and its dependencies, to which the Emperor's Title shall remain, notwithstanding it be restor'd by the present Treaty.

III. That the King shall pay to the Emperor two Millions of Crowns in Gold for the Ransome of his Sons, whereof 1200000 down in Money, 400000 in Lands in the Low-Countries, and the other 400000 to discharge the Debt to the King of *England*.

IV. That the King of *France* shall within six Weeks after signing this Capitulation, recall all his Forces out of *Italy*.

V. That the said King shall restore the Town and Castle of *Hedin*.

VI. The said King releases all claim to any Homage for the Earldoms of *Flanders* and *Artois*, and all his pretensions to *Arras*, *Tournay*, *Tournessis*, *S. Amand*, *Marbaisne*, and the Towns of *Lisse*, *Dinoy*, and *Orchus*, &c.

VII. That the People of *Artois* be exempt from any Tribute, or Duty payable to the Kings of *France*.

VIII. The Emperor on his part renounces all claim to any Lands in the possession of the King of *France*, particularly the Towns and Castellanies of *Peronne*, *Montdidier*, and the Counties of *Bolognois*, *Guines* and *Ponthieu*; and all Lordships on the River *Somme*.

IX. That all proceses lying before the Parliament of *Paris*, or other Courts there concerning Lands in *Flanders*, shall be remitted to the Emperor's Council of *Flanders* to be decided there.

X. That Judgments given against the Emperor's Subjects be not put in Execution.

XI. The King of *France* shall in six Weeks restore to the Emperor any Towns or Castles which are in his Hands in the State of *Milan*, as also the Earldom of *Aste*, and the Town of *Barleta*, and all others he is possess'd of in the Kingdom of *Naples*, and likewise all that was taken in Gallies at *Portofino*, or the full value of it.

XII. As for the Duke of *Angoulesmes* residing with the Emperor, mention'd in the Capitulation of *Madrid*, he shall be left to the Will of the King.

XIII. As for the mutual assistance mention'd in the Treaty, it shall extend only to the defence of the Possessions of each, and he who desires it shall bear the Charge.

XIV. The King of France shall Marry the Lady *Ellenor*, was agreed in the Treaty of *Madrid*, and the 200000 *Escus* for her Portion be paid at twice, with six Months interval between each payment.

XV. Instead of what was stipulated by the Treaty of *Madrid*, the King shall furnish the Emperor with 12 Gallies, of his best Ships, and 4 Galeons, all well mann'd and fitted to Attend His Imperial Majesty over in his passage to *Italy*.

XVI. All Estates confiscate since the War, to return to their Owners, but no account to be given of Arrears of *Interest*.

XVII. That all Privileges granted on both sides to the Subjects of each party, shall remain in full force.

XVIII. All Prisoners of War shall be set at Liberty without Ransom, except such of His Imperial Majesty's Subjects as have serv'd against him, and such persons who had been in this Capitulation agreed upon their Ransom.

XIX. That the King shall no way Relieve and Support *Robert de la Marche*, or any that shall attempt upon the *Countie* and Dukedom of *Bouillon*.

XX. That the Heirs of the Duke of *Bourbon* be restor'd to his Estate, and he to his Honour, and so of all others that follow'd him into the Emperor's Service.

XXI. That *Philibert de Chaalons* be restor'd to his Principality of *Orange*, as also the Dutcheffs Dowager of *Vendome* to her Estate, and so of others there nam'd.

XXII. That in this Peace are comprehended our most Holy Father the Pope, and See Apostolick, the Kings of *England*, *Poland*, *Denmark*, and *Scotland*, &c.

XXIII. The *Florentines* to be admitted, provided they agree with the Emperor in four Months after the Ratification.

XXIV. His Imperial Majesty and the King, shall with all possible speed, ratifie and take a solemn Oath to observe this Treaty in its full extent, religiously and punctually; as also the Treaty of *Madrid*, as far as is not by this made void.

This was the substance of the principal Articles of the Treaty of *Cambray*, much too tedious to be inserted at length, and containing nothing more that is material, but only the formality of words, repetitions, and some Articles concerning private persons.

After the Peace was proclaim'd, the Empress at the request of Queen *Ellenor*, order'd the French Servants to the two Princes, who were kept prisoners, to have the liberty of the Town, their Treasurer to be permitted to go into *Italy*, and them to be well Cloath'd, their Lodgings hand-somely furnish'd, and a French Gentleman that was going to *Italy* to be with them. *The young Princes better treated.*

them, to have free admittance, which was accordingly perform'd, and they gave the King their Father an account of it by Letter. After this, the Emperor sent orders, that the Servants should be restor'd to the young Princes, to do their duty and attend them, and they accordingly came to them on the last Day of the Year 1529. By this Treaty plainly appears, the Emperor was ever inclinable to Peace, because he mended the Conditions for France, when that Kingdom was exhausted, having lost three Armies in Italy, and sustain'd such Damages as made it in no Condition to Oppose His Imperial Majesty, who was then Successful in all parts. Yet *Jovius* in spite to the Emperor, who he us'd to prefer him beyond what he deserv'd, never has done Railing at him and the *Spaniards*, being a most partial Man for the *French*, because that King allow'd him a pension of 1000 Ducats a Year, for which he promis'd to make him Immortal. Before the King of France went from *Cambry*, he sent for the Embassadors of the Confederates, and after excusing himself for making the Peace, which he had been necessitated to, as being the only means to recover his Children, he assur'd them that he would always continue in their Alliance. And so it seems he design'd; for when he had got his Sons, he never thought of performing any one of the Articles he had so solemnly Swore to, as we shall soon see; for this was King *Francis* his fault, that he made no account of Words or Oaths. But here let us leave him to begin another Chapter.

C H A P. XVIII.

The Emperor goes over into Italy, concludes a Peace with the Venetians, restores the Duke of Milan, the Ceremony of his Coronation, Actions of the great Prince Barbaruffa.

The Emperor in Italy. 1. **T**HE Emperor having gather'd a mighty Fleet of all sorts of Vessels in the Port of *Barcelona*, and stipp'd 8000 *Spanish* Foot aboard it, set sail from that Harbour on the 28th of *July* 1529, attended by a numerous Train of Persons of Quality, and had a good passage to *Genoa*, where he landed the 12th of *August*, and was receiv'd with great demonstrations of Joy by those people who expected his coming, as did three Legates of the Popes. With them was *Alexander de Medicis*, who was to be the Emperor's Son-in-law. The Emperor was Lodg'd in the Palace of the Seignior,

signiory, and *Andrew Doria* prevail'd to have all his Reti-
 lodg'd gratis in the Citizens Houses, according to the
 custom of *Spain*. The people were much pleas'd with the
 sight of the Emperor, because he was of a graceful Presence
 and obliging Aspect, whereas he had been represented to
 them, like some of the Barbarous fierce *Lins* or *Goths*,
 who formerly ravag'd *Italy*. Here an Express brought the
 News of the Peace concluded at *Cambray*, which His Imperial
 Majesty tatif'd, as appears by the original Instrument kept
 at *Simancas*. He also receiv'd Intelligence, that Count *Fur-*
berg was marching into *Italy* with 8000 *German* Foot,
 1000 Horse, and a Train of Artillery for the Emperor's
 service, which much alarm'd the Confederates, finding
 themselves forsaken by the King of *France*, and therefore
 all the Princes and States of *Italy*, except the *Venetians* and
Florentines, sent to Congratulate his safe Arrival. The *Ho-*
linese however sent four Embassadors to make Overtures
 of Peace, but they had orders not to see the Pope. These
 Embassadors begg'd the Emperor's pardon for having join'd
 with the *French*, and promis'd to behave themselves better
 for the future, provided His Majesty would preserve them
 their Liberty, for which they were resolv'd to venture their
 Lives and Fortunes, and all that was dear to them. The
 Emperor as resolutely answer'd, That they had deserv'd to
 forfeit their Liberty for siding with his Enemies; but yet
 he was willing to shew Mercy in pardoning their Treason,
 upon condition they restor'd the Pope and his Family to
 their Rights in the City; and that the best way to obtain
 his Favour, was to make Peace with his Holiness, and use
 him as their Mediator, for he was resolv'd to put him in
 possession of his Right, either by fair means or foul.

2. Being ready to set forward to meet his Holiness, the
 Emperor sent part of the *Spaniards* he brought over with
 him to *Milan*, and kept the rest with him. He took the
 way of *Plasencia*; and being ready to enter upon the patri-
 mony of the Church, was met by three Legates of the Pope,
 who tender'd him an Oath, the purport whereof was, That
 he would never offer violence to the Church as to its Liber-
 ties; which he took, with a protestation that it should no
 way prejudice his right to the Cities of *Parma* and *Plasencia*,
 no formerly Dependencies of the Duchy of *Milan*, which had
 never been a feoff of the Empire. *Antony de Leyva* having
 been sent for to come to *Plasencia*, was well receiv'd
 by the Emperor, who would not give ear to his Advice
 carrying on the War in *Italy*, being fully bent upon
 to leave that Country in quiet, that he might thence go into
Germany, to settle the Affairs of Religion, much disturb'd
 by *Luthe*, and make head against the *Turks* who had laid
 Siege

Siege to *Vienna* with 200000 Men, after ravaging all *Hungary*; and tho' repuls'd, threatned to return the next Year with a greater Force. The *Lutherans* making their advantage of this power of the *Infidels*, sent their Deputies to the Emperor with a Protestation they had form'd, at which he was highly offended, order'd them to be turn'd out of his Court, and not to stay in *Italy*, which blew the Coales that afterwards set all *Germany* in a Flame. *Antony de Leyva* was sent back to the State of *Milan*, where he took *Pavia* without any opposition; and then leaving *Lexis Barbiano* with part of the Army to Command in that Dukedom, return'd with the rest of his Forces to the Emperor, to assist at his Coronation.

Peace with
the Venetians.

3. The *Venetians*, lest they alone should be thought to obstruct the Peace of *Italy*, sent Embassadors to treat with the Emperor, who at the request of the Pope agreed with them upon these Terms, That they restore to the Pope the Cities of *Ravenna*, and *Cecena*, and he pardon them all past Offences: That they restore to his Majesty all the places they hold in the Kingdom of *Naples*, pay 2000 Pounds of Gold formerly due, and recall all that are banish'd for siding with the Emperor: That they pay 500000 Ducats to the Emperor within ten Months, and the remainder within the Year: That the Duke of *Urbino* their General be comprehended in this Treaty: That they pardon Count *Gambara*: That there be a free Trade, and Pyrates suppress'd: That the *Venetians* enjoy all their Dominions peaceably: That the *Venetians* who have serv'd the Emperor, and have liberty to return Home, be not restor'd to their Estates, unless the Seigniors think fit: That the Emperor and *Venetians* use all their power to settle a lasting Peace in *Italy*: That 6000 Foot, 800 Men at Arms, and as many light Horse, be always in *Lombardy* for the safety of Duke *Sforzia*: That the *Venetians* upon occasion bring a like Force into the Field for their common Security: That if any person invade the Kingdom of *Naples*, the *Venetians* assist the Emperor with fifteen Gallies: That the Friends and Allies of both Parties be admitted into this Treaty, particularly the Duke of *Ferrara*, provided he be restor'd to the Pope's Favour. This Treaty being sign'd and ratify'd, Duke *Sforzia* was restor'd to his Dukedom, and the Emperor to shew his Favour, gave him to Wife *Christierna* the Daughter of *Christiern* the 2d King of *Denmark* by the Emperor's Sister, the young Lady being but ten Years Old. The *Venetians* restor'd the Towns they had taken from the Pope and Emperor, and thus by submitting they obtain'd Peace, which they could never have done by force. Now only *Florence* stood out, of which we shall speak in its place.

4. His

CHARLES the Vth. Emperor, &c. 247

His Imperial Majesty understanding the Pope was come *Emperor at* *Bologna*, set out from *Plafencia*, was by the way nobly en- *Bologna*.
 ter'd at *Rezzo* and *Modena* by the Duke of *Ferrara*, and
 arriv'd at *Castilfranco*, 15 Miles from *Bologna*, whence he re-
 tir'd to a Monastery within two Miles of that City. That
 Day 24 Cardinals sent from the Pope, came to receive him,
 and the next Day the Senate and Gentry of *Bologna* attended
 him richly Habited and with much Musick. The Emperor
 made his entry into *Bologna* about the latter end of *October* ;
 He was all in Armour except his Head: Before him march'd
 four Troops of Horse, then the *Spanish* Foot, over his Head
 was carry'd a rich Canopy, about his Horse all the Mouth
 of *Bologna* a Foot, then the Magistrates. At the City Gate
 was the Bishop with his Clergy singing *Te Deum*. After his
 Imperial Majesty, follow'd the Gentry that came with him
 out of *Spain*, then the Imperial Standard or Eagle, and then
 the *Spanish*, *Flemish*, and *German* Guards of Horse. On the
 Emperors sides rode two Gentlemen strewing Money all the
 way. This procession went directly to the Cathedral,
 at the Gate whereof a Scaffold was erected, ascending by
 Steps, on which sat the Cardinals and Prelates, and at
 the top, in a Chair of State, the Pope in his Pontifical Habit,
 with his Tiara on his Head. The Emperor being come to the
 Scaffold, the Grandees of *Spain* ran to help him to alight,
 and then two Cardinals from above conducted him up.
 Thus met the two greatest Princes in the World, and the
 Emperor being come up to the Pope fell on his Knees
 and kiss'd his Foot: The Pope lifted him up and gave him
 the Kiss of Peace; then his Imperial Majesty told him, he
 was now come as he had long wish'd, into his presence, to
 settle the Affairs of Religion, and begg'd that God would
 prosper his Intentions. His Holiness reply'd, That he had
 desir'd nothing so much as that Meeting, for which he re-
 turn'd Thanks to Almighty God, and hop'd all things
 would have a happy Issue. After some other Ceremonies,
 they went down Hand in Hand to the Church Door, where
 they parted, the Pope to his Apartment, the Emperor into
 the Church, whence he retir'd to his Lodgings being in the
 same Pallace with His Holiness, only parted by a thin Wall,
 in which was a private Door, that they two might meet by
 themselves. Thus they continu'd for some time concert-
 ing Matters of great Moment, and among the rest His Ho-
 liness obtain'd of the Emperor pardon for Duke *Sfor-*
cia restor'd
 cia, whereupon came to *Bologna*, and casting himself at the
 Emperors Feet, in a few words endeavour'd to vindicate
 himself from the aspersions laid upon him, asserting his Loyalty
 and Innocence. The Emperor gave him the Stile of Duke
 of *Milan*, and order'd a fresh Grant of it to pass, which was as

great an Action as could be, for he gave that he had long contended for with the greatest Princes, when there was none left to oppose him, and he might have dispos'd it at his pleasure. After this an universal Peace was concluded between all Christian Princes and States, namely, the Pope, Emperor, Kings of *England, France, Hungary, Portugal, Scotland, Poland* and *Denmark*, the Dukes of *Ferrara and Milan*, and the Republicks of *Venice, Genoa, Siena and Luca*, and the *Catholick Swiss Cantons*, excluding only *Florence* and the *Lutherans*. This Peace was solemnly proclaimed on the first of *January 1530*. An Express brought the News to *Bologna*, that the Emperess was deliver'd to a Prince, who was call'd *Ferdinand*, for which there was great Rejoycing, but he Dy'd a Child.

The Emperors Coronation.

5. As soon as *Francis Sforcia* was restor'd to the Dukedom of *Milan*, the Emperor order'd his Generals to draw his Forces out of *Lombardy*, and march them towards *Florence*. About this time His Majesty was taken ill of a Quinzy, but it pleas'd God he soon recover'd. It was much contested whether the Emperor should be Crown'd at *Rome* or at *Bologna*, but at length it was agreed, that at the latter, and the Emperor's Birth-day, being the Feast of *S. Marcellus*, when enter'd upon his 31st Year was the Day appointed for it. A Gallery was built from the pontifical Pallace to the Cathedral, for the Pope and Emperor to go without being hindred by the people, and it was most richly adorned. Two Days before the principal Ceremony, the Magistrate of *Morza* brought the Iron Crown, which us'd to be put on at *Milan* for the Kingdom of *Lombardy*, but was now set on his Head here. The next, which was the Coronation with the Golden Crown, was the greatest solemnity that has been seen, and being so extraordinary a Ceremony I will be somewhat particular in it, for the satisfaction of the curious Reader. Two Days before the Coronation, the Emperor was requir'd to make proof that he had been canonically elected King of the *Romans*, which being sworn by four Witnesses present at the Election, The next Day the Pope summon'd all the Cardinals to meet, and he did *Ancona* as Protector of *Spain*, presenting the above mention'd Depositions, propos'd that the Emperor might be crown'd, which was unanimously agreed to, viz. That he should the following Day receive the second Crown in the Chapel of the Apostolick Pallace, and the *Thursday* following the Golden Crown of the Empire in the Cathedral. Accordingly the next day, the Emperor, attended by all the Nobility and Prelates, set forward: Before him went the Marquis of *Astorg*, carrying the Imperial Sepper; then the Marquis of *Villona* with the Sword; then *Alexander de Medici*, the

Pope

Andrew; afterwards Duke of Florence with the Globe;
 the Marquis of Montferrat with the Crown of Lombardy;
 next came the Emperor between two Cardinal Deacons,
 after him follow'd all the Conrt. At the Chappel Door
 stood the Cardinal who was to say Mass and about
 him, attended by four Archbishops, and six Bishops in their
 Mitres and Copes. After Prayer the Chancellor of Germany
 gave the aforesaid Cardinal the Pope's Brief, requiring
 him to anoint His Majesty, which was Read. Then the
 Cardinal, after some Ceremonies, anointed him, as he knelt
 before the Altar, on the Back and Right Side. Then they
 carry'd him into the Sacristy, where, taking off his loose
 Garment and Cloak, they put him on a long Garment of
 Brocade, reaching to his Feet like a Clergy-man's Cuffock,
 with narrow Sleeves, which he Girt about him, and over
 that a Cloak of Purple Brocade, with a round Hood, all
 like a Cope, and lin'd with Ermines. In this Garb he came
 out of the Sacristy or Vestry, the Earl of Nassau Lord
 Chamberlain carrying his Train, and sat down on the
 place rais'd for that purpose, those who had brought the
 Regalia sitting at some distance after they had laid them on
 the Altar. Now came the Pope from his Apartment to the
 Chappel with his Miter and Cope, as supreme Bishop, at-
 tended by all the Cardinals and Prelates. The Emperor
 went to the Chappel Door to meet and to do him Honour,
 and His Holiness made a low bow with his Head. The
 Mass began, the Pope and Emperor took their places; af-
 ter the Epistle, four Bishops brought the Regalia to the
 Pope from the Altar, which he saying some Prayers bless'd;
 the Emperor attended by the two Cardinals, went and knelt
 down before the Pope who bless'd him, put the naked Sword
 into his right Hand saying a Prayer, then took it again and
 put it into the Scabbard; then he put the Scepter into his
 right Hand and the Globe into his Left, then set the Crown
 on his Head. This done the Emperor rose up, and mak-
 ing a bow, return'd to his Throne. The Pope began the
Agnus Dei, they both stood all the while it was sung, the
 Canon was fier'd, all sorts of Musick sounded, and the Car-
 dinal went on with the Mass. At the Offertory His Ma-
 jesty deliver'd the Regalia to the Noblemen that brought
 them, made his Offering at the Altar, return'd to his Seat,
 took the Regalia again, which, at the Elevation, he re-
 gain'd to the same Noblemen, and kneeling, continu'd so
 after the Communion. At *Pax vobis* he went up to the
 Altar, gave the Cardinal the Kiss of Peace, did the same
 to the Pope, then receiv'd the Blessed Sacrament. After
 Mass the Pope gave him his Blessing, and taking the Em-
 peror by the Right Hand with his Left, they went out of the
 Chappel

The Iron
Crown.

Chappel together, and parting by the way, each went to his Apartment. Thus ended the solemnity of this Day. The next Day being *Wednesday* was spent in preparing for the other Coronation, and there came to *Bologna* the Duke of *Savoy*, one of the Dukes of *Bavaria*, and the Bishop of *Trent*, Embassador from the King of *Hungary*, besides great multitudes of all sorts of people to see the Coronation, because there had been none in *Italy* since the Emperor *Fredrick* Great Grandfather to *Charles V.*

The Crown
of Gold.

6. On *Thursday* the 24th of *February*, being the Feast of *S. Matthias*, the Gallery before mention'd made from the Pallace to the Cathedral, was all cover'd with Lawrel and Ivy, and abundance of Scutcheons of the Emperor's and Pope's Arms: The Scaffolds in the Church were cover'd with rich Silks, and all the Windows of the square it stands in hung after the same manner, and full of Ladies come from all parts to behold that sight: All the City was adorn'd in like manner, and the Inhabitants richly clad. At break of Day the *Spanish* and *German* Foot, bringing *Antony de Leyva* on their Shoulders, took their Post in the Square, where they continu'd the greatest part of the Day. Two Lion Heads fix'd on a Wall, ran with Whitewine, and an Eagle at her Breast pour'd out Red. Abundance of fine Bread, Cakes, Fruit, and Sweetmeats were thrown out of the Pallace Windows, and at one corner of the Square a whole Ox was Roasted, stuff'd with Kid, Rabbits and Fowl. Early in the Morning all the Prelates, Nobility and Gentry pair'd to the Pallace most richly clad. It being time to go to Church, the Pope was brought out on Mens Shoulders under a rich Canopy, attended by 53 Archbishops and Bishops, the whole Colledge of Cardinals, all with rich Copes and Miters, and abundance of Officers and Magistrates of *Rome* and *Bologna*. Being thus carry'd to the High Altar he took his place, and the Office began. Whilst Mass was sung, and the Pope vested himself to lay the Pallace to conduct the Emperor. He came out with the Crown on his Head, which he had receiv'd

the *Thursday* before, and attended by all the Nobility
 First went the Marques of *Montferrat* with the
 Scepter; next the Duke of *Urbino* with the Sword;
 next the Duke of *Bavaria* with the Globe, and next
 the Emperor the Duke of *Savoy* with the Crown. All
 these Dukes were Habited almost alike, with long
 antique Robes, and ducal Coronets on their Bon-
 nets. The Emperor being come to a Chappel, e-
 rected at the side-Door of the Church, was there
 receiv'd by the Clergy in procession, took an Oath
 to defend the Church and Catholick Faith, and
 then was stripp'd of his Royal Robes, and had a
 Cloak and Surplice put on him, like one of the
 Canons of the Church of *S. Mary de Torres* of *Rome*,
 and was made a Canon of it, as former Emperors
 used to be. This done he went on, and being got
 into the Church where the Cardinals receiv'd him,
 part of the Gallery he had just gone over sunk, and
 many of the Guards fell through and were hurt,
 but only one *Flemish* Gentleman kill'd. Some su-
 perstitious *Italians* said, *The breaking of the Gallery*
behind him portended that the way was cut off, and no
more Emperors should be Crown'd in Italy. The Em-
 peror coming to another Chappel on the left Hand,
 which represented that of *S. Gregory* in *S. Peters* at
Rome, had his Canons Habit taken off, and was
 dress'd like a Deacon, having a *Dalmatica* and
Mitre, and over all the Imperial Mantle. Then
 he went before the High Altar, and leaning on his
 Breast against a place rais'd, continu'd so till the
 Litany was ended, after which the Cardinals had
 him to a Chappel on the left Hand of the high Al-
 tar representing that of *S. Maurice* in *S. Peters* at *Rome*,
 where Cardinal *Farnesius* anointed him with Holy
 Oil on the Back and right Shoulder. Thence he re-
 turn'd to the High Altar, and having made his O-
 bedience to the Pope, who was Vested ready to say
 Mass, knelt down in his place. His Holiness went
 up to the Altar and began the Mass, and having
 Incens'd, the Emperor went up and gave him the
 Kiss of Peace, and kiss'd the Veile he had on his
 Shoulders, over the Pontifical Vestment; which
 done, they went down and sat on each side the Al-
 tar.

tar. Then the Princes, who carry'd the Regalia, deliver'd them to a Cardinal in order, and he lay'd them on the Altar, after which the *Venetian* Ambassador gave the Pope Water to wash his Hands. The Epistle being ended, which was sung by two Cardinals, by the one in Latin, and by the other in Greek, according to antient Custom, the Emperor went and knelt down before the Pope, and a Bishop bringing the Sword, deliver'd it to the Cardinal Deacon who serv'd at Mass, from whom the Pope took it ready drawn, and having bless'd it put it into the Emperor's Hands, saying, *Receive the Sword the Holy Gift of God, wherewith thou shalt overcome and humble the Enemies of the people of the God of Israel.* This said, the Deacon took the Sword again, and return'd it to the Scabbard, and gave it again to the Pope, who, assisted by the two Cardinals, girt it about the Emperor, and he rising drew it, and made three flourishes, every time, turning the edge downwards, after which he return'd it into the Scabbard again, and knelt down as he was before. Next the Pope gave him the other Regalia in the same order as they had been brought, saying a prayer to each. The Emperor being Crown'd stoop'd to kiss the Pope's Foot, and went to sit down on his Imperial Throne, at which time the Cannon fir'd, all sorts of Musick play'd, and there resounded vast Acclamations of the people. The Gospel was sung by two Cardinals in Greek and Latin, as the *Spittle* had been. The Pope went on with the Mass, at the Offertory the Emperor made his Offering, gave the Pope the Host upon the Paten, and Wine and Water for the Chalice, the King of *Hungary's* Ambassador gave Water to wash his Hands. The Emperor went back to his Seat, where he continu'd till after *Agnus Dei*, he return'd to the Altar, gave the Pope the Kiss of Peace on the Face and on the Breast. His Holiness left the blessed Sacrament on the Altar with the Cardinals, went to his place by the Altar, and the Emperor to his, and kneeling both of them ador'd the blessed Sacrament. Then the Cardinal Subdeacon took the Sacrament in two Hosts, one large, and one small on the Paten, and turning to the people, deliver'd it to the Cardinal Deacon, and he took the Chalice, and both of them went to the Pope. The Pope, assisted by both Cardinals, took the Paten, and breaking, the bigger Host receiv'd one part, and drank the Chalice, the other pieces of the great Host he gave to the Cardinals, and communicated the Emperor with the lesser Host. Mass ended, the Pope and Cardinals put on lighter Copes, and with his Imperial Majesty went down out of the Church into the great Piazza or Square. There His Holiness mounted a Horse-back, the Emperor offering to hold his Stirrup, and then took the Horse by the Head-
stall

and advanc'd three or four Steps, till the Pope would permit him to go no further. Then delivering the Regalia, except the Crown to those that brought them, he mounted, and rode on the Pope's left Hand under a rich Canopy, carry'd by two Gentlemen of *Bolonia*. The manner of the Procession was thus; first went the Servants of Cardinals, Princes and Prelates, then the Popes and Emperors all richly attir'd, then the forty Tribunes of *Bolonia*, the Doctors of the Colledges, the Governor, and other Officers with their usual Guard, and the Cantaloners of Justice in Armour, carrying the Standard of *Bolonia*; next follow'd the Standards of the Pope, the Emperor, and the City of *Rome*, with abundance of Trumpets and other Musical Instruments; then four white Palfreys of the Pope's, and after them four of the Pope's Bed-Chamber, with four Cardinals Caps: Then follow'd the College of Consistorial Advocates of *Rome*, next of the *Cubicularij*, the *Acolites*, Priests of the Popes private Chappel, the Auditors of *Rota*, the Sub-deacon with the Popes Cross, some on Mules, some on Horses, and then the blessed Sacrament, as is usually carry'd when Popes travel. Before it went a Sub-deacon on a Mule with a great Christall Lanthorn, and a lighted Candle in it, another with the Popes Cross, and then a palfrey under a rich Canopy, a Bell about his Neck and 8 or 10 Attendants about, one of whom led it by the Bridle. On the Saddle was fixt a small casket cover'd with Cloth of Gold, in which was the blessed Sacrament, and before it twelve lighted Flambeaux: After this follow'd all the persons of Note of all Nations, most richly Accoutred; next the Macebearers and Kings at Arms, belonging to the Emperor, Kings of *France* and *England*, and Duke of *Savoy*, admitted as King of *Jerusalem*. The Emperor's Heralds scatter'd Money Coin'd for that purpose, bearing on one Side His Majesty's Effigies, circumscrib'd *Carolus, Quintus Imperator*, and on the Reverse his device, which was two Pillars, with the Motto *Plus Ultra*, and the Year of our Lord 1530: Then follow'd the Cardinals by two and two, the Princes afore mention'd with the Regalia, except the Crown which was on the Emperor's Head, who, as was said, came last with the Pope under a Canopy. About the Pope were his Esmyers, and about the Emperor 30 young Spaniards a Foot, the Sons of the Prim Nobility: Behind them came the Embassadors of Princes, inferior Prelates, and four Companies of the Emperor's Men at Arms. In this State they march'd through some of the principal Streets of the City, which were all richly adorn'd, and so strong'd it was hard to get through. Being come to a place where the Streets parted, the Emperor struck off to the Church of *S. Dominick*, which was to represent *S. John Lateran*.

Lateran at Rome, whether the Emperors us'd to go after being Crown'd, and his Holiness went away to his Palace. At *S. Dominicks*, the Emperor was receiv'd in Procession by the Canons of *S. John Lateran*, who were come to that purpose from *Rome*, and so conducted to the high Altar. Having perform'd this Ceremony, and Knighted many Gentlemen of all Nations he return'd with the same pomp to his Palace, where he was saluted with Cannon and Small-shot, chang'd his Apparel, and Din'd at a Table by himself, the Princes that had carry'd the Regalia, din'd at another below him. That Night, and some Days following, there was extraordinary Rejoycing in *Bologna*; and thus ended the Coronation of *Charles V.*

7. The Emperor after his Coronation, never attempted any of those things the Princes of *Italy* had apprehended he would undertake against them, but remain'd satisfy'd with the restitution the *Venetians* made of his Towns in *Apulia*, without asking any more of them, settled Duke *Sforcia* in the Dukedom of *Milan*, sending *Antony de Leyva* to secure him in the possession of that State. To this Commander he gave the City of *Monza* and other Rewards for his good Service. Colonel *John de Mercado* was made Governor of the Castle of *Milan*, and *D. Lorenzo Manuel* of *Como*. *D. Lope de Acuna* was sent with some Forces to *Siena*, to quell the Divisions that were in that Republick. His Imperial Majesty labour'd to reconcile the Pope and Duke of *Ferrara*, which he did for that time; and lastly he apply'd himself to fulfil his word, as to the restoring his Holiness's Family to *Florence*; which he perform'd, giving them the Sovereignty of it, notwithstanding the *Florentines* offer'd to pay him 500000 Ducats composition, and to be under his Protection; but he chose to punish their Insolencies to the Family of the *Medicis*, and make good his promise to the Pope.

Barbarussa
takes Pen-
non.

8. It is impossible in such variety of Matter to mention every thing in its place; the Emperor's Coronation was not fit to be dismember'd, and therefore some things have been postpon'd, which are now to be related. *Barbarussa*, of whom we before gave an account, being rais'd from so mean a Degree

Degree to be King of *Algier*, never ceas'd to scour the Coasts of *Spain* and the Islands belonging to it, and at last resolv'd to employ his whole Force against a small Fort call'd *Penon*, built on a Rock, almost joining to the Land of *Algier*. He beset it by Sea and Land, battering it, and giving several Assaults. *Martin de Vargas* the Governor, who had but 150 Spaniards in Garrison, and little Ammunition, sent to acquaint the Emperor, who was then at *Barcelona*, and desire Supplies; but he taken up with greater Affairs, forgot it; and those that ought to have done it, never put him in mind. Thus Powder fell short in the Fort, which *Barbarussa* perceiv'd, because the Besieg'd fir'd but sparingly. Nevertheless he offer'd the Besieged honourable Conditions, which they refusing, on the 21th of *May* 1529, he gave a general Assault with 5000 *Turks*, and after a vigorous Opposition, enter'd the place, Killing all within it, except 25 Men and 20 Women, who remain'd in Slavery. He caus'd the Fort to be raz'd, and in the place of it made a curious Garden for his Diversion. *Barbarussa* was the Refuge and Head of all the *Barbary* Pyrates, and held Correspondence with the *Moors* of the Kingdom of *Valencia*, in order to Transport them into *Barbary*. To this effect he sent *Haradin Cachidiablo* with 11 Sail upon that Coast, who scour'd the Sea for three Months, till the time appointed by the *Morisco's* was come; and at last, on the 18th of *October* at Night, cast Anchor in the River *Altea*, landed 600 *Turks*, and march'd with them to *Parcent*, where he gather'd all the *Moors*, with their Wives, Children, and Wealth. Thence he sent 200 Men to *Murlo*, who did the same, and by break of Day he had got together about 600 Souls, and abundance of Wealth, for every one of them carry'd all they could. This done, he assaulted the House of *Peter Perandreo*, Lord of *Parcent*, who with seven Men defended it 9 Hours, till the *Infidels* getting upon the House, broke in at the top, plunder'd it, and took *Peter Perandreo* and his seven Men, and so put off to Sea with all he had got. *Perandreo's* Son us'd all possible means to ransom him, going for that purpose to *Venice*, thence to *Ragusa*, then returning to *Marseilles*, where *Barb-*

russa

russa was at that time, and resolving to go to *Constantinople*; but at last understood that his Father was Dead there, upon which he return'd home.

9. *Roderick de Portundo* returning from *Genoa*, whether he had attended the Emperor to guard the Coast of *Spain*, receiv'd Intelligence, that *Cachidiablo* infested the Seas, and therefore taking 150 Men in at *Juiza* to reinforce 8 Gallies he had with him, he sail'd away to the Island *Formentera*, where he found the *Infidel*, who presently fled. *Portundo*, tho' advis'd to the contrary, as being too weak, pursu'd with much eagerness, and so came up with the Enemy, when four of his Gallies were so far astern, that they could yield him no assistance. The *Infidel* made use of this Advantage, and falling on, took the 5 foremost Gallies, tho' they defended themselves with much Bravery; then pursuing the other three, took one, the other two made their escape. This hapned on the 25th of *October* 1529. *Barbarussa* puff'd up with his Success, sent to invite *Synan the Jew*, a most famous Pyrate, who was at *Gelves*, to come and join him. He did so, and several more of the same stamp resorting to him, *Barbarussa* found he had sixty Sail of all sorts, with which he propos'd no less than to take *Cadix*. In order to it, *Hali Caraman* was sent to *Sargel* with 25 Sail for Provisions and Ammunition. About the same time *Andrew Doria* was sent out by the Emperor against *Barbarussa* with 38 Gallies, who at *Majorca* understood that the Enemy had 60 Sail; but the one half was at *Argier*, the other at *Sargel*. He set sail for *Sargel*, where *Hali* was, who being surpriz'd, landed all his *Christian* Slaves, which were about 800, and clapt them into Dungeons, thinking to secure them because they were worth much Money; then he sunk all his Vessels that they might not be carry'd off, turn'd the Inhabitants out of the Town, and threw himself with his *Turks* into the Castle. *Andrew Doria* enter'd the Port without any opposition, took the Fort, and sent *George Palavizzini* with 3 Companies of *Italians* to relieve the Captives. They were brought to the Gallies, but the Soldiers falling to plunder the Town, *Hali* Sally'd out of the Castle upon them with his *Turks*, took the Commander with about 60 of his Men, and kill'd about 400. *Doria* after this, durst not attempt the Castle, but put to Sea with his Captives, 2 Gallies, and 6 or 7 small Vessels. *Barbarussa* was much concern'd at this Loss, because it broke his design upon *Cadix*, and in revenge, exercis'd his Cruelty upon such *Christians* as he had, impaling *Dominick Portundo*, running Canes between the Nails and the Flesh of others, trampling some to Death with Horses, Beheading 17 *Christian* Slaves, who would have yielded 15000 *Ducats*, and cutting Capt. *Martin de Vargas* Limb from Limb.

C H A P.

CH A P. XIX.

A full Account of the Florentine War, which City is reduc'd, made a Dukedom, and given to Alexander de Medicis. The Emperor in Germany, Diet at Ausburg, Troubles caus'd by the the Lutherans; the two young Princes of France Ransom'd.

THE Florentine War having been carry'd on by the Emperors Generals, and with his Forces deserves a particular Relation, which we will give in the next place; but as briefly as may be, without omitting any thing that is material. The Imperial Forces were Commanded by the Prince of Orange; the chief Commander of the Florentines, was Malatesta Baillon, and under him Francis Carduch, and ten others. The Prince would fain have gain'd Baillon to him, but he was resolute to Die for his Country, as he did. He advised the Florentines to keep the War at a distance, maintaining the Towns that were farthest off; but the other Commanders, who were of a contrary Opinion, prevail'd. The Prince of Orange having taken other places in Umbria, sat down before Hespelo; the peculiar Estate of Baillon, which the Spaniards assaulted, and were Repuls'd with the loss of their famous Colonel, John de Urbina, who receiv'd a Musket-shot in his Face, of which he Died in a few Days; however the Place surrendred upon Articles, which were not perform'd. Next Perugia submitted and was deliver'd to the Pope; so that all Umbria was reduc'd. Cortona stood one Assault, but submitted

Florentine War

S

The HISTORY of

mitted before the second: So did *Arezzo*, and other places, not daring to hazard the Fury of the *Imperialists*, who advanc'd to the City of *Florence*, putting it into such a Consternation, that the Inhabitants began to run out at the other end, but that *Baillon* encourag'd them, posted his Garrison, planted his Artillery, and provided all things for a vigorous Defence. There was a hot Dispute between both Parties about a Hill, call'd *Giramont*, which commanded the City; but at last the *Imperialists* prevail'd, and made themselves Masters of it. The Emperor's Army consisted of about 20000 *Italians*, and 6000 *Spaniards* and *Germans*, all old Soldiers, besides those that came afterwards, under the Command of the Duke of *Wittenberg*, and *D. Pier Velez de Guevara*. The *Florentines* being recover'd after their first Fright, had conceiv'd great hopes, that the *Turks* having invaded *Austria* the Emperor would be forc'd to withdraw his Army from them; but this hope soon fail'd them, when they heard the *Turks* were retir'd; however, they held their Resolution, and not only the Commonalty, but the Gentry rail'd publickly at the Pope and his Family, and even the Pulpits did not spare him. The *Florentine* Youth, Commanded by *Stephen Colonna*, made many Sallies upon the Besiegers, of which *Fovius* and *Ghicciardin* give a large Account. But their Numbers decreasing, they sent to *Napoleon Ursini*, a powerful Man and great Enemy to the Pope, to come to their Assistance; but *Alexander Vitelli* sent by the Prince of *Orange*, met and routed him, taking several Colours and abundance of Arms. *Lastra*, a strong Town, was well Garrison'd by the *Florentines*, who from thence receiv'd considerable supplies of Provisions, 2000 *Spaniards* and *Germans* were sent to attack this place, which after two Repulses, they carried and plundered, and sent a Party that came to relieve it. The Siege began to grow grievous to the *Florentines*, and to add to their Fear, News was brought that fresh Regiments of *Germans* were marching over the *Alps*, and new Supplies of *Spaniards* coming with a train of Artillery to batter the City. This mov'd them to propose

pose sending Embassadors to the Pope to make their Submission; but *Raphael Ieronimo* so manag'd the Business, that this Design was laid aside, and the multitude grew so inrag'd against his Holiness, that they hang'd some that durst but speak well of him, and among them a Franciscan Friar. In the Spring of this Year 1530, the *Florentines* resolving to endure the utmost Extremities, rais'd their Suburbs, and threw up strong Works against the Artillery that was come over the *Apennine* Mountain. D. *Peter de Guvára*, who brought with him seven Companies of new Rais'd *Spanish* Foot (observe that these Companies consisted of between two and three Hundred Men each) arriv'd in the Camp before the Artillery, on the 15th. of *January*, and the *Marquess del Gasto* broke some of these Companies, because they refus'd to go over into *Germany* with the Emperor, choosing rather to stay in the Army before *Florence*, in hopes of Plunder. After many Losses, it was again propos'd in the City, to send Embassadors to the Pope; but *Malatesta Baillon*, and other Officers who were not for Peace, so contriv'd it, that a parcel of Mean Fellows were sent with Commissions very defective, which offended his Holiness and made them be Laugh'd at.

2. On the sixth of *May* the *Florentines* made a great Sally upon the *Spanish* Quarter, in three Bodies, ^{A great sally.} one of which charg'd them in Front, another in the Rear, and the third on the Flank. The *Spaniards* behav'd themselves to admiration, till the Prince of *Orange* sent *Andrew Gafaldo* with the *Italians* that were nearest at hand, who charg'd those that Flank'd the *Spaniards*. Then the *Germans*, and the Horse came to their Relief, and so, after a desperate Encounter, the Besieg'd were Repuls'd with the loss of 500 Men, tho' some will have it to be 1000. This Disaster no way discourag'd *Baillon* and his Party, who wanting Money, seiz'd all the Wealth of the Churches, as did Captain *Ferruchi a Florentine*, who Commanded at *Volaterra*, sparing nothing, tho' never so sacred. In the mean while the Prince of *Orange* sent a Party of *Spaniards* and *Italians* to take in *Epoli*, which they batter'd and took the second

Affault they gave it. Thence both Nations went and sat down before *Volaterra*, and having batter'd the Works, were Repuls'd in four several Assaults, with the loss of many Men, and among them the Renowned Spaniard *D. James Sarmiento*. Thus they were forc'd to raise the Siege and return to the Camp much enrag'd and out of Countenance. On the 15th of *July* the *Florentines* made another Sally under the Command of *Stephen Colonna*, upon the *German* Quarter, those People being discompos'd with the great heat. They divided themselves into four Bodies, taking several ways to enclose the Besiegers on all sides, and were so far successful as to surprize them; but Count *Lodron* gathering 2000 of his *Germans* in the place of Arms stood the shock unmov'd, and so Repuls'd the Besieged with great Loss to them, killing several Men of note among them, and wounding *Stephen Colonna* with a Pike in the Mouth, and through the Thigh with a Halberd, which threw him down off the Works into the Ditch.

Famine. Famine began to pinch in *Florence*, so that all Horses, Asses, Dogs, and Cats were eaten; some lovers of their Country were for a surrender; and his Holiness had given Command, that his Country should be spar'd; but the Multitude was of another Mind, and resolv'd either to destroy their Enemy, or perish. In order to it, they agreed to make one general Sally upon the Besiegers, and that it might be the more successful, sent Orders to *Francis Ferrucci* to gather all the Troops at *Pisa*, and in that Neighbourhood, and march to *Florence*, intending, as soon as he was in sight, to make their Sally, and so charge the Enemy altogether. *Ferrucci* gather'd near 4000 Foot and 800 Horse, and set forward; but the Prince of *Orange*, who had intelligence of the Design, went out with a Body of *Italians* and *Germans*, besides some Men at Arms, and light Horse, having at the same time given Directions to *Fabrizio Maramaldi* and *Alexander Vuelli*, with their *Italians* to trace the Enemy, and be in a readiness when he should Charge them. Near the Town of *Gambagnano* the Horse Engag'd, and the *Imperialists* being within reach of the Enemies Musketers, began to give

the way, when the Prince of Orange advancing to
 bring them on again, was shot with two Musket
 Bullets through the Body, and fell down Dead, upon
 which his Hoife fled outright, fome of them carry-
 ing the News of his Death to the Camp. Ferrucci's
 Men thought the Victory their own, when the Ger-
 mans advanc'd with their Pikes, Charg'd and alter'd
 the fuccefs of the Day, forcing Ferrucci to retire to
 Cavignano, where Maramaldo and Vitelli then fresh
 come up, receiv'd and routed his Troops, Killing him
 in revenge of the Death of the Prince of Orange.
 This Battle was Fought on the third of August, and
 Sandoval would afcribe the Honour of the Victory
 to 300 Spaniards dropt out of the Clouds, as the Ita-
 lians afcribe it to Maramaldi; but the Germans were
 in Truth the Men that bore the Brunt of the Action.
 The Prince of Orange his Body found stript by a
 French-Man, was wrapp'd in a Blanket and thrown
 grofs a Horfe, like a slaughter Beatt, in which man-
 ner it was carry'd to Piftoya. A difmal Spectacle
 representing the uncertainty of mortal Life. This
 Prince was of the Noble Family of Chaalon,
 about thirty Years of Age, Brave, Generous,
 and well belov'd of the Soldiers. Befides him, near
 2000 Men were Kill'd on each fide. The News of
 this Overthrow no way discourag'd the Florentines,
 who were ftill eager for Sallying; but their Com-
 mander oppos'd it, which made them fufpect that
 Baillon would betray them, and they had thoughts
 of fecuring him. Thefe Diforders grew to fuch a
 head, that Baillon ftabb'd a Senator fent to depofe
 him from his Command, and turn'd the Cannon of
 a Baffion againft the City to defend himfelf. After
 much Confufion the Multitude ran from one Extre-
 am to another; for whereas nothing would feive before
 but they muft Sally and Die: Now they cry'd to
 fubmit to the Emperor, and Baillon was employ'd
 to treat with the D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga, who fuc-
 ceeded the Prince of Orange in the fupream Com-
 mand. The Capitulation was foon agreed upon,
 the principal Article whereof was, That the Emperor
 fhould fettle the Government of Florence as he thought
 fit. Accordingly his Imperial Majesty at Ausburg
 erected

Prince of
 Orange]
 Kill'd.

Florence
 furrender'd

erected it into a Dukedom, and bestowed it on *Alexander de Medicis*, Nephew to Pope *Clement the VIIIth.* Son to a Nephew of *Laurence de Medicis*, who once call'd himself Duke of *Urbino*, and Grandson to *Peter de Medicis*, who was Kill'd in the *French Service* in the Battle of *Garallano*, and was Brother to Cardinal *John de Medicis*, afterwards Pope *Leo the Xth.* On this *Alexander*, and the Heirs of his Body, or for want of them, the nearest of Kin, his Imperial Majesty bestow'd the Dukedom, and he was accordingly put into possession of it.

Mutiny in the Camp 3. On the twenty ninth of *August*, before the City was deliver'd, there happen'd so great a Mutiny in the Imperial Camp, that all had like to have been lost. The Quarrel was between the *Spaniards* and *Italians*; the former say these had Kill'd four of their Men, the latter urge the others had Murder'd two of theirs; whatsoever the Quarrel was, both Parties drew out and Charg'd one another like mortal Enemies. The *Spaniards* were inferior in number, and must consequently have the worst of it, but that the *Germans* took their part, and with their assistance the General parted the Fray, after many were kill'd on both sides. In *April*, this Year the Decrees of the Diet at *Spire*, concerning Religion, were publish'd in *Germany*, which the *Lutherans* not liking, the Duke of *Saxony*, the Lantgrave of *Hesse*, the Marquess of *Brandenburg*, and fourteen Hanse Towns protested against them, whence the Name of Protestants was given them. These *Germans* often met to settle Religion, but they were of so many different Opinions, they would agree about nothing; yet whatever they once broach'd, they would never go from it. Thus much in short concerning them at present, to give some light to a great deal there is to say in the Years 1546, 1547, and those that follow. We left the Emperor in *Bolonia* ready to depart for *Germany*; but before he set out he writ to the Constable of *Castile*, giving him an account of all that had pass, and of his design to go into *Germany* to curb the *Lutherans*, and repulse the *Turks*, and then return with all possible speed into *Spain*; it is dated the seventh of *March*

in *Bolonia*. On the twenty second he set forward, was Nobly Entertain'd at *Mantua*, by the Marqueis of that place, whom he created a Duke; then crossing the *Venetian* Territories, he pass'd over the *Alps*, and came to *Inspruch*, where he was met by his Brother the King of *Bohemia*, and many *German* Nobles. They travell'd from thence through *Bavaria*, being magnificently receiv'd in all places, and came to *Ausburg* on the 18th of *June*, where all the Princes, who came to be present at the Diet, went out a Horse back to meet him, and alighting, kiss'd his Hand; the Archbishop of *Mentz* making a Speech for them all to welcome him, which was answer'd in the Emperor's Name by the Count Palatine. Then they mounted again and went towards the City, being met by all the Inhabitants in a War-like manner, with twelve pieces of Cannon before them; next the Musketeers, then the Tradesmen, then the Merchants, then 2000 Pike-men, then a Body of Horse, then another parcel of Citizens richly Clad, and the Gentry in Armour: After these another Company of Merchants, next to them the Cooks and Victualers, and last of all 2260 Souldiers in Pay, as well Horse as Foot. At the Gate the Magistrates receiv'd his Imperial Majesty, and conducted him under a Canopy, to a great Square, where he was met with the Archbishop and Clergy with another Canopy, and so attended to the Church, where, having Pray'd, the Emperor went away to his Palace.

Emperor
goes to Ger-
many.

4. The Diet was open'd on the 20th. of *July*, and *Frederick* Count Palatine made the Speech for the Emperor, recommending to them Unity in Religion, and in their Councils to oppose the *Turks*. When he had done, several Learned Men spoke to the same purpose; but the *Lutherans* were more intent upon presenting their Memorials, and had Preachers of theirs ready to speak to the matter; which business took up much time. In *September*, his Imperial Majesty in the Field Knighted his Brother King *Ferdinand*, and several other Persons of Note. At this Diet the *Lutheran* Princes presented to the Emperor the Confession of Faith, which took its Name of the place, and is still call'd the *Aus-*

Diet at
Ausburg.

burg Confession. His Imperial Majesty would not Read it, but order'd Learned Men to approve what was Good and Orthodox in it, and to confute what favour'd of Heresy; which was accordingly done, and their Answer was publickly Read, and approv'd by all the Catholick Princes. Tho' the mortal Enemies of the Emperor have endeavour'd to blast his Reputation, by charging him with favouring the *Lutherans*, with not being sincere towards the Pope, and with opposing the Peace with *France*, yet such as will take the pains, may be convinc'd of the contrary, by the Authentick Copies of his most private Letters to his Embassadors, where he speaks his most secret Thoughts, and which are much more to be Credited, than the bare Assertions without any proofs of Authors known to speak maliciously of this mighty Monarch: These Letters too long to be inserted in this small Volume, may be seen scatter'd in many parts of *Sandoval*, and particularly to this purpose in the second Vol. page 109, &c. But to give one instance of his Zeal for Religion; one of the Protestant Princes in the Diet of *Ausburg*, railing unmannerly against the Catholick Church; His imperial Majesty was so provok'd, that forgetting his Dignity, he started up, clapt his Hand to his Sword, and had made an Example of that hot *German*, had not his Brother, King *Fredinand*, witheld him. In his Letter to his Embassador at *Rome*, he presses for a general Council to settle the Affairs of Religion; the whole Business of *Florence* he refers to his Holiness's Direction, and prescribes all methods for perpetuating the Peace among Christians. After this on the 30th. of *October* his Imperial Majesty sent D. *Peter de la Cueva* his Lord Steward to *Rome*, to urge the calling of a general Council, the present Necessities of the Church absolutely requiring it, and alledges a great many Reasons to induce his Holiness to grant it, which our brevity will not admit of, but may be seen in *Sandoval*, Vol. 2. Page 119.

Diet
breaks up.

5. The Emperor offended at the proceedings of the *Lutherans* order'd certain Articles to be drawn up and deliver'd to them, containing what they were

to observe upon pain of his Displeasure, enjoying them by the middle of the following *April*, to deliver in their Resolution under their Hands, of what they design'd to do, in order to conforming with the Catholick Church, and that in the mean while they presume not to Print any Book containing new Doctrine, nor compel any person to follow their Sentiments, and particularly that they do not uphold the Anabaptists or Sacramentarians. The *Lutherans* went away dissatisfied. Then an Edict was published, forbidding all persons to embrace the new Opinions, or such as had been formerly Condemn'd, and so the Diet broke up, on the 19th. of *November*, 1530. His Imperial Majesty went away for *Cologn*, where he appointed the Electors to meet in *January* following to choose a King of the *Romans*; but in *December* the *Lutherans* assembled at *Smalcalde*, where they enter'd into a League to defend one another, sending their Deputies to invite other Princes to joyn with them; of which we shall have more occasion to speak. On the last Day of *November*, *Margaret of Austria*, Daughter to the Emperor *Maximilian*, Aunt to *Charles V.* and Widdow of Prince *John*, the only Son of their Catholick Majesties, died at *Mechlin*, at the Age of 52 Years, and having govern'd the low Countries, 23. *Mary*, Queen Dowager of *Hungary*, Sister to the Emperor succeeded her in the Government.

6. The King of *France* being very desirous to obtain his Children's liberty us'd all possible means to gather their Ransome, and paid off the Summs due to the King of *England*, and the time of the Exchange drawing near, he would have had it done by the way of *Perpignan* and *Saulses*, which the Emperor was willing to condescend to; but the Constable of *Castile*, who had the Custody of the Princes oppos'd it, because of the length of the way, and danger of their being rescu'd on the Frontiers of *France*. For these Reasons and others, it was agreed they should be deliver'd on the River *Bidasoa*, by *Eventeravia*, where they had been receiv'd, and they being in order to it, brought from *Pedracca* to *Gumiel*, were left there till the Constable and

Princes
of France
Ransom'd.

Lewis

The HISTORY of

Lewis de Praet, a Fleming of the Emperors Bed-Chamber and Privy Council, went to treat with two *French* Commissioners about the manner of making the Exchange, with whom they agreed upon the following Articles, 1. That all Forces whatsoever on both sides, be withdrawn ten Leagues from the place of Delivery, and come no nearer to it in ten Days before and after it. 2. That on the Day of Delivery no *French* come nearer than *Bayonne*, till the Princes be at *S. Jean de Luz*, except only such as are here named. 3. That only 700 Foot to be dispos'd of, as hereafter is mention'd, shall remain within ten Leagues of the place, and fifty Men in the Castle of *Fuenterabia*. 4. That twelve Persons be sent from each side, to see there be no Forces, nor numbers of People gather'd together. 5. That there be but twenty Men in the Garrison of *Beobia*. 6. That for the more convenient exchanging the Princes for their Ransome, there be a great Float moor'd in the middle of the River, with a Barrier across it, and a *Spaniard* and *Frenchman* be sent to view it, who are to continue there till the Exchange be made. 7. Two great Boats shall be appointed one to carry the Money, the other the Princes; and this, that it may not be lighter than the other, is to carry an equal weight of Iron; these Boats to be search'd by Gentlemen sent from each side. 8. That each side shall have 700 Horse and Foot at equal distance from the Water. 9. That there be Men on both sides, without any Armes, to Load and Unload the Money. 10. That there be fifteen Men sent over from each side, the *Spaniards* to have the Custody of the Money, and the *French* to see the young Princes are brought to be exchange'd. 11. That the number of persons in each Boat be equal, and so the Weapons they carry. 12. That all these Persons shall come out of their Boats upon the Ponton in the River, and there exchange Boats, the *French* going into that where the Princes are, and the *Spaniards* into that of the Money. This is the substance of the principal Articles, the rest being of less Note; and what is more of these was nothing but formality of words. After agreeing upon all these Articles, many others

Difficultie

Difficulties occur'd as a dispute about the fineness of the Gold, adjust'd with much difficulty, then the Constable fell sick, which retarded the Execution. At length on the first of *July* the Constable by reason of his weakness being carried in a Chair, the exchange was orderly perform'd on the Ponton, as was mention'd above, both parties returning to their own side well satisfy'd. After the Princes were exchange'd Queen *Ellenor* the Emperors Sister, who as has been mention'd had been contracted to the King of *France*, was carry'd over in another Boat to the *French* side to consummate the Marriage with that King, which was perform'd at *Bourdeaux*, where he receiv'd her and his two Sons with extraordinary Joy.

7. *Ferdinand*, Brother to the Emperor, was at *Cologne* elected King of the Romans on the Eve of the *Epiphany*, in the year 1531, and on the 11th of *January* was with great solemnity Crown'd at *Aquisgran* with the Silver Crown of *Charlemain*, kept in that City, as a great Relick, and put on his Robes. He had the year before been Crown'd King of *Bohemia*, and was now attended by a numerous train of *Bohemians*, *Moravians* and *Silesians*, who endeavour'd to set off this Solemnity with great expences, as did the *Germans*, *Italians* and *Spaniards* of the Emperors retinue. His Imperial Majesty Knighted a great many Gentlemen with the old rusty Sword of *Charlemain*. After the Solemnity was over, the Emperor us'd all his endeavours to unite the Princes of Christendom in a League against *Soliman* the great *Turk*, whose mighty Power threatned all Christendom. On the 14th of *January* the Citizens and Magistrates of *Cologne* took an Oath of Fidelity to the King of the Romans, and the next day the Emperor set out for *Brabant*, with his Sister Queen *Mary*, and the King of the Romans for *Austria*. In the mean while the Kings of *France* and *England* began to combine against the Emperor, the former out of Envy to his greatness, the latter because being then in Love with *Anne* of *Bullen*, and designing to be divorced from Queen *Catherine*, he fear'd his Imperial Majesties Resentment,

1531.

Ferdinand
King of the
Romans.

ment, but these things broke out later. In *Germany* the *Lutherans* continu'd their Assemblies to Confe- derate against the Emperor, who oppos'd their de- signs, and sollicit'd Forreign Princes and States to joyn with them. His Imperial Majesty perceiving that the Consultations tended to an open Breach, found it not convenient to leave *Germany* in that condition, and therefore writ to the Council of *Spain*, acquainting them with the necessity of his stay, to defend the Catholick Religion, to oppose the *Lutherans*, and make head against the *Turk*. The Council highly applauded his Majesties Zeal, but at the same time advis'd him not to expose his Person to dangers, but rather to return to *Spain*, whence orders might be given as well, for obviat- ing those Evils that threatned. This they repeated in two severall Letters, and in the last advise him not to give way in any thing to the *Lutherans*, but to reduce them entirely to the Church, or punish them.

8. In *Spain* the Empress spent most of the Sum- mer at *Avila*, and in *September* remov'd to *Medina del Campo*, with the Prince and Princesses *Mary*, who was afterwards Empress. In *October* dy'd *Lewis* of *Savoy*, Mother to King *Francis* of *France*, and on the 3d of *December* the Emperor set forward from *Flanders* towards *Germany*, bestowing the order of the Golden Fleece by the way at *Tournay* on several Persons of Quality, to fill up the number of some deceas'd. This year was very fortunate to Pope *Clement*, because his Nephew *Alexander de Medicis* was created Duke of *Florence*, as was hinted be- fore, and he reduced under his Dominion the City of *Ancona*, which before was in the Nature of a Commonwealth. About this time there was brought to his Holiness a wonderful Man, who would live Fifteen or Twenty days without eating any thing whatsoever. The Pope said an Army of such Men would be very serviceable. A curious *Spaniard* who observ'd this and all that was remarkable in his time, says, that at *Moral*, a Village in the Territory of *Maderuelo* in *Spain*, there was then living a Rich Countryman, who tho' he had Cattle of

Two not-
able Men.

of his own, never eat Flesh, nor drank Wine, nor
~~ever~~ wore Hose, or Cap. The Diet of the Empire
 was appointed to meet at *Spire*, but the Emperor
 diverted by urgent affairs could not be there by the
 day prefixt; and the King of the Romans consider-
 ing the danger that threatned his Dominions and
 all the Empire, writ to him, advising and praying
 that he would make all possible speed into *Germany*,
 and adjourn the Diet appointed for *Spire* to meet
 at *Raisbon* on the Feast of the *Epiphany*, the follow-
 ing year, which was accordingly done, as we shall
 see in its place. In *Holland* and *Zealand* on the
 2d of *November* there began such a terrible Storm of
 Rain, Wind, Thunder and Lightning, that the like
 had never been seen, and all People thought Hea-
 ven and Earth would come together. When this
 Tempest began to cease, the Sea swell'd, and row-
 ling Mountains of Water broke down the Dikes,
 bore all before it, and drowned all the Country
 for many Leagues, in which infinite numbers of Peo-
 ple and Cattle perish'd, and besides a great many
 Villages, several good Towns, and Three Cities
 were left quite under Water, so that nothing but
 the Tops of the Steeples remain'd in sight. With-
 in Two Months of this Inundation there happen'd
 a most astonishing Earthquake in *Portugal*, princi-
 pally about *Lisbon* and *Santarem*, by which many
 Persons were kill'd, and some Ships cast ashore. It
 lasted so long about *Lisbon*, that the People durst
 not live in their Houses, but tho' it was Winter
 lay in Tents about the Fields, and so did the King
 and Queen, and yet so were afraid the Earth would
 swallow them. It continu'd Eight days, and the re-
 port was that Fifteen Hundred Houses were over-
 thrown in *Lisbon*. After it follow'd a destructive
 Plague. On the Thirteenth of *July* this year
 the Empress who govern'd *Spain*, receiv'd Letters
 from the Viceroy of *Naples* giving an account that
 it was suspected the *French* were in League with
 the *Turks*, and that a Hundred and Fifty Sail of
 the latter had been seen on the coast of that King-
 dom near *Taranto*, and had landed Men in *Apulia*,
 and taken *Castro* a small Town. These News
 alarm'd

Miserable
 Inundation.

alarm'd Spain, fearing the *French* would make their advantage of the approach of the Infidels, and therefore the Empress writ to the Grandees of *Castile* acquainting them with it, and desiring they would be in a readiness to oppose the Common Enemy.

C H A P. XX.

The Diet at Ratisbon, Solyman invader Hungary with a mighty Army; the Emperor with 120000 Men at Vienna; nothing done on either side; the Emperor in Italy, and returns to Spain; Doria his Actions in Greece: He relieves Coron Besieg'd by the Turks. Anabaptists at Munster suppress'd.

1532.
Diet at
Ratisborn.

1. HIS Imperial Majesty was still at *Brussels*, in *January* 1532, where he receiv'd Intelligence from several Hands, that *Solyman* the great *Turk* was setting out a mighty Fleet to infest the Coasts of *Italy*, and at the same time gather'd an Army of 300000 Men to overrun *Hungary*, and make himself Master of *Vienna*. At the same time the *Lutherans* carry'd on their Designs confederating, as was said before, among themselves, and engaging the Kings of *France* and *England* to support them against the Emperor. These mighty Dangers oblig'd him to call a Diet to meet at *Ratisbon*, where necessity extorted from him a Compliance with the Protestants, which his Enemies have falsely represented as a voluntary favouring of them. It was agreed that they should have the free exercise of their Religion, till such time as a general Council, or National Synod were conven'd, where all things should be settled

settled for a lasting peace. This Accommodation was call'd the Interim, and upon it the Protestants consented to assist the Emperor against the Turk; whose Expedition into Hungary, the causes that mov'd him to it, and the event of it, I will here give a particular Account, as being a matter wherein the Emperor Charles the Vth. the subject of this History is so much concern'd.

2. Upon the Death of Lewis, King of Hungary, *John Sepusius Vayvode of Transylvania* laid claim to that Crown, but being routed and expell'd both Countries by King Ferdinand, he fled into Poland, and there friendly entertain'd for a considerable time, by Jerome Lasco, a Polish Noble Man, with whom he consulted how he might recover that Crown he aspir'd to. Lasco advis'd him to have recourse to Solymán the great Turk, profering to go himself as his Embassador to him; which he accordingly did, and was thought, with the Consent and Recommendation of Sigismund, King of Poland. Solymán undertook his Protection, and resolv'd to go himself in Person, to put his new tributary King into Possession of his Dominions. King Ferdinand understanding what was carrying on against him, sent an Embassador to the Turk, with offers of little less subjection and acknowledgement than the other; but he was scornfully rejected, and commanded to depart Constantinople immediately with a Declaration of War against his Master. In 1529, Solymán having gather'd a numerous Army at Sophia, came thither in person, and was met by his new Vassal, John Sepusius, whom he receiv'd favourably. Then he entr'd Hungary, by the way of Belgrade, and coming to Buda, found it abandon'd by the Inhabitants, there being no Garrison in the place, but only 700 Germans in the Castle, under the Command of Thomas Nadasti, who defended it till his Soldiers bound him Hands and Feet and surrendr'd the Place, Articling for their Lives. Solymán understanding what they had done, caus'd them all to be cut in pieces, and gave Nadasti his Liberty. From Buda Solymán advanc'd towards Austria, and ruining all the Country wherever he came, at last

fare

fate down with his whole Power before *Vienna*, about the middle of *September*, having been much retarded by the great Rains. King *Ferdinand* had put 20000 Men into *Vienna*, under the Command of *Lewis Count Palatine of the Rhine*, and *Nicholas Solme*, a brave Commander, who had plenty of Ammunition, with 100 Pieces of large Cannon, and 300 of Small. What sav'd the Besieged, was, that *Solyman* had no heavy Cannon for Battery, having lost it in a River, upon an attack *Wolfgang an Hungarian* Noble made upon their Army. However he had such abundance of small Guns, and Muskets, and shot such clouds of Arrows up into the Air, which fell into the Streets of the City, that there was no safety in going from one House to another. The want of Battering Pieces made the *Turks* fall to undermining, but the Besieg'd never fail'd to countermine and disappoint all their Works. However some Breaches they made, and gave several Assaults, in all which they were vigorously repuls'd. *Solyman* finding all his attempts prov'd fruitless, and the Winter now drawing on, broke up the Siege and drew off in a rage, destroying all the Country wherever he came, and carrying away above 40000 Persons into miserable Captivity. At *Buda* he Crown'd *Sepusius*, and left a considerable Force to support him, promising to come again speedily to his aid with a greater Power.

Preparations against the Turks.

3. This year 1532 the Emperor being at *Ratisbon*, receiv'd Advice that *Solyman* was marching towards *Hungary* with such a Numerous Army that some computed it at Five, others at Three, but the most moderate at 200000 Fighting Men, besides 120 Battering pieces. Before he entred *Hungary*, King *Ferdinand* sent Embassadors with Rich Presents, and Proposals to endeavour to retard his Progress, but he order'd the Embassadors to follow and see whether he was going, by which it appear'd that nothing could divert him from pursuing his design, which was to make himself Master of *Vienna*. The Emperor apply'd himself to all Christian Princes for Aid against the Common Enemy, promising to employ all his Forces and expose his own Person
for

for the Publick safety. To be as good as his word he sent orders to the Marques del Gasto to gather all the Spanish Foot, and raise what *Italians* the time would permit, and with them speedily to repair to *Vienna*. *Andrew Doria* was commanded with the Fleet under his Command to the Coast of *Greece*, to meet the Enemy, and 12000 old *German* Souldiers were taken into pay. The King of *France* would contribute nothing towards the War, his Inclination lying another way. The King of *England* was buzy with his new Wife, and overturning Religion. The *Pope* indeed did all that in him lay; for being exhausted with the charge of the *Florentine* War, which had cost him above a Million of Ducats, he rais'd a fifth of all Ecclesiastical Revenues, which amounted to a vast Sum, and sent Cardinal *Hypolito de Medicis* his Nephew with it to *Ratisbon*. Besides many Gentlemen Volunteers that went with the Cardinal, he receiv'd into his pay 8000 *Hungarian* Light Horse, and caus'd a Crucifix to be Embroider'd on their Standards. The *German* Princes and States all sent their quotas to the Emperors Assistance, but *Sandoval* here forgets to mention them. *Solyman* now drawing near to *Hungary*, *John Sepusius* sent his Friend *Alofius Gritti* to lay Siege to *Gran*; a City Ten Leagues from *Buda*, on the Road to *Vienna*. He having Batter'd the Citadel some days, the Garrison sent for Succours to *Presbourg*, whence an Officer was sent down the *Danube* with 60 Boats, and posted himself in the Island of *Comorra* expecting to be re-inforced. *Gritti* having advice of this approaching supply, went out to meet it, and the Commander of it more boldly than discreetly offering to give him Battle, was defeated, 50 of his Boats taken, and he with the rest made his Escape. *Gritti* return'd to the Siege, and the place being impregnable by force, resolv'd to starve it. Before this place was taken, the Marques del Gasto pass'd over the Alps with 20000 Foot, who mutiny'd by the way, but he appeas'd them by fair means, he might have 30000 *Italians*, but that he had little Money to pay them. After him follow'd *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, with about 2000 Light Horse, and lastly the Duke of *Ferrara* with another parcel, and some *Spaniards* and *Greeks*. At the same time his Imperial Majesty set forward from *Ratis-*

Gran
Besieged.

ben and came to *Lintz*, whether resorted such numbers of choice Men, as had not been seen on the *Danube* in several Ages.

Solyman in Hun-
gary. 4. Solyman had now entred *Hungary* with his Numerous Army, and leaving the *Danube* on the Right march'd towards *Stiria*, where he laid Siege to a little Town call'd *Gurtz*, which was so bravely defended by a bold Governour call'd *Nicolitz*, that *Solyman* compounded with him, to have the Place surrendred when *Vienna* was taken, else to be left free. At this place he dismiss'd King *Ferdinands* Embassadors with Letters to their Master and the Emperor, challenging them to give him Battle; and yet understanding what excellent Commanders and experienced Souldiers the Christian Army was compos'd of, he wheel'd off keeping at a great distance from *Vienna*, and ravaging all the Country as he went. At this time the *Spaniards* that were in *Vienna* Mutiny'd against their Officers because they commanded them into the Field, and there was much difficulty in quelling them. Forty Thousand *Turkish* Horse were detach'd from the main Body of the Army to destroy all the Country, which they did up as far as *Lintz*, where the King of the *Romans* then was; and having run above 150 Miles like an Inundation bearing all down before them, they return'd to overtake their main Body then at a great distance from them. To be the less encumber'd in their March, they Butcher'd 4000 Captives they had taken, and then divided themselves into two Bodies, taking several ways. One of these Bodies taking the shorter cut arriv'd safe in the great Camp. The other was met and routed by the Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, who kill'd the 3d part of them. Those that escap'd lighted upon Count *Lodron*, and the Marques of *Brandenburg*, by whom most of them were cut off, and the small remainder to a Man perill'd by the hands of the *Hungarians*. It was debated in the Imperial Counsel of War, whether the Enemy ought to be pursu'd and forc'd to a Battle, but he being the aggressor, it was thought enough to have deterr'd him from attempting any thing, and so nothing was done on either side. The Emperor's Army was computed to consist of 90000 Foot and 30000 Horse, with an excellent Train of Artillery. Yet these Two mighty Armies,

Armies, the greatest perhaps that had been seen in Christendom, did not so much as look upon one another, and *Solyman* in several years after did not disturb Christendom on that side. King *Ferdinand* would gladly have perswaded the Emperor to keep his Army together, and carry on the War against *John Sepiusus*, but it was not practicable, because other urgent occasions call'd his Majesty away, Winter was drawing on, and there was not a sufficient fund of Money to defray such a vast expence. However the Emperor order'd the *Rahans* to stay with his Brother, under the Command of *Fabricius Maramaldi*, which they were so ill inclin'd to, that 8000 of them Mutinying, took the way to *Italy*. This so offended the King of the Romans, that he gave orders that all the *Italians* should be kill'd in any of his Towns, and it was so well perform'd that few of them got home. Above 50 Persons of the prime Nobility of *Spain* went either through *Italy* or *France* to attend the Emperor in this Expedition, besides a great number of the lesser Gentry, of both which sorts many encumbred their Estates to express their zeal in following his Majesty through all dangers.

5. The *Turk* being gone, and the Emperor resolv'd for *Italy*, he set out from *Vienna* on the 4th of *October*, and the same day sent *D. Peter de la Cueva* to *Rome*, to intreat the *Pope* to give him a meeting at *Genoa*, and press him to it by all means, or else his Majesty would be forced tho' against his Inclination to go as far as *Rome* to salute his Holiness. After this on the 12th of *October* his Majesty sent away an Express to acquaint his Embassador at *Rome*, the Cardinal of *Osna*, and *D. Peter de la Cueva*, that he was drawing near to *Italy*, that they might make it known to the *Pope*, and send him an account whether his Holiness would meet him, or he be forced to go to *Rome*. They all three neglected to advertize his Majesty, whereof he afterwards complain'd, and lets them know how he had receiv'd advice from his Holiness, that he would meet him at *Bolonia*; but not knowing the day directs them to send an express with the certainty of it, that he may be there at the same time as the *Pope*. In his Journey he observ'd this method, *D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga* had the van with the Light Horse, then follow'd the Marques

The Emperor departs for Italy.

del Gasto with the Foot and Horse-Guards, two days after came the Cardinal, Bishops, and Clergy, then the Emperor, and lastly the Duke of *Alva* with the *Spanish* Horse, and *German* Foot. In this manner he entred *Italy*, without going through any Town of the *Venetians*, and arriv'd at *Mantua* on the 7th of *November*. On the 20th of *December* he set out from thence to *Bologna*, where the Pope expected him. The Cardinals of *Tournon* and *Grammont* were there soliciting the Pope in the Name of the King of *France*, to oblige the Emperor to withdraw the *Spanish* Forces out of *Lombardy*, alledging that unless it were done he could not continue the Peace, by which it appears that he only study'd to disarm the Emperor that he might recover his Losses. Nor did his Holiness and his Imperial Majesty well agree, for the Emperor was for a General Council to settle the Affairs of *Germany*, and the Pope delay'd time, discovering his Inclination to *France*. At the same time the *Venetians* pretended they were willing to preserve the peace, but said they could not deny assisting the Duke of *Milan*, if he should stand in need of it. This they did to insinuate to the King of *France*, that he might hope they would joyn with him upon occasion, and to keep the Emperor in awe that he might not despise *France*, all which tended to keep a Balance in *Italy*, that neither Prince might grow too powerful and make himself Master of it. It was also reported, that the *French* and *Venetians* had advis'd *Solyman* not to Fight, for fear if he were beaten the Emperor should be too hard for them both. After much debate a new League was concluded between the Pope and Emperor for a year and a half, in which the Dukes of *Milan* and *Ferrara* were included. One of the Principal Articles was, That his Imperial Majesty should withdraw his Forces out of *Lombardy*, every one of the Confederates paying down 25000 Ducats to *Antony de Leyva*, who was to remain in *Milan* with a competent Number of *Spaniards* to secure the peace. Thus the Imperial Troops departed *Lombardy*, some for *Coron*, others for *Sicily*, and others disbanded. Cardinal *Colonna*, who was Viceroy of *Naples* dying about this time, *D. Peter de Toledo* Marques of *Villafranca* was appointed to succeed him. The Kings of *France* and *England* being

being offended at the proceeding of the Pope had an Interview at *Calais*, where they concluded a League against the Emperor.

6. Whilst the Emperor was employ'd at *Vienna* making head against the Turk, *Andrew Doria* was sent with the Fleet under his Command, consisting of 44 Gallies, and 35 great Ships, besides some small ones to infest the Coasts of *Greece*, and either Fight the Enemies Fleet, or take some place of note that might be a footing to carry the War into those parts. He took aboard 10000 *Spaniards*, *Italians* and *Germans*, and at *Zant* met the *Venetian* Fleet, whose Admiral sent to offer him Provisions and their Harbours, but at the same time gave advice to the Infidels, who were in the Gulph of *Artis*, who presently put to Sea, not daring to stand the Encounter. Having mis'd of that prey *Doria* Steer'd away for *Coron*, a Town built on a jutting out of the Land almost encompass'd by the Sea, divided into two parts, the one Inhabited by the *Greeks*, the other by the *Turks*. The Port is small, but safe. This place he besieg'd by Sea and Land, raising Two Batteries on the Shore, and playing upon it from his Ships and Gallies. After Two small Breaches made the *Italians* gave one Assault, and the *Spaniards* another, but were both repuls'd with considerable loss. But those that batter'd from the Sea, made a more successful Attack possessing themselves of that part of the Town where the *Greeks* Inhabited, where they threw up Works that Night to secure themselves and annoy the Besieg'd. The next day 700 *Turkish* Horse came to relieve the place, but were so bravely receiv'd by the Besiegers, that a great number of them were kill'd, and the rest put to flight. Among the dead was their Commander, whose Head being cut off and shewn to the Besieged, they surrendered upon condition, The Garrison might march out with Bag and Baggage, and such of the *Greeks* as would follow them. Thus *Coron* was taken on the 21st of September, 32 Years after the *Venetians* lost it to the Infidels. *Doria* imagining that all the *Morea* dreaded his Fleet, neglected to raise a Fort, as he was advis'd, on the Port of *Coron*, and to attempt *Navarrino*, choosing to go away to *Patras*, which the *Turks* were abandoning. Therefore leaving 2500 *Spaniards* with the *Greeks* to secure

The HISTORY of

secure *Coron*; he Sail'd thence on the fifth of *October*, and touching at *Zant*, came to *Patras*. He landed eight battering Pieces, and most of his Soldiers; for tho' the Town was abandon'd; the Natives with their Wives, Children and Goods were retir'd into a Fort they had made behind the Castle, which was strong, and well provided with Artillery. After a Breach made, the Assault was given, and the Fort enter'd and plunder'd, Then they batter'd the Castle, which had formerly been a famous Temple of *Diana*, and was now surrendr'd by the *Turks*, upon Condition all Persons should march out with their Apparel, and no Affront should be offer'd the Women. This *Andrew Doria* took special Care to see perform'd, Hanging and Beheading some Soldiers who offer'd to strip the Women, or so much as touch them immodestly, Thence he mov'd to the *Dardanelis*, two Forts upon the Mouth of the Golph of *Lepanto*. That in the *Morea* surrendr'd upon Summons, and was plundr'd by *Doria's* Men, which made six Companies of *Italians* and one of *Spaniards* mutiny, because he had not suffer'd them to pillage *Coron* or *Patras*. These ran about plundering the Villages, till *Doria* sent them a Pardon; for he had once design'd to decimate them. They being aboard he pass'd over the narrow streight, and lay'd Siege to the other Castle, which is in *Etolia*. A considerable Body of *Turkish* Horse and Foot came to raise the Siege; but Count *Sarno* drawing out four Thousand Men, repuls'd them, and the next Morning began to batter the highest Towers. Having made a Breach, the Assault was given, and the *Turks* made such a brave Resistance, that three Hundred of them were kill'd, and not one taken, for some few that escap'd the Slaughter, shut themselves up in the Magazine of Powder and blew it up, which did some harm in the Camp and aboard the Gallies. The Cannon taken there was valu'd at sixty Thousand Ducats, some pieces whereof he left at *Coron*, with the *Spanish* Garrison before mention'd, swearing he would come the next Year to relieve or carry them away. This done, he return'd to *Genoa* at the beginning of the Winter, this Year 1532.

7. The Emperor having settled the Affairs of Italy, 1535. ^{Emperor} from *Bolonia*, took his way through *Pavia*, and came to *Genoa*, where he was Lodg'd and Entertain'd in *Andrew Doria's* Pallace, who presented him with all the Furniture of his House, of a great value, but his Imperial Majesty refus'd it, bidding him let all stand till he came again. At the Isles of *Hieres* he was presented with fresh Provisions by the General of the *French Gallies*; and in April, 1533, arriv'd at *Barcelona*, where he was expected by the Empress and abundance of the Nobility of *Spain*. About this time *D. Alvaro Bacan*, General of the *Spanish Gallies*, Sailing over into *Africk*, took the City *One*, near that of *Tremecen*, killing six Hundred Men, besides a Thousand they made Slaves. As soon as the Pope after his taking leave of the Emperor, return'd from *Bolonia* to *Rome*; the Treaty of Marriage between *Henry*, Duke of *Orleans*, and *Catherine de Medicis*, his Holiness's Niece, was carried on with great Application and concluded. The King of *France* would have the Nuptials celebrated at *Marseilles*, and earnestly intreated the Pope to give him a meeting there, that they might more conveniently adjust Matters between them, which he granted, and set out in the *French Gallies* for that City, where he arriv'd on the sixth of *October* 1533. Extraordinary Expressions and Acts of Kindness pass'd between them, and they had many private Conferences, which held for a considerable time, and every Body judg'd would produce more Bloody Wars than what had been already, because the King aim'd at *Milan*, the Pope at *Modena* and *Rezzo*, and the Emperor had no mind to satisfy either of them in these Points. These Practices perplex'd the Emperor, and his continual Cares and Toils, made him grow Old before his time.

8. As soon as *Solyman* return'd to *Constantinople* he sent the Beg of *Gallipoli* with a Fleet, and *Zizim Bissi* with an Army to recover *Coron*, who between them shut up the place so close, that Famine began to pinch the Inhabitants and Garrison. *D. Jerome de Mendoza*, the Governor, would not hear of Articles, tho' good ones were offer'd, but found means to acquaint the Vice-Roy of *Naples* with the Danger he was in, and at the same time writ to *Andrew Doria*, putting him in mind of his Oath to relieve them in time of Need. The Emperor having receiv'd this News, sent Money and Orders to

Coron
B. sing'd by
the Turks.

Andrew Doria to make ready to relieve the place, promising *D. Alvaro de Bacan* should overtake him with twelve Gallies. *Doria* sail'd to *Naples*, where he provided his Fleet with Necessaries, being about 30 Ships and 27 Gallies. He sent before *Christopher Palavicini* in a Galley, who carried the News of his forwardness to *Coron*, making his way through the *Turkish* Fleet, and in the same manner return'd to his Commander with an Account of the Condition the place was in. *Doria* put *Machicao's* Regiment aboard his Ships, and some other Troops into the Gallies, and understanding the Danger *Coron* was in, set Sail without expecting *D. Alvaro Bacan*. Understanding at *Zant*, that the *Turkish* Fleet was greater than he had thought, he sent out a Galley to discover, which found the Enemy drawn up in Line of Battle, and confirm'd the News they had heard at *Zant*. Nevertheless *Doria* held on his Course, two great Galeons full of Guns leading the Van, next the Ships, and then the Gallies. The Infidels began to Fire upon the Christians; who, tho' they fell into disorder, got safe into the Port without Fighting. Only two Ships falling foul of one another, could not get in, which the *Turkish* Gallies Boarded and took; the Spaniards being in a Consternation, and many of them leaping over Board for fear: But *Doria* asham'd to have them lost in his fight, put out of the Harbour again and rescu'd them. In the mean while *D. Jerome de Mendoza* and *Machicao* sally'd out of the Town, and found the *Turks* had quitted their Camp, leaving a great deal of Baggage, and much Provision behind them, besides some Horses and three pieces of Brass Cannon. *Doria* comforted the Inhabitants for what they had suffer'd, promising the Emperor would come the following Year and Conquer the *Morea*; he left Collonel *Machicao* there with the new come Spaniards, and Shipping of those that were there before return'd home; yet he lost three Gallies taken by *Sinan* the *Jem*, they staying behind to haul some People and Goods in *Calabria*. After so much Money spent, and so many Lives lost in gaining and maintaining this place, it was abandon'd, the Expence of keeping it being very great, and the Advantage reap'd by it none. Besides the *Turks*, tho' at some distance, kept it block'd up; so that no Relief could

Siege
rais'd.

could be carry'd in by Land, and not only Flesh and Wine grew scarce, but even Water, the Cisterns being dammag'd with the Firing of the Cannon. All their Corn they ground in Hand Mills, and Hunger beginning to pinch, the *Spaniards* press'd their Colonel *Machicao* to march out and possess himself of *Andrusa*; which he earnestly oppos'd, not for want of Bravery, but because he was not willing to do a rash Action not justifiable in it self, and which might occasion the loss of the Place he was entrusted with. However, the Clamours of the Soldiers prevail'd, he was oblig'd to comply and march out with most of the Garrison. *Andrusa* was about nine or ten Leagues off; towards it he march'd all Night, resting the Day, and attacking it before it was Light in two places. Captain *Hermosilla* fell into the Suburb, where there were a Thousand Horse, Firing the Stables, and killing all he met. *Machicao* was not so fortunate for being discover'd, the Infidels stood upon their Guard, Shot him Dead, and Kill'd others of his Officers and Men, and *Hermosilla* not being able to come in time enough to their Rescure, they were forc'd to retire firing upon their Enemies, who pursu'd them both with Horse and Foot. They made good their Retreat, killing the Commander of the *Turks*, with about four Hundred Men, and got to *Coron* again, having lost 108 of their Number. After this, the Plague rag'd in *Coron*, and in *March* following five Ships were sent from *Sicily*, with Orders to bring away the Garrison and Inhabitants, which was accordingly done in *April*, they taking away with them the Artillery, Ammunition, and all that was worth removing and leaving the place desolate and naked. *Coron* is the Native Country of *Plutarch* the Philosopher.

9. In *August* this Year 1533, the Empress fell dangerously Ill, as appears by the Emperor's Letters to the Constable of *Castile*, but soon recover'd and went to *Alcala de Henares* with the Emperor. But the following Year 1534, on the twenty sixth of *September*, Died Pope *Clement* the VIIth. at *Rome*. He was succeeded on the fourth of *October* by Cardinal *Alexander Farnesius*, who took the Name of *Paul* the IIIrd, and immediately sent his Legates to the Emperor and King of *France*, earnestly intreating them to unite their Forces against the common

Pope *Clement* Dies.
Paul the
3d. chosen

common Enemy of Christendom. The King of *France* answer'd, That if the Emperor would grant him the investiture of *Milan*, he would in Person serve under him with all his Forces by Sea and Land. But all the World was satisfy'd this was a vain pretence, and that if *Milan* had been given him he would have aim'd at *Naples*, and at all *Italy*; for at the same time he was in League with the King of *England*, and Duke of *Guelders*, in order to make War in *Flanders*, and contriv'd how to restore *K. Henry* to the Kingdom of *Navarre*, lanch'd out much Mony among the *Swiss* to gain their Affections, and was building Ships and Gallies in all the Ports of *France*. This Year the Emperor held the Cortes at *Madrid*, where, among other things, it was ordain'd, That there should be no Saddle Mules, which was done to encourage the Breed of Horses. In *England*, King *Henry VIII.* because the Pope would not allow of his Marriage with *Anne Bullen*, threw off all Obedience to him, and declar'd himself Head of the Church. In *Germany* the Landgrave of *Hesse*, a profess'd Enemy of the House of *Austria*, having privately been in *France*, and obtain'd supplies of Money of that King, rais'd Forces, and entering the Dutchy of *Wirtemberg*, which the Emperor had taken from Duke *Ulric*, for many hainous Crimes and Offences; overthrew the Forces of King *Ferdinand*, Commanded by the Count Palatine. He was now ready to break into *Austria*, when some Princes interposing, the King and he came to an Accommodation, by which Duke *Ulric* was restor'd to his Dutchy, to hold it of King *Ferdinand*, and only his Issue Male to inherit, for want of such to return to the House of *Austria*. This Treaty was afterwards ratify'd by the Emperor.

Anabaptists. 10. Among other new Opinions in matter of Religion, which now spread abroad, that of the *Anabaptists* took mightily with the multitude, and was the cause of much Blood shed. This Persuasion had taken Root in *Flanders* and *Holland*, whence its Professors being forc'd to fly from the Officers of Justice, who punish'd them severely; they betook themselves to *Westphalia*, and there finding the City of *Munster* full of Dissensions, the *Catholicks* and *Lutherans*, each endeavouring to expel the other, privately summon'd a great Number of their Brethren to repair to that place, and being become strong enough, turn'd out both the contending Parties, making

making themselves Masters of the place, plundering the Houses of the Catholicks, polluting the Churches, robbing and Destroying Monasteries, and dragging about the Streets such as would not consent to their Antichristian Barbarities. This done, they sent Letters to invite all their Brethren that were still in *Holland* to come to *Munster*, which they call'd *The New Jerusalem come down from Heaven*, appointing them all to be on the twenty fourth of *March*, neither before nor after that Day, for so their Prophet order'd it, at a certain place half a Mile from *Munster*. These Wretches being come in great Numbers to a place call'd *Sware Water*, stay'd there, because they must not be at the place appointed before the Day prefix'd by the Prophet. The People of the Province of *Overissel*, not knowing what this multitude meant, betook themselves to Arms, and seizing them, as who apprehended no such thing, relying on the Words of their Prophet, Executed some of the Ring-leaders, till having receiv'd further Orders from the Governess of the Low-Countries, they put to Death all that refus'd to abjure, dismissing such as did. The Seamen belonging to the Ships that brought them, were all set at Liberty, they unanimously declaring they knew nothing of the Design of those People, but only brought them for their Hire. Aboard the Ships was found a considerable quantity of Gold and Silver, Garments, Arms, Colours, and Barrils of Powder, but very little Provision; because, according to their Prophet, Heaven would supply their *New Jerusalem*. Those in *Munster* being disappointed of this Recruit, gather'd what Force they could in the Neighbourhood and City, and went out to attack the Bishop, who kept them block'd up. The Head of these Incendiaries was *John of Leyden*, a Taylor by Trade, who swore himself to be a Prophet, and having at first appointed a Republican Government, by degrees made himself an absolute Monarch over those his Brutish Followers. All things in the City were in common, and at every Gate of the City stood a Prophet (for they had plenty of them) Preaching and Encouraging their People to defend their *New Jerusalem*. The Bishop and prime Catholick Inhabitants, having gather'd the greatest Force they could, lay before the City, whence the *Anabaptists* made several sallies with various

various Succesſes, During this time *John of Leyden*, one Night got out of his Bed Naked and went through the Streets crying, *Behold the King of Sion*. Then returning, he counterfeited himſelf Dumb for three Days, at the end whereof he utter'd a thouſand Impieties, calling them Revelations. Another Prophet order'd all the Books in Town, except the Bibles, to be brought into the Market Place, and there Burnt; which was accordingly done; and one *Hubert* a Smith, ſcoffing at their Propheſies, they Shot him, ſaying, *God had ſo order'd it*. Nor was this all, for they Murder'd fifty other Perſons that did not ſeem to give credit to their Propheſies. It were endleſs to repeat their Follies and Villanies, nor does it properly appertain to this History; but it will not be amiſs to obſerve, That when this *John of Leyden* was receiv'd as King, he made a great Supper, which ended, he ſate in a Chair of State, and gave every one of his Company a morſell of Bread, repeating the Holy Words of Conſecration, and the ſame he did at a Cask of Wine, giving all the People to drink. This worthy King and Prieſt had thirteen Wives, one of whom was Queen. Being well eſtabliſh'd in his new Throne, he pick'd out twenty ſix Men, moſt of them run-away Friars, and ſent them to Preach his Doctrin abroad, and gather Forces to raiſe the Blockade from before the City. The Biſhop apprehended ſome of theſe Miſſioners and Burnt them. The Siege continued 18 Months; the place being ſtreightned by degrees, Battered and Affaulted ſeveral times. At length, after many Difficulties, the Biſhop enter'd it on the twenty fifth of *September*, and took the falſe Taylor Prophet, *John of Leyden*, with five of his Wives, and ſome others of the Heads of theſe Monſters, who were all Executed, as their Villanies deſerv'd. The City was plunder'd, and all in it, without exception, put to the Sword. Thus much may ſuffice concerning the *Anabaptiſts*, wherein I have been the ſhorter, in regard the Emperor was not concern'd in reducing them, yet did not think it fit to be omitted, being a matter of ſuch great Conſequence in the Empire, and which may give ſome light to other Paſſages to be mentioed hereafter.

C H A P. XXI.

Barbaruffa made Admiral by Solyman the Great Turk, ravages the Coasts of Italy, and possesses himself of the Kingdom of Tunis, the Emperor passes over to conquer that City, an account of it and of the Forces on both sides.

THE famous Pyrate *Barbaruffa*, of whom mention has been already made in other places, deserves to fill a particular Chapter this year 1534, because all his designs were laid against the Emperor, who alone oppos'd him and broke most of his Measures. The better to raise himself to that Grandeur he aspir'd to, he sent rich Presents to the Great Turk, and to his chief Favourite *Ibrahim* the Grand Vizier. After *Andrew Doria* had taken *Coron*, *Patras*, and the Forts of the *Dardanel*s of *Lepanto*; the Grand Vizier advis'd *Solyman* to send for *Barbaruffa* and make him his Admiral, there being none in the Turkish Empire at that time so fit to oppose *Andrew Doria*. This was accordingly done to the great satisfaction of that Pyrate, who leaving his Son *Hazan*, then 20 years of Age in Possession of *Argiers*, and under the direction of two trusty Friends, and having concluded a Peace with *Benalcadi* the Moor, Lord of *Cuco*, and with the King of *France*, fitted out 7 Gallies and Eleven other Vessels, and sail'd from *Argiers* about the middle of *August*, 1533. On the Coast of *Sardinia* he met *Delizuf* a Pyrate belonging to *Genoes*, with 15 Gallies and one Galley he had taken from the *Venetians*. He desir'd him to sail along till they were past *Sicily*, for fear of meeting *Doria*, which the other consented to, then at the instigation of a Christian Captive they bore away together for the Island

Barbaruffa goes to Constantinople.

Island *Elbe*, which they plunder'd, leaving no Soul there but the treacherous Captive with his Family and Kindred. Next they gave chase to 13 great Ships bound to *Sicily* for Corn, eight of which were taken or burnt, but here *Delizuf* was kill'd, as was believ'd by order of *Barbarussa*, a Turk being reported to have shot him from a Galliot sent, as was pretended, to assist him. Upon this several Pyrats left *Barbarussa*, fearing to meet with the like usage, which troubled him, because he was not in a condition to Fight *Doria*, should he happen to meet him. Therefore he took a compass about by *Pantolera*, Water'd at *Lampadusa*, kept aloofe from *Malta*, and had bad Weather till he came to *Santa Mavra*. There news was brought him that *Andrew Doria* had made his way through the Turkish Fleet, reliev'd *Coron* and was gone back to *Sicily*. Thus he continu'd his Course and was honourably receiv'd at *Constantinople*, where he presented *Solyman* with 200 Women Slaves, each of them carrying a Vessel of Gold or Silver, besides Beautiful Boys and Eunuchs, Rich Silks, and several Wild Beasts. Nevertheless *Ibrahim* the Grand Vizier, and *Barbarussa's* chief Friend, being then absent, *Solyman* began to grow cold towards him, several Bassaes opposing his preferment, and therefore remitted him to the Grand Vizier who was then at *Aleppo*, 250 Leagues from *Constantinople*. This was no small Mortification to the Pyrate, who shutting up 1500 Christian Slaves in the Dungeons at *Constantinople*, where many of them dy'd, undertook that long Journey by Land. *Ibrahim* did him all imaginable honour, and sent him back with Letters of recommendation to *Solyman*, and all the great Men at Court; which were so effectual, that he was made a Bassa, and Admiral of the Sea, the Great Turk with his own hand giving him a Cymiter, a Royal Standard with the half-Moon on it, and a Rod of Justice, to denote his Absolute Authority in all Ports, after which the other Bassaes put him in Possession of the Gallies:

Kings of Tunis. 2. For the better understanding the Wars of *Tunis* we shall treat of, it is to be observ'd that *Barbarussa* carry'd with him to *Constantinople* *Muley Razit*, who aspir'd to be King of *Tunis*. *Mahomet* King of that place had Thirty Sons by 200 Wives and Concubines, as was reported to the Emperor in the year 1555; by *Muley*

Muley, Hamet's Embassador. The Eldest of these Sons was *Meymon*, the Second this *Razit* we now speak of. *Mahomet* dying *Hazran*, or *Hassem* Murder'd, or put out the Eyes of all the Brothers he could lay hold of, but *Razit* fled to *Bizcar*, a Town far up the Country, where, tho' he had other Wives, he Marry'd the Daughter of *Xeque Abdalla*, who treated him as a King, expecting he would be so in time, and his Wife would suffer him to eat nothing till she had tasted it, for fear of Poyson. Here he rais'd a great Multitude of *Arabs*, Horse and Foot, and march'd to *Tunis*, where; to make his Interest the stronger, he again Marry'd the Daughter of *Ylat Xeque*. He lay Twenty days before the City, but tho' he routed the Forces that came out to oppose him, could not take it, and therefore burnt the plain of *Marza*, which was all *Olive-Trees* and *Orchards*, the greatest loss *Tunis* had sustain'd in many Years. Then his *Arabs* forsaking him, he fled to *Barbarussa*, and was by him, carry'd to *Constantinople*, as we have seen.

3. *Solyman* furnish'd *Barbarussa* with Eighty Gallies, *Barbarussa* Twenty Gallies, 800 *Janizaries*, 8000 *Turkish* Souldiers, on the and 800000 *Ducats* to invade *Italy*, and particularly to *Coast of* conquer *Genoa* for the King of *France*, and then to *Italy*. reduce *Tunex*. By the way the *Pirate* put a Garrison, and Artillery into *Coron*, which, as was said above, the *Spaniards* had abandon'd; at *Cefalonia* he left some Gallies that were not fit for Service, and at *Modon* receiv'd Letters from the King of *France*, which made him hasten his Voyage. Near the *Far* of *Messina*, he burnt some Ships, had a Skirmish with Seven Gallies of *Andrew Doria's*, took the Town of *S. Nochito* in *Calabria*, where not one Soul of the Inhabitants escap'd. Thence he advanced to *Citaro*, where he burnt Seven Gallies of the Emperors on the Stocks, just ready to be launch'd, burnt *Piciota*, and other places, and so pass'd on to *Naples*, leaving all the Coasts in a mighty consternation. On the 7th of *August* he landed on the Island *Prochita* and plunder'd the Town, did the same at *Aspralongo*, where 2200 Captives were taken. That same Night he sent 2000 *Turks* with a Renegado for their guide to *Fundi*, which was 3 Leagues off, hoping to catch the Lady *Julia Gonzaga*, a Woman of extraordinary Beauty, to present her to the *Turk*, but she escap'd half

half Naked, they Pillag'd the City killing all the Men; and carrying away moſt of the Women and Children. A Phyſician was taken who being out of the Town came back for his Money, which *Barbaruffa* was much pleas'd at. In the mean while part of the Gallies went away to *Tarracina*, where the People being fled; they butcher'd the Sick and Aged People they found in their Beds. *Barbaruffa* attempted *Itri*, tho' in vain, but ſpread his terror as far as *Rome*. He ran along the Coaſt towards *Genoa*; and being come to *Savona*, from thence ſent the *Turkiſh* Embaſſador to *Marſeilles*, but the King of *France* ſending no Force to aſſiſt in the reducing of *Genoa*, *September* being almoſt ſpent; he went away to *Goleta* with ſuch abundance of Booty and Captives, that his Gallies could ſcarce contain them.

Barbaruffa takes *Tunez*. 4. On the 15th of *Auguſt* *Barbaruffa* with his whole Fleet appear'd before *Bizerta*, a Town of about 800 Houſes belonging to the King of *Tunez*. He ſent ſome Servants of *Razit's* to tell the People; their King was aboard the Gallies, but ſick, and they believing it turn'd out *Hazzan's* Governour, and receiv'd the *Turkiſh* Being poſſeſs'd of this Place he made very much of ſome of the principal Inhabitants of *Tunez*, who repair'd thither, carrying the News that their Rightful King *Razit* was aboard the Fleet. This put all the People into an uprore, becauſe they mortally hated *Hazzan* for his Viciouſneſs and Extortions, ſo that all he could ſay to convince them *Razit* was not there, and that the whole was but a deſign of Pyrates to Enſlave and Plunder them, avail'd nothing, which he perceiving fled out of the City, leaving all his Equipage and Treafure behind, whereof he afterwards felt the want. Two Renegado *Spaniards* are reported to have much contributed to the admitting of *Barbaruffa*, who entred that City in a peaceable manner, on the 22d of *Auguſt*, with about 10000 Men. As ſoon as the *Tunezines* perceiv'd they were impos'd upon, for that *Razit* was not there, they repented what they had done, and ſending for the King, who was not gone far, took up Arms and fell upon the *Turks* with more Reſolution than Conduct. The King returning they drove the *Turks* into a Tower, and were in a fair way to take it. *Barbaruffa* being at his wits end to ſee himſelf Beſieg'd and without any Proviſion.

vision. Despair gave them new vigour, and they fall'd out upon their Enemies killing Three Thousand of them, which made the rest fly to their Houses, there being besides the dead Five Thousand wounded, because having been taken upon a surprize none of them had any Armour. *Muley Hazzan* perceiving all was lost, narrowly made his escape with the Horse. The next day the Inhabitants thus forsaken and weakned submitted, and swore fidelity to *Solyman*, and *Barbarussa* as his Bassa. Thus the Pyrate made himself King of *Tunez*, and having settled the Government of that City, sent out his under Officers, who reduced all the Country about; except *Cartaan*, which is Thirty Leagues distant. Next he took care to fortify the *Alhambrae*, to clear and sink the Channel between *Tunez* and *Goleta*, which runs winding three Leagues, and to gather all the force he could to invade *Sicily*, threatening *Naples* at the same time, which oblig'd the Empeior to take those measures against him we shall now speak of.

5. In *May* this year 1534 the Empeior remov'd from *Toledo* to *Valladolid*, and the News of the *Turkish* preparations and their progress being daily brought to him, he summon'd the Cortes to meet at *Madrid* on the 20th of *October*. In the mean while he made all the necessary preparations, but with great secrecy, against *Barbarussa*, who, as has been said, had possess'd himself of *Tunez*. To be the better inform'd concerning the posture of that Pyrates Affairs, he sent *Lewis Presendes*, a *Genoese* and great Master of *Arabick*, as a Spy into *Africk*, but it cost him his Life, for he was betray'd by a *Spanish* *Morisco* who went with him, and had his Head cut off. The Empeior in the mean while us'd all possible diligence in preparing to expell the Pyrate from *Tunez*, and that with all possible secrecy. He sent orders to *Andrew Doria*, the Viceroy of *Naples*, *Sicily*, and *Sardinia*, to the *Marques del Gasto* and *Antony de Leyva*, to gather all the Forces, Ships, Provisions, and Ammunition they could; he gather'd a great sum of Money, commanded the *Marques* of *Mondejar*, Captain-General of the King's

Empeior
prepares a-
gainst Bar-
barussa.

dom of *Granada*, to make preparations on that side; gave directions for raising Eight Thousand *German*, Eight Thousand *Spaniards*, and Eight Thousand *Italians*, and incorporating the old Souldiers of *Naples* and *Coron*, which were about Four Thousand, and not so satisfy'd pray'd the Pope, King of *France*, and great Master of *Malta* to assist him with their Gallies. That King positively refus'd, for he was then in League with the *Turk*. His Holiness promis'd to send Twelve Gallies, granted a Fourth of all Ecclesiastical Revenues to carry on the War, and sent his Imperial Majesty a Cap, and a Sword bless'd as is usual upon such occasions. These things being so far concert'd the Emperor made his will, which he left seal'd, appointing the Empress Governess of his Kingdoms, and then set forwards for *Barcelona* to hasten the Equipping of the Fleet, on the last day of *February* 1535. *Barbarussa* having receiv'd Intelligence from *France* that the Emperor was preparing to go over against him in Person, dispatch'd in the first place an express to *Constantinople* to beg assistance, and set all the Christian Slaves, to the number of Nine Thousand, together with a third part of the Citizens to work every day upon the Fortifications of *Tunez*, enlarg'd and strengthened *Goleta* that it might contain a considerable Garrison, call'd to him all the Troops that were at *Argier* and *Gelves*, summon'd in the Pyrates, ask'd aid of the King of *Tremecen*, and gave pay to several Commanders of *Arabs*.

6. That nothing may be wanting in matter of Truth in this Relation of the Expedition of *Tunez*, I will not only set it down according to the most Authentick accounts both in Print and Manuscript, but from the Emperors own Original Letters to the Marques of *Cantete*, Viceroy of *Navarre*, in which he acquaints him with all the particulars of this Action from the first undertaking to the conclusion of it. The first that arriv'd at *Barcelona* on the 28th of *April*, 1535, was Prince *Lewis*, Brother to the King of *Portugal*, sent by that King to the Emperor's assistance, with Twenty Four Caravels, one large Galleon, and two Ships bravely Mann'd, and full of

Preparation
against
Tunez.

Provisions and Ammunition, all at that Kings
 presence, besides a slighty number of Gentlemen
 Voluntiers. On the first of *May* came *Andrew*
Noria with Twenty Two Galleys, and he being
 Admiral of the Fleet no other could carry the
 Royal Standard, but the Emperor desir'd of him
 that the Standard of his Brother the King of *Portu-*
gal might be hoisted aboard his Admiral, which was
 accordingly done. *D. Alvaro Bacan*, General of
 the *Spanish* Galleys, came in with 12 on the 12th of
May. Five more were afterwards launch'd, and
 there were Thirty off the Stocks in the Docks. Thus
 the Emperor's Navy joyn'd at *Barcelona*, and there
 only wanted that part which was under the Mar-
 ches del *Gasto*. All the *Spanish* Forces, which as
 Bishop *Saravia* who compos'd a particular Treatise
 of this Expedition Writes, were Nine Thousand
 Five Hundred chosen Men in pay, Four Thousand
 Five Hundred Voluntiers, and Seven Hundred *An-*
dalusian Light-Horse were Shipp'd by the Marques
de Mondejar at *Malaga*, and arriv'd at *Barcelona*
 on the 25th of *May*. Besides these Troops One
 Thousand Two Hundred Musketers were rais'd to
 serve aboard the Galleys. Proclamation was made
 that no Women, Boys, or other useles Persons
 should be admitted aboard the Fleet, and notwith-
 standing all precautions, when it arriv'd at *Tunez*
 there were found aboard above Four Thousand Wo-
 men. To mention all the particulars our Author
 does of a review the Emperor made, of the manner
 of Shipping, the Rich Accoutrements of the Gen-
 try, the Numbers of Persons of Quality, and the
 Ornaments of the Navy, would render this work
 more Voluminous than is convenient, and therefore
 we are necessitated to pass by many things in silence,
 which are pleasing enough to Read, that we may
 be the more particular in matters of the greatest
 moment. On the 30th of *May* the Emperor went
 aboard, and that day the whole Navy set sail, and
 having made some considerable way, the Wind
 coming about, was on the 5th of *June*, forced into
Majorca. There the Emperor din'd ashore, the
 Fleet which had been dispers'd came together again

at *Port Maon*, in the Island *Minorca*, and on the eleventh of *June* put into *Callar*, the capital City of *Sardinia*. Here the *Marquess del Gasto* joyn'd the Imperial Navy with the Ships and Forces he had been gathering in *Italy*; the latter consisted of five Thousand *Italians*, eight Thousand *Germans*, and two Thousand four Hundred *Spaniards*, besides a great number of Persons of Quality and Gentlemen Voluntiers, with a numerous train of Servants, all fit for any military Execution. The Pope sent twelve Gallies, and the great Master of *Malta* four. The Emperor in his Letter to the *Marquess de Canete* says, he had in this Fleet seventy four Gallies, thirty Galliotte, Brigantines, and other small Vessels of that sort, and near thirty Ships including the King of *Portugals* Caravels, Galeon and Caracks. The Land Forces were twenty five thousand Foot, besides Courtiers and Voluntiers, of which number eight Thousand were *Germans*, five Thousand *Italians*, and the rest *Spaniards*. There were also two Thousand Horse, some say more, and some less; of these eight Hundred were in compleat Armour. The Bishop *Saravia* in his Relation says, The whole number of Vessels of all sorts was four Hundred and twenty, whereof one Hundred forty five were for Rowing.

The Emperor's Lands in *Africk*.

7. At *Callar* the Emperor receiv'd advice by some Christians, who had fled from *Tunex* in a bark, that *Barbarussa* was fortifying *Goleta* and *Tunex*, with all possible Application. This made him order all aboard on the thirteenth and the foureteenth, the Fleet was in sight of *Biserta* in *Africk*, and the Wind holding in North-west; on the fifteenth it arriv'd at *Porto Farina*, formerly call'd *Vrica*, where *Cato* ended his Days. The *Portugueses*, who had the Van, enter'd the Harbour first, and all the Navy follow'd; the Admiral *Galley* as it went in striking upon a bank of Sand, but was easily brought off. *Porto Farina* is in the middle, between *Biserta* and the ruins of *Carthage*, thirty Miles distant from each. The Emperor made no stay here, but went on to *Cape Carthage*, where 15000 Men were landed the next Day, being the

the sixteenth of June. The Marquess del Gasto and D. John Manrique, who had been sent with some Galeys to view *Goleta*, brought an account of what they could discover. A Ship the *Turks* had taken from the Christians, was here sunk, by the Imperial Galeys; two others were taken from under the Cannon of *Goleta*, and the Seamen of two French Ships found here, gave an account, that they had carry'd the French Embassador, and two Deputies from *Barbarussa* to *Constantinople*; by which it appear'd, the King of *France* had given intelligence of the Emperor's Designs. No opposition was made at Landing, only as the Troops advanc'd some Moorish Horse and Foot, that lay hid among the ruins of old *Carthage*, skirmish'd with the *Imperialists*. Therefore his Majesty apprehending some Ambush, kept his Troops that Night in the Villages and Hamlets upon the Coast about *Carthage*. Next Day the rest of the Forces, Horses, and Train of Artillery, Landed. In the mean while, *Andrew Doria* from the Galleys, batter'd and took the Water-Tower, which stands low on the Shore, and in which there are eight Wells abounding in Water, tho' only three of them prov'd useful to the Army: That same Day, some open Towns and Castles about *Carthage*, were taken, but there was nothing in them, except some small quantity of Corn and Oyl. On the seventeenth, all the Forces were a Shore, and the Emperor put 300 Spanish Souldiers into an old Tower, reported to have been part of *Carthage*, now call'd *Rocade Massificanes*, that being a place of Strength and overlooking all the Coast. That Night the Tents were pitch'd on a Hill, call'd *Cartase*, between *Carthage* and the Water-Tower.

8. *Barbarussa*, at first, would not believe the Emperor came in Person against him; but being at last fully convinc'd, he made all the Force he could against him, and at a review, found he had 7000 *Turks*, besides 1000 that were in *Goleta*, 800 *Janizaries*, 7000 *Moorish* Archers, 7000 more with Pikes and Lances, and 8000 *Arabian* Horse, many of them without Saddles, after the ancient manner of the *Numidians*. Some accounts said he had more

Barbarussa's strength and Preparations.

The HISTORY of

Men, but the Town-Men are not reckoned, not many thousands of *Arabs*, that afterwards came to him, in hopes of plunder, insomuch, that at some times they were reckoned to be 14000 strong, some of them with coats of Maile, and others with *Lances* above twenty Foot long, headed at both ends, wherewith they did Execution flying, as well as fighting, their Horses lean but very fleet. When *Barbarussa* understood the Fleet was drawing near, he sent fourteen Gallies to *Bona* and twelve to *Alger*, all loaded with great Wealth, shut up all the Christian Slaves in the Fort of *Tunez*, and had once thoughts of burning them Alive, for fear they should mutiny. He order'd that all such as were afraid should depart the City in three Days, some went away, others he turn'd out, that they might not consume Provisions in case of a Siege. Then having held a council of War, he went to view *Goleta* reinforce'd the Garrison, gave the Command to *Synan* the Jew, a brave Eunuch, and return'd himself to *Tunez*, for fear of a revolt. Great numbers of *Arabs* came from *Tunez* to skirmish with the *Imperialists*, bringing great Drums that could be heard in the Camp, and a sort of Wind Musick, like Hautboys. On the 18th of *June*, there happen'd a great Skirmish, which rais'd such a Dust they could not see one another, but the Emperor coming out with his Domesticks and the *Castilian* Volunteers, the Infidels soon fled. The Emperor would not suffer his Men to go out, as often as the Enemy provok'd them, because the *Mahometans* took the advantage of lying in Ambush in the Orchards and ruin'd Buildings. A Ship belonging to a Jew, worth 30000 Ducats, was taken by the Galley, call'd the Eagle. Some Renegadoes coming over to the Emperor, gave intelligence of the Posture of the Enemy, he pardon'd them all, except a Friar that was among them, whom he order'd to be burnt. Some were for advising the Emperor to leave the Fort of *Goleta*, and March directly to *Tunez*; alledging that the Head being once reduced, the Members would soon follow: But his Majesty wisely resolv'd not to leave such a

fortress

Fortress behind him, and between him and his Provisions.

Goleta is so call'd from the word *Gola*, signifying the neck, because it is seated on a neck of Land, made by a channel, which runs from the Sea into the Bay that is five Miles from *Carthage*, and reaches to *Tunez*. It is a square Fort, the Walls of Brick, very thick, and the Ditch deep, the breadth of it 60 paces, and the length 65, in the midst of it a good Cistern, one Gate look'd towards *Tunez*, the other towards the Sea, the other two sides face North and South, the Soile it stands on, is Sandy, producing neither Tree nor Grass, the distance from *Carthage* is seven miles, the channel that runs by it, to the Bay is so narrow that a Galley cannot row on it; besides, it is shallow and full of Shelves, so that none but small Boats can go upon it, and that by observing Posts, set up at certain Distances. On the right of it in the way to *Tunez*, the Coast is plain and Sandy, and not above a stones throw in breadth; beyond that all the Country is full of Olive, Orange, and other Trees. On the left hand is a rough mountainous way, but down by the Bay, a smooth broad Road. *Tunez* is seated on the South side of this Bay, on the West of it, are the towers of Salt and Water. The City wants Water and abounds in Fruit. *Barbarussa* perceiving that the Town of *Tunez* cou'd never be made strong, because commanded by the Hills on the West side; that in case he would have Fortify'd it, the thing was not practicable without destroying the Suburbs, which the People would have highly resent'd; and that if nothing else had hindr'd, the time was too short, he resolv'd to make the most of *Goleta*, to keep his Enemies at a distance from *Tunez*, to secure his Fleet, and support his Reputation; for it put the Christians upon many Difficulties, as enduring the extream heat, want of Water, Scarcity of Provisions, and those they had Salt. Besides he was satisfy'd the Emperor would never divide his Army to encompass *Goleta* on both sides, and then one would be always open to put in Supplies; nor would he march to *Tunez*, and leave such a Fortress behind which might ob-

Goleta
described,
and *Tunez*.

struct the Passage of his Provisions. These Considerations made him to run a strong Wall from one Angle of *Goleta* along the Shore, till the Water Tower; then turning towards the *Bafon*, or close by upon the Angle of this Wall, he rais'd a Bastion so very high, that it afterwards did the Christians little harm; and the time being too short to carry on the Wall to the *Bafon*, he made up what was wanting with Wool-packs, Gabions, and Timbers so link'd together, that it was much stronger than the Wall of Brick and Stone; before it was a deep Ditch supply'd with Water from the Sea. On the East side he made such another Work, but not so strong, because there was less danger on that side. Within the Fort he made a broad Bridge over the Channel of Water, for the use of the Defendants. From the Angles where the East and South Walls met, ran out a Ravelin as far as the Rocks on the Landing Place. On the West side, towards the Emperors Camp, was the new Wall well defended with Cannon: Besides, on a Platform, towards the Water Tower, there were thirty great Guns pointing to the Imperial Camp. There was also a Cannal dug fifteen or sixteen Paces over, with a Bridge to lay on or take off with ease, and strong Walls on both sides, three Hundred Paces in length; here the Gallies were laid up. The *Bafon*, or *Bay* that reacheth to *Tunez*, may be waded any where, and serves to carry off the Filth and Rain Water of the City, and to secure Gallies drawn up thither all by main Strength. Between the Sea and *Goleta*, was as much space as serv'd to raise a Platform, which secur'd the Coast, and cover'd twelve Gallies *Barbarussa* kept there at first, and afterwards six, to be ready upon occasion. A great number of small Boats was employ'd in carrying Provisions from *Tunez* to *Goleta*, into which he put six Thousand *Turks*, and two Thousand *Mores*; in which Number were eight Hundred Janizaries, with plenty of Ammunition and all Necessaries. Having given an Account of the Forces on both sides, and of the Places to be Attack'd, we will give the particulars of this Expedition in the following Chapter.

C H A P.

C H A P. XXII.

The Particulars of the Siege of the Fort of Goleta, which is taken by Storm ; Barbaruffa gives the Emperor Battle ; is routed ; flies from Tunez ; The Emperor possesses himself of that Place, and restores the Morish King.

THE Emperor having resolv'd to Attack *Goleta*, order'd the Trenches to be open'd and made regular Approaches to save the expence of Blood ; he took his Post under the Water Tower on the Shore, with the old *Spanish* Foot that came from *Italy* before him, and the *Germans* towards the Canal. The new Rais'd *Spaniards*, brought out of *Spain*, were left with twelve pieces of Cannon on the rising Ground he came from ; part of the *Italians* were plac'd in the first Encampment, and another Body of them was posted between the old *Spaniards* and the Canal, on a Ditch almost half a Mile long, running from the Sea to the *Basin*, which *Barbaruffa* had cut, to bring more Water into the said *Basin* from the Sea, and for the Boats to go between *Tunez* and *Goleta*, but time falling short, it was not finish'd. On the nineteenth of *June*, a Ship laden with Spice, Ammunition, and other Commodities, run in among the Fleet, and was taken, the *Turks* that belong'd to it chain'd to the Oar ; but the *Mores* were set at liberty, and sent to *Tunez* to oblige that People. This same day there was a hot skirmish with a great number of *Arabs*, among whom were many Camels and Dromedaries, which

frighted

The HISTORY of

frighted the *Spanish* Horses as not being us'd to them: The *Arabian* Women ran among them without any apprehension of Danger, carrying Water and other Refreshments; 3 of them were taken, one of whom had a Musket on her Shoulder, a Flask by her side, and a lighted Match. The *Imperialists* suffer'd very much, being continually alarm'd on both sides, from the Fort and from *Tunex*; besides there being no *Pioniers*, the Soldiers, and even Gentlemen underwent all the Labour at the Works, which could not be carry'd on but by Night, because of the continual Firing of great and small Shot from the Walls. These and many other Inconveniencies very much harass'd the Army. On the twenty first of *June* there came to the Camp a Troop of forty *Albanese* Horse; who, tho' few in Number, perform'd such Actions as gain'd them great Reputation. It has been mention'd before, that the Forces in Pay were about twenty six Thousand; besides whom, there were thought to be sixteen Thousand Volunteers, Servants, and such People fit to bear Arms, and at least 10000 Seamen, Traders, and others able to do Service upon occasion, so that the whole Number amounted to above fifty Thousand Men. Among these, tho' of several Nations, Peace and Unity was pretty well preserv'd, only by the *German*s, who sometimes were unruly, and once took away some Sheep and Beefs kept for the Emperot, among the Ruins of *Carthage*, Wounding the Guards, and Abusing the Emperors Servants, in such manner, that the Camp was almost in an Uproar; the Ringleaders being taken, were Condemned, but only two of them Executed. Another time the Emperor commanding some of them to their Battalion, and one of them refusing to Obey, he struck him with the but end of his Launce, upon which the *German* presented his Piece against His Majesty, but being seiz'd, was presently Executed. This same 21st. of *June*, the Count de *Brelo* arriv'd from *Sicily*, with a great many Gentlemen in nine Gallies and Brigantines, belonging to private Persons. Besides these, came the great Carack of the Knights
of

of *Malta*, carrying many piéces of Cannon, and five Hundred Soldiers besides Sailers, and some Ships from *Biscay*. There was plenty of Wine in the Camp, but every thing else was scarce; so that a Hen was sold sometimes for one, sometimes for two Ducats, a little Cow for ten, and a pitiful Sheep for four. Fresh Bread there was none, but the Men had allowance of Bisket, Bacon and salt Meat. Bad Diet and worse Water, bred Distempers among the Soldiers, and their continual Labour contributed much to it; but his Imperial Majesty took extraordinary Care of the Sick, as did F. *Antony de Guevara*, his Historiographer, appointed by him over the Hospital.

2. On the twenty second, five Thousand *Mores* and *Arabs* came down to the Charge, besides a great Number that lay hid in the Ditches, and among the Olive Trees, and several were Kill'd on both sides, particularly one Captain *Peter Xarez*, who, the Day before, had much boasted of his Courage, now to make good his Words, ran upon the *Arabian* Horse, and tho' three other Gentlemen hazarded their Lives to bring him off, was there Kill'd by them. The Engagement grew so close, that both parties fought with Sword in Hand, and the *Marques del Gasto* riding to bring off his Men, was so hard set by the *Arabs*, that he was forc'd to save himself by his Horses good Heels, leaving his Hat behind him. On the twenty third the *Spaniards* and *Italians* wrought all Night carrying on their Works. In the Morning the *Spaniards* drew off, and the *Italians* taking their Rest after the Labour of the Night, a Thousand *Turks*, with eight Horse, rally'd out upon them, so unexpectedly, that they put them to Rout, entring their Works and killing forty of them. Count *Sarne*, Collonel of a Regiment of twelve Hundred *Italians*, who Commanded at this Post, rally'd what Men he could, and bringing them to the Charge, drove the Infidels out of the Trenches: But not so satisfy'd, he pursued them farther, and going too far, was himself Kill'd, with several Gentlemen, and good Soldiers. Of the *Turks* about thirty Men were kill'd, and among

Progress
of the Siege.

among them some Officers. The old *Spanish* Soldiers, and the Emperor himself taking the Alarm, came to succour the *Italians*, but they had already beaten the *Turks* out of their Trenches. At Night the Besieg'd made another Sally, but to their own loss and it being the Eve of the Feast of St. *John Baptist*, the *Turks* fir'd all their Cannon, and sounded their Trumpets and other Musical Instruments. This same Night two Thousand Men were set to work to raise a Battery to play upon the Besieged, and the *Spaniards* mounted the Trenches. In the Morning, of the twenty fourth by break of Day, three Thousand *Turks* thought to have surpriz'd the *Spaniards*; but finding they had taken the Alarm, retir'd without attempting any thing. Some time after six Hundred *Turks*, and thirty Horse watching their opportunity, fell upon the Besiegers, then overcome with Sleep, by reason of the Labour of the Night, and surprizing them in this Condition, Kill'd above fifty, among whom were some Men of Note, Wounded above one Hundred and fifty. Fresh Companies of *Spaniards*, and the *Albanese* Troop coming in, the Infidels were Repuls'd, and pursu'd up to the very Fort, whence many of the Christians were Kill'd in their Retreat. Of the *Turks* about eighty were found Dead. The Emperor order'd two Thousand *Germans* to reinforce the *Spaniards* in the Trenches, because, the Camp spreading so wide, it was not easie to relieve them when there was occasion. On the twenty fourth the Besieged made another Sally, and many were kill'd and hurt on both sides; but of ten Friars that led on the Christians, encouraging them, and carrying a Crucifix, not one receiv'd the least Wound. This Day *Ferdinand de Alarcon*, for his great Worth, call'd Lord *Alarcon*, came to the Camp, bringing with him four Gallies, three of *Sicily*, and one of *Naples*, besides a Galliot and a Brigantine, and in them several *Sicilian* and *Neapolitan* Gentlemen, some Recruits of Soldiers and Supplies of Provisions and Ammunition. Other Vessels came from *Spain* with Recruits and Supplies, whereof there was sufficient want. *Alarcon* brought the Camp into

into a less compass, forbid skirmishing with the Infidels, assign'd the Ingenier *Ferramoli* to attend the *Spanish*, and *John Maria*, the *Italian* approaches, drew eight Hundred Men out of the Ships and Gallies, who carry'd on the Trenches two Hundred Paces; and adding more Men to all the Works, made them approach still nearer and nearer. *Ferramoli* carry'd on his Trenches to the Sea, and planted a Battery to play either way, as occasion requir'd. This same day arriv'd two Ships thought to be lost, with some Recruits, and a Galley bringing the *Marquess de Terranova*, with several Persons of Quality.

3. The 26th day much Blood was spilt on both sides, for *Barbarussa* resolv'd to attack the Christian Army with his whole force, and order'd those in *Goleta* to sally out upon them at the same time. The Emperor having intelligence of it, drew nearer to *Goleta* with his whole Army, and doubled the Guards in the Trenches, which the besieged perceiving they never offer'd to stir. The Emperor seeing no Enemy, thought to give his Men some Rest, but before they could take any, the Infidels, who lay conceal'd among the Olive-Trees, appear'd with several Pieces of Cannon before them, firing into the Camp, as did abundance of Barks on the Canal. The Infidels drawing nearer, the *Marquess of Mondejar* was Commanded with Two Hundred and Fifty Horse, carrying as many Firelocks behind them, to make himself master of the Enemies Cannon that was in the Olive-Gardens. The attempt was desperate, as well for the number of *Turks* that guarded it, as because there were Ditches, old Walls, and Vineyards in the way, however the *Marquess* advanc'd, Six Thousand Foot following close to second him. His Firelocks alighted too soon, the Horse charg'd in disorder, and being overpower'd most of them wheel'd off towards the Canal, but the *Marquess*, with about Thirty of them that follow'd him, and his Musketeers, broke the Enemies Foot in the Olive-Gardens, who flying fell in upon those that were engag'd near the Canal. The Infidel Horse came on in great Numbers, so that the

Great defeat of the Infidels.

Marquess

Marqueſs thinking to retire, was [tumbled into a Ditch, where they beſet and had like to have kill'd him, but that his Horſe perceiving the danger he was in came to his reſcue, and brought him off, tho' much wounded. On the ſide of the Canal the Fight continu'd very hot; ſo that the Emperor perceiving his Men were in danger, advanc'd with all the Gentlemen Voluntiers, order'd eight Thouſand Foot to follow with all poſſible ſpeed: He with his Horſe, which were about four Hundred, gave ſuch a deſperate Charge upon the *Mahometans*, that ſome Men of Note begg'd of him not to expoſe his Perſon to ſuch eminent danger, which he took no notice of but went on where the hotteſt of the Action was. His Men ſeeing him act with ſuch Bravery, endeavour'd to imitate him, and ſo ſucceſſfully, that they ſoon put the Infidels to Flight, took their Cannon in the Olive-Gardens, and ſome Pieces on the Canal, which they had endeavour'd to burſt but could not. The Horſe purſu'd two Miles: What Number was Kill'd could not be known. Tho' many Perſons of quality ſignaliz'd themſelves upon this occaſion, yet none more than the Emperor. A *Moore* here offer'd him to Poiſon *Barbaruſſa*, but he would not take ſo baſe an Advantage, tho' againſt ſo vile an Enemy. Some pretended *Mahometan* Saints told their Men the Chriſtians Shot would have no Power to hurt them; but they ſoon found the falſhood of this Prediction. Old Witches ran before the *Moore*s, ſcattering Powders in the Air, and uſing other Charms to ſecure them; and ſome Women were ſeen Fighting a Horſe-back to revenge the Death of their Huſbands, or Dying to be convey'd with them to *Mahomet's* Paradise.

A great
Storm.

4. On the twenty eighth the Sky being very clear, on a ſudden there roſe ſuch a Storm of Wind, as preſently cover'd it all with Clouds; the Thunder and Lightning was terrible, the Sand blew about ſo that it blinded the Men: The Tents were all thrown down, and the Soldiers were ſcarce able to ſtand to their Arms. The Beſieg'd thought to make their Advantage of this Confuſion, ſetting two Hundred Men to ſhuffle up the Sand, that it might

might fly into the Eyes of the Besiegers, and making a Sally at the same time, which avail'd them little, for they were repuls'd with Loss. At Night the Storm was repeated, but soon blew over, and not a Ship or Galley lost, save only a few Brigantines and Boats stranded on a Point running out from the Land. On the twenty ninth *Muley Hazzan*, or *Hassan*, the distress'd King of *Tunex* came to the Imperial Camp with about two Hundred *Moores*, ill Clad and worse Mounted; he was so poor, by reason he had been seven Months absconding in the Mountains, for fear of being betray'd to *Barbarussa*. All the Nobility went out of the Camp to welcome him; being come into the Emperors Tent, His Majesty stood up; *Hazzem* kiss'd his Shoulder, and then made a short Speech, thanking his Majesty for coming in Person with so great a Power to restore him, and promising perpetual Gratitude and Fidelity. His chief Men kiss'd the Emperor's Garment or Feet; some kneeling, some quite prostrate, and powring a thousand Blessings on him. The Emperor comforted the King, and promis'd to put an end to his misfortunes; then was he, and four of his followers, treated in the same place where he sat, and the rest were distributed among the Persons of Quality, with Orders to make much of them. The next day the *Moores* made a sort of skirmish among themselves, shewing their good Horsemanship, and great dexterity in managing their long Launces, some of which were ten Yards in length. The King was shew'd the whole Camp and saluted by the small Shot, all which he much admir'd. This day *Beliran de Godoy* came to the Camp with a Hundred Men, The Trenches were carry'd on, the Gallies bringing Fascine, and some more pieces of Cannon were planted to play upon the Fort.

Muley Hassan comes to the Camp.

5. On the 30th *Fabricio Maramaldi* arriv'd from *Genoa*, with one Ship, and in it 100 Gentlemen and Soldiers inferior to none in the Army. A small Vessel was taken in the Bay, carrying Twelve Christian Slaves, and as many *Turks* and *Moors*. The Master of it was the *Morisco*, who, we said in the last Chapter, betray'd *Presendes*, the Emperors Spy

Journal of the Siege.

The HISTORY of

Spy to *Barbarussa*, for which he was dragg'd at *Camels Tail*, and then quarter'd. There was continual Action in Parties, and *Muley Hassem's Moors*, that they might be known by the Christians, wore Olive-branches, behaving themselves very well against the Enemy, who at first took them for Friends till they felt them. *Lazarus*, Commander of the *Albanese Troop*, perform'd many brave Actions, and being beset by Three *Turks*, kill'd one of them and put the other Two to flight. Some Souldiers having pursu'd Seven *Janizaries* into a Cave, offer'd them quarter, which they refusing, they fetch'd Straw and burnt them. A Foot Souldier hid himself behind a Wall, in which there was a Loop-hole for his Musket, and agreed with Two Troopers that they should pretend to charge and then fly from the *Moors* till they drew them within his reach, which they practis'd so long till he shot Eight. *Ferdinand de Alarcon* being overpower'd by a great number of *Moors* and *Arabs*, was forced to take shelter in the Houses and Towers of *Almarza*; whether the Emperor came in person with the strength of the Army to rescue him. The Trenches still advanc'd and were now near the Fort of *Goleta*. The Camp now began to grow sickly, because the Sun scorch'd all day, and the Night Dews were excessive Cold, besides there was but little good Water, what they ha'd being much disturb'd and sometimes brackish, the Souldiers eat green Apples to quench their thirst, and the Bisket aboard the Fleet began to breed Maggots. Nor was this all, for the Labour became intollerable, not only because there were no Pioniers, but for want of Turfe to carry on the Works, all about there being loose Sand, so that they were forc'd to make use of Timber, Planks, and Fascine, all which was brought from Cape *Azesian*, above Twenty Miles distant, by the Gallies, and carry'd through the Trenches. Some Renegado Spies that were in the Camp found an opportunity to Nail Three pieces of Canon. The Emperor gave *Muley Hassem* Twenty Thousand Ducats to bring a Number of *Arabs* to his Service, but after they had receiv'd the Money they would not come,

however

However knowing it was not that Kings fault he gave him Twenty Thousand Ducats more, and several pieces of Silk, making very much of his followers, which made them send for their Wives and Children. On the 4th of *July* the Duke of *Alva* with all the Horse went out a foraging, which was perform'd without any considerable opposition, but the Besieged perceiving the Camp was weak made a great Sally, which was so vigorously repuls'd, that the *Spaniards* pursuing close, set up their Colours upon a Ravelin and Bastion, being bravely seconded by the *Germans*. These Places were so expos'd to the Fort that there was no maintaining of them, for which reason the Emperor caus'd them to retreat to their Works, at which time many of them fell. Above Two Hundred of them were kill'd, and abundance of *Turks*, all which Bodies lying in the hot Sun made such a stench, that the Air was infected, and it did much harm among the Soldiers. On the 5th Two Christians and a Renegado, all well clad and rich in Money, deserted from *Tunex* to the Emperor, and gave him intelligence that *Barbarussa* intended to surprize his Camp with a great power, for which reason the Guards were doubled. That Infidel at the same time sent recruits into *Goleta*, and some Treasure to be secur'd at *Argiers*. Nothing remarkable was done the 6th and 7th, only the Emperor order'd all the wounded Men to be wafted over to Sicily. The Canal that runs from *Tunex* to *Goleta* serv'd to supply the Besieg'd with all Necessaries, for which reason it was resolv'd in a Council of War to cut off that Communication; and persons being appointed to sound it, they found Water enough for their Boats, and all things were dispos'd for putting this project in execution, but they that were to perform it disagreeing, nothing was done in it, tho' the thing was practicable, and very advantageous. The 9th was spent in carrying on the works, and the 10th Proclamation was made, that all who could not carry Arms should go aboard the Ships upon pain of Death, and those aboard who were fit for Service, should go ashore. As many sick and

wounded as a Gailey could hold were sent away to *Palermo*. Four Gaileys arriv'd from *Sicily*, and a great Galeon from *Spain* with about Three Hundred Gentlemen and Souldiers, besides a smaller Galeon, two Ships, two Tenders, and a Caravel from *Biscay* with some Men and Horses, and one of the Ships loaded with Meal, Bisket, and Cannon. There came also four Ships with Provisions and some Men from *Sardinia*, and a Brigantine from *Spain*, with the News that the Empress was deliver'd of a Daughter.

Goleta
St. m'd.

6. *Barbarussa* being inform'd that the Tower on point *Cartesa*, kept by a few Christian Souldiers, might be easily taken before it could be reliev'd, and that it did him much harm by discovering the motions of his Troops, he sent a strong Body on the 12th of *July* to attack it. There were but 10 Musketiers and some Pikemen within, who tho' so few yet made good their Post, till the Emperor taking the Alarm, came down to their relieve, and the Infidels perceiving it fled. Howsoever the place was abandon'd, his Majesty intending the next day to storm *Goleta*. Orders were given accordingly for the Horse and Foot to be at their several posts, Sixty Gaileys were appointed to batter the Fort, others to keep guard at *Cape Cartesa*, and others to lye on the side of *Rada*, and cut off any Succours that might be sent to *Goleta*. The next day the Wind blew so hard that nothing could be done as had been intended. As soon as the Storm was over, the Emperor resolv'd to loose no time because of the Sicknes that rag'd in his Camp, and therefore on the 14th by break of day had all his Troops in order, and discover'd Twenty Pieces of Cannon planted at the *Spanish* Attack, and Sixteen at the *Italian*. Two Thousand Musketiers were placed in a small Trench before the Water-Tower and Emperors Tent, to give notice when any Troops advanced from *Tuniz*. The signal being given, as soon as it was day the Cannon began to play on all sides. The *Spaniards* batter'd the Bastion on the shore, the new Wall and Fort of *Goleta*; the *Italians* that Work the Infidels had rais'd towards the Canal, and Six Companies

panies of *Spaniards*, with Six Pieces of Cannon, battered the Wall. The Fleet play'd upon the Bastion on the shore, the new Wall and Fort of *Goleta*. Nothing was omitted by the *Turks* that might conduce to their defence, and their Cannon did great Execution, for aboard the Prince of *Salerno's* Galley alone they kill'd Thirty Five Men, as many in the other Galleys, and no less ashore. Nor were the *Moors* and *Arabs* in the Olive-Gardens idle, but Sally'd towards the Two Thousand Musketers that were in the Trench, yet retiring so soon that they neither did nor receiv'd much harm. The Battery continu'd hot for Six or Seven hours without intermission, in which time above Four Thousand Bullets were spent, but to good effect, for they brought down a great part of the Fort with the Cannon and Cannons on it. About Two in the Afternoon, the Emperor having sent to view the Breach, conferr'd with the *Marques del Gasto*, Prince *Doria*, and *Granville* the *German*, and having spoke some few words to the Souldiers of each Nation, gave orders for the Assault, when a Gentleman came to him from *D. Alvaro Bazan*, to inform him, that the Galleys had made a Breach next the Shore, and if his Majesty pleas'd to give leave he would attack it, with the Souldiers belonging to the Galleys. This advice hasten'd the Assault, and the signal was immediately given. The *Spaniards* ran on furiously, being led and encourag'd by a *Franciscan Friar* carrying a Crucifix. *D. Alvaro Bazan* leap'd ashore with his Men, and was the first that entred *Goleta* on that side; tho' others were before him on the Land. The *Turks* fir'd some pieces of Cannon towards the *Italians*, which caus'd them to halt, and the *Spaniards* that were between the two Attacks to shrink, till the Emperor calling upon them in Person, they recover'd themselves, and went on undaunted. In short, all the Nations in the Imperial Camp made their way through the Breaches, and gain'd Immortal Honour, driving the Infidels, who at first gave way gently, but soon turn'd their Backs and threw away their Arms. Some of them would have made a stand in the Body of the Fort, but it availed them

little. The Slaughter was very great, for they that were to guard the Entrenchment towards the Canal, not being able to get over the Bridge by reason of the Throng, threw themselves into the Water to escape in the Boats, but the Christians running in after them up to the Arinpits slew many. Ten Thousand *Moors* that were in the Mountain of the Mosque, which overlook'd the Camp, perceiving *Golea* was taken, and the Christians pursu'd the Infidels, gave a great shout and went off. The chase was follow'd above two Miles, till the Souldiers spent with heat, thirst and Labour, were not able to go any further. Had the Boats before-mention'd been brought into the Canal, as was intended, the Execution had been much greater, and the Booty more considerable; for many of the Turks fled that way to *Tunex*, carrying their Wealth with them, however many were drowned and their Riches lost by overloading the Boats. The Emperor in his Letter to the Marques *de Canete* says about Two Thousand of the Infidels were kill'd, and between Sixty and Eighty Gallies and Vessels of all sorts taken, besides a great number of Pieces of Cannon, computed by our Author to be near Four Hundred, many of them with *Flower-de-Luces* on them, abundance of Provisions, no great Booty for the Souldiers, but great quantities of Ammunition and Arms. Several Persons contended for the Honour of being the first that entred the Place, and the Emperor on this account settled a Pension of Two Hundred and Fifty Ducats a year on Ensign *Fuensalida*, the like on Ensign *Mendoza*, Two Hundred on *Alonso de Toro*, an Hundred on Captain *Michael Navarra*, the same on *Michael de Salas*, and so on *James de Isla*, and *Herrera*. The same day the Emperor, accompanied by Prince *Lewis of Portugal*, and *Muley Hassem*, entred *Golea*, and looking upon the *Moors* King, told him, that was the inlet to restore him to his Kingdom, for which that Prince return'd thanks, and pray'd for his success.

Barbarusſa was as much troubled for the loſs of his Fleet, as that of the Fort, becauſe it depriv'd him of the principal means of making his eſcape, in caſe he were expell'd *Tunez*. Howſoever he put the beſt Countenance on it, endeavouring to encourage his Men, by telling them, that the very heat of the Country, want of Proviſions and Water, and other Inconveniencies would ruin the Emperor's Army, without fighting a ſtroke, ſhould he offer to advance to *Tunez*. His next care was to ſhow himſelf Bountiful to all Perſons to gain their Affections, to ſend Four Hundred *Turks* to *Bona*, where he laid up a conſiderable Treafure, with orders to ſent out Fourteen Gallies and a Galliot, with all ſort of Ordnance, and to Muſter all his Forces, which he found amounted to One Hundred and Fifty Thouſand Men of all ſorts, *Moors*, *Turks*, *Arabs*, and *Janiſſaries*, whereof Thirteen Thouſand had Muſkets or Croſs-bows, many *Turks* with Bows and Arrows, and about Thirty Thouſand *Arabian* and *Mooriſh* Horſe, but much the greater part of the Multitude was uſeleſs, and only ſerv'd to make the greater appearance. In the Emperor's Camp, as ſoon as *Goleia* was taken, and the report ſpread abroad that the Army was to March to *Tunez*, there were great diſcontents, much muttering and almoſt Mutinying, but the Emperor prudently quell'd theſe diſorders. *Andrew Doria* was order'd to carry Bread and Water for the Army in Boats, and every Soldier Three or Four days Proviſion of Drink as well as Meat. The Women, ſick People, and Traders were left at *Goleia*. *D. Alvaro Bazan* with his Gallies was to guard the Coaſt, and there being no Horſes to draw the train, the Soldiers and ſome Slaves taken out of the Gallies drew the Cannon, others carrying the Ammunition on their Backs. On the 20th of *July* the Army advanc'd. It would be too tedious and needleſs to particularize the Order of their March, where no action happen'd. The only thing remarkable was that the exceſſive heat made many faint away under their Arms, and Thirſt prevail'd with them to break their Ranks and run for Water, ſo that the Emperor himſelf was

Barbaruffa
comes out
to meet
him.

not able to keep any order, tho' he apprehended the danger of such confusion, should the Enemy attack him. Five Miles the Army March'd without discovering any Enemy, and then the Emperor drew up in order of Battle, understanding that *Barbaruffa* was march'd out of *Tunex* with a great multitude of Infidels. That Pyrate having drawn into the Field Eighty Thousand Foot and Twenty Thousand Horse, according to the least accounts, with some small Pieces of Cannon, mov'd towards the Olive-Gardens, and in a short time those Two powerful Armies began to have sight of one another. One Wing of *Barbaruffa's* Army extended from the Canal to the Olive-Gardens, the other fill'd up all the space behind, and thus he brought them under the Olive-Trees, to shelter them from the scorching Sun. There he distributed abundance of Water brought upon Camels. After a short stay there he mov'd again in the same order, with Ten Field-pieces in the front, resolving to try the issue of a Battle. The Emperor drew up in this manner, the *Italian* Foot he posted on the side of the Canal, the Prince of *Salerno* leading their Van, the Pikes close to the Water, and next to them the *Germans*. On the other point next the Olive-Gardens were the old *Spaniards* that had serv'd in *Italy*, between these Two Wings was the Cannon, with the choice Troops of the Army to guard it, the new rais'd *Spaniards* brought up the Rear, with some Horse commanded by the Duke of *Alva*. The Baggage was between the Artillery and Rear. That Wing next the Canal was cover'd by it, and therefore the Light-Horse were on the Right, where the *Spanish* Foot brought from *Italy* were. The Emperor Rode about with his Naked Sword ranging his Men, and just in sight of the Enemy all his Horses Feet went from under him, and he came down; he threw himself out of the Saddle, and mounted another, and gallop'd along the line encouraging his Men.

8. *Barbaruffa*

8. *Barbaruffa* knowing the *Imperialists* were in great want of Water, possessed himself of a Plain divided into Orchards, where there were a great many Wells, Three Miles from *Tunex*, among certain Ruines of old Arches, by which the *Carthaginians* convey'd Water to their City: There he posted about twelve Thousand *Turks* and *Renagadoes*, all Musketers, with twelve pieces of Cannon. In this Body he plac'd his greatest Confidence, and they were opposite to the *Spaniards*. Against the *Italians* he plac'd twelve Thousand Horse, designing to flank them along the Canal, and dispos'd many Squadrons of Horse along the Olive-Gardens, the rest of his Horse he drew up on the Right, among Trees on small Hillocks; all the other multitude of Foot were left without any good Order in the Rear. Here he made a halt, endeavouring to inculcate how easie it was to overcome so few Christians, and those spent with Thirst and Heat. Then seeing the *Imperialists* advance to the Charge, he mov'd a Mile forward, still securing the Water, and endeavouring to shelter his Men among the Ruins. The Infidels Cannon beginning to play, the *Italians*, who lay expos'd to it, shunk a little towards the Canal, and some *Germans* laid themselves down; but the former soon return'd to their Post, and the latter were beaten up by their own Fellows. The Christian Artillery did more Execution among the Enemy, which *Barbaruffa* perceiving, he resolv'd to come to handy Stroaks. Both Parties advanc'd and fir'd their small Arms; but the *Spaniards* being eager, mov'd so fast, that when they came up with the Enemy they were out of Breath, and scarce able to do any Execution: Yet what made the hair, was a Body of six Hundred *Turks*, who fir'd upon them from behind some old Walls, which Captain *Ibarra* perceiving, he led his Men up and drove the Infidels from their Strength, killing above forty of them. A Body of *Arabs* took a Compass by the Olive-Gardens, to fall upon the Rear of the *Imperialists*, where they were so well receiv'd by the Duke of *Alva*, with his new Rais'd *Spaniards*, that they soon took to their Heels. The *Imperialists* were

such good Firemen; that they soon made great havoc among the *Africans*, who quitted their Post, and in it seven pieces of Cannon, leaving the Christians in possession of it, and of the Water, which prevented the pursuit; for the Soldiers overcome with Thirst and Heat, ran all to Drink in such Confusion, as might have prov'd the ruin of them all, had the Infidels been any thing of Men. The *Germans* charg'd the *Moores* in the Olive-Gardens, and put them to Rout; so that *Barbarussa's* whole Army made the best of its way to *Tunez*, whilst the Christians thought of nothing but taking their fill of Water. This Victory was gain'd with the loss of not above twenty Men. The Victors incamp'd on the same Ground where the Wells were.

Barbarussa flies from Tunez

9. *Tunez* was full of Lamentation and Fear, and many *Moores* fled, some to *Prebat*, some to *Babazueca*, *Bardo*, and other places. *Barbarussa*, in a Rage and Confusion, consulted his prime Officers, who all promis'd to stand by him. Some advis'd him to blow up all the Christian Slaves in the City, which were above twenty Thousand; because, being so great a Number, they might endanger the place should the Emperor come before it; but *Synan* the *Jew* prevail'd to have them lock'd up in Dungeons, where they would be safe enough. In the Morning, when *Barbarussa* would have drawn out his Troops to give the Emperor Battle again, he could make but twelve Thousand Foot and 3000 Horse; of all that multitude he had the Day before, the rest being all fled and dispers'd. Whilst he was without the City forming these Troops, *Francis de Medelin*, and *Vincent de Catara*, two Renegadoes, open'd the Dungeons of the *Alcazava*, or Castle, in which were above six Thousand Christians, giving them to understand what was design'd against them, and Instruments to knock off their Chains. They fearing Fire, wet all the Blankets or Bedding they had to throw over the Powder. Whilst they were thus busie, a *Turk* came with Powder to blow them up; one of them running to a Horse that was at the Gate, snatch'd a Target and Cimeter off him, and drove

drove the *Turk* out, then seiz'd the Keys and shut up the Gates of the Fort: The rest of them ran out and fell upon the *Turks* that did Duty there, securing the Gates and what Arms they could. The *Alcayde*, or Governor of the Place, who was loading *Barbarussa's* Treasure on Horses and Camels; seeing this sudden Change, ran with some Arm'd *Turks* to the Gate, and killing some Christians, made his way through with as much as he could carry, delivering that dismal Relation to *Barbarussa*. He cursing *Synan*, and his Prophet *Mahomet* came to the Castle, where he us'd all kin'd Expressions to beg admittance; but to no purpose, and therefore turn'd back in Despair, going out of the City, whence he could discover the Christian Army marching towards it, which so daunted him, that he presently fled with such as would follow him, towards *Bona*. There went with him *Synan Cachidiablo*, *Tafer*, and other Pyrates and *Turks*, to the Number of seven Thousand. The Christian Slaves in the Castle seeing them fly, fir'd some great Guns after them, which kill'd a few. The *Arabs* understanding that *Barbarussa* and his Men fled, and carry'd great Wealth with them, gather'd in great Numbers, and falling upon the Baggage, which was far behind, took a considerable part of it, killing four Hundred of those that were to guard it. *Barbarussa* fled the first day to *Beja*, fifteen Leagues from *Tunex*, where he was well receiv'd and stay'd three Days. *Cachidiablo* dy'd by the way, being Wounded in the Leg, which Gangren'd with the violent heat. The *Arabs* began to trouble the Pirate again, killing five of his Men, who slew forty of them. There he made four Days Provision of Bread, borrow'd Camels to carry Water, and so set out for *Bona*, the principal City of *Numidia*.

10. Very early in the Morning his Imperial Majesty march'd towards *Tunex*, in the same Order as the Day before, fearing the return of the Enemy, and no less fatigu'd with Heat and Thirst. Some *Arabs* being discover'd upon certain Hills, making from *Tunex*, the Army halted to gather up all Stragglers. From this place they could discover white
The Emperor enters
Tunex.
 Flags

Flags set up in the Alcazava or Castle ; the Cannon fir'd, but without Ball ; no Enemy appear'd, and no Man could guess what this meant. A Xequé came from one of the Suburbs, and said he submitted it to his Majesty. After him came other *Moore*s out of the City, who inform'd *Muley Hassém* that *Barbarussa* was fled. Parties were sent out to discover the Truth, and found all as the Infidels reported, which made his Imperial Majesty advance to the Gate of *Tunex*, where *Muley* and the Towns-men begg'd that the City might not be plunder'd, offering great sums of Money to ransom it ; but it was very difficult to contain the Soldiers vvho had suffer'd so much ; nor did the Citizens deserve so much Mercy, and therefore the Emperor gave no Answer ; so that the Soldiers were left to Discretion, and finding the Gates shut, tho' no body offer'd to make any opposition, they broke them open, and fell immediately to work with such Cruelty, that they butcher'd above ten Thousand Inhabitants, without respect to Sex or Age. The Emperor went to the Alcazava or Castle, thank'd the Captives for what they had done, setting them all at liberty, giving them all they had plunder'd, rewarding the two Renegadoes that releas'd them, delivering eighteen *French* Men to the *French* Embassador, and order'd it to be proclaim'd throughout the City, that no Man upon pain of Death, should presume to kill, or take any *Moore*. *Muley Hassém* was allow'd to redeem what he pleas'd ; but nothing so much troubl'd him as the Destruction of a Noble Library, the rich Binding and Gilding of the Books, besides their own intrinsic Value, being worth a vast sum of Money. Nor was he a little concern'd for the loss of the store of Perfumes, in which there were vast quantities of *Ambergreece*, *Musk*, *Civet*, *Benjamin*, *Storax*, and many other rich Scents, another of costly Colours, and the Armory of *S. Lewis* King of *France*, who Died before that City, in the Year 1270. Above eighteen Thousand Captives were taken in *Tunex*, and were so cheap, that a Slave was sold for ten Ducats. The Number of Christians deliver'd out of Captivity, were said
to

to be twenty Thousand, they that say; least, count sixteen Thousand.

II. The City of *Tunez* contains about ten Thousand Houses, and in them fifty Thousand Inhabitants. There are three Suburbs to it, in one of which there are ten Thousand Inhabitants. The Gates of the City and Suburbs are forty; its Strength but small by reason of its Greatness: Its Situation is upon the Bay, opposite to *Goleta*, and three Leagues from it, has neither River nor Spring, and only one Well; so that all the Houses are supply'd by Cisterns. Corn is scarce by reason of the dryness of the Soil, and what they sow is Water'd by Trenches, with Water drawn from Wells. They use Horse-mills, because there is no Water to drive others. Timber is very scarce, and for that reason they build with Plaister of *Paris*. The Compass of the City is almost six Miles, indifferently Wall'd and Inhabited. There are two Alcazavas, that is, Palaces or Fortresses, one Old, the other New, but both well Built, above an hundred Mosques with fine Towers to them; the greatest of them very Beautiful both within and without; from which two small Pillars were taken, valu'd by understanding Persons, at four Thousand Ducats: Besides which there are many of Jasper, and Porphiry Stone, and the Walls so finely Polish'd, that they represent the Face like Looking-glasses. Within the City, in the Quarters call'd of the *Rabatines*, who are Christians, and had continu'd there ever since the Place was taken by the *Mahometans*, that is eight Hundred and thirty Years, there was a Monastery of Franciscan Friars. These Christians the Emperor caus'd to be transported to *Naples*, and honour'd them as they deserv'd. That Quarter of the Town consist'd of about three Hundred Houses. Besides the Monastery, there was a Church of the Invocation of our Lady of the Star, richly Adorn'd and much reverenc'd, and other Churches, as those of *S. Mark*, *S. Laurence*, *S. Roque*, and *S. Sebastian*, all which had Bells that Rung at due Hours, till *Barbarossa* took them away. The Country, about
Tunez,

Tunez, produces *Oile*, *Limes*, *Lemmons*, *Citrons*, *Oranges*, and other sorts of Fruit. The Gardens of *Bardisen* are very delightful; the People are rather decently Clad than Costly. They use baths, and Trade in Linnen, because the Women are great Artists at Spinning. In the City dwelt abundance of Merchants, and Pyrates who paying the fifth of their Booty to the King, enrich'd it considerably. The Kingdom is Ancient, and its Kings Nobly Descended, once, for their Greatness, call'd Kings of *Africk*, being possess'd of near three Hundred Leagues along the Coast, from *Tripoli* to *Bugia*.

Barbaruffa drove from Bona.

12. *Barbaruffa*, as was said before, fled to *Bona*, where he equipp'd eleven Gallies, he had laid up in that Port, and threw up a Bulwark at the Mouth of the River, to secure them. *Adam Centurion*, and *John Doria*, were sent thither with fifteen Gallies, but return'd without daring to attempt the Pyrate. *Andrew Doria*, alarm'd of their Behaviour, went thither in Person, with forty Gallies, but *Barbaruffa* was fled with his; however, he took *Bona* and the Castle, where he left *Alvar Gomez Zagal*, with his Company of Spaniards. The City *Bona* was, at this time, a small place, built out of the Ruins of *Hippo*, where *S. Augustin* was Bishop. The Country about it abounds in Corn, Cattle and Butter. The Emperor caus'd it to be raz'd, when he undertook the unfortunate Expedition against *Argier*. Six Days the Emperor continu'd in *Tunez*, and on the twenty sixth of *July*, remov'd with his Army to *Roda* and *Luda*, two Miles from *Goleta*, on the back of a Rivulet, that the *Moors*, who were fled for fear, might return to the City. From *Luda* he remov'd the first of *August* to the Water-Tower, where the *Italians* and *Germans* plunder'd the Vivandiers of the Camp, pretending they had no share of the Booty at *Tunez*; but his Imperial Majesty punish'd them, and gave twelve Hundred Ducats to make good the Loss to those that had been pillag'd. King *Muley Hassem* came thither on the fourth, and on the sixth the Articles were concluded, on which he was Restor'd to his Kingdom, and were, 1. That he restore

The Moorish King Restor'd.

restore all Christian Captives in his Kingdom. 2. That neither he nor his Successors make any Subjects of *Spain*, or of the Empire Slaves. 3. That he allow the Christians free Exercise of their Religion. 4. That he banish all *Moors* converted in *Spain*. 5. That he yield up to the Emperor, *Bona*, *Biseria*, and the City *Africa*, and Fort of *Goleta*. 6. That the Inhabitants there have liberty to Trade throughout the Kingdom. 7. That the King pay twelve Thousand Ducates a Year for maintaining the Fort of *Goleta*. 8. That all the Emperor's Subjects may Trade freely in the Kingdom of *Tunez*. 9. That the King pay, as a Yearly acknowledgement to the Crown of *Spain*, six Moorish Horses, and twelve Hawks, and in case of failure, for the first time, pay fifty Thousand Ducats; for the second 100000, and for the third forfeit his Crown. 10. That the King entertain no Pyrates in his Ports. 11. That there be perpetual Peace and Unity between the Kings of *Spain*, and those of *Tunez*; and that neither enter into any Alliances prejudicial to the other. Upon these Terms the *Mahometan* was Restor'd, both Princes swearing to the Performance. The Emperor would have followed his Success, and gone immediately to *Argier*, but was unfortunately dissuaded; for in the Consternation, the Infidels were at that time he had certainly made himself Master of it, and prevented the misfortune which afterwards besel him in that place.

13. All things being dispos'd for the Departure of the Fleet, the Towers of the Water, and that of Salt blown up, and D. *Bernardin de Mendoza* left in the Fort of *Goleta* with a Thousand Spaniards; the Emperor set Sail on the seventeenth of *August*, and Landed at *Trepano* in *Sicily* on the twenty second. *Andrew Doria* and D. *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, were sent with Forces to take the City *Africa*, but countermanded before they had done any thing. From *Trepano* his Majesty travel'd to *Palermo*, thence to *Mecina*, there cross'd the *Far* to *Riioles*, and on the twenty fifth of *October* came to *Naples*; being receiv'd

Sforcia
dyes

receiv'd in all places with extraordinary Magnificence. Here he Marry'd *Margaret*, his Natural Daughter, to *Alexandr ede Medicis*, Duke of *Florence*, as he hath promis'd the Pope. His Majesty receiv'd the News of the Death of *Francis Sforcia*, Duke of *Milan*, which renew'd the Discontents and Wars between him and the King of *France*, who still aim'd at that Dukedom, notwithstanding he had before renounc'd all Pretensions to it with the most solemn Oaths that could be taken. The Pope endeavour'd to form a League against the *Turk*, but the King of *France* would not enter into it; on the contrary, he sollicit'd the King of *England*, the *Lutherans*, and the *Turks* themselves, to joyn with him against his Imperial Majesty. This Year 1535, the Emperor's two Sisters, *Ellenor*, Queen of *France*, and *Mary*, Queen *Dowager* of *Hungary*, Governess of the Low-Countries, had a meeting at *Cambray*, it was believ'd to be in order to produce a Peace; but did not succeed. The Marquess of *Denia*, who had charge of the Emperor's Mother, Queen *Ioanna*, who, as has been said, was kept up, being Distracted, Dy'd this Year, and his Son succeeded him in that Trust.

C H A P. XXIII.

The War betwixt the Emperor and King of France, Actions on both sides in Italy, France and Flanders: Barbaruffa his further Actions, Solyman thinks to invade Apulia, but turns against the Venetians.

1. I must now return to the Bloody Wars between the Two Christian Princes *Charles the Vth Emperor*, and *Francis King of France*, in the years 1536 and 1537. *Francis Sforcia*, Duke of *Milan*, dying without Issue, in his Will bequeath'd that Dukedom to the Emperor, which was still corroborating his just Title to it. Yet the King of *France* sent to demand the Investiture to that State, which his Imperial Majesty, as with good Reason he might, refus'd, and the King of *France* offended at it invaded the Duke of *Savoy's* Dominions, with an Army under the Command of the Admiral of *France*. The pretensions for this Invasion were, that the Duke was possesst of the City of *Aste* belonging to the Crown of *France*; that he was wholly in the Emperor's Interest, and that he did not do the Lady *Lewis*, the King's Mother, Justice, as to her Inheritance, whereas in Truth she had no right to any, she being a Female, the Duke a Male and of the same Branch, besides a Mortgage upon the City *Nice* in *Piemont*; but all these were weak pretences, to palliate the main design, which was to make way to the Conquest of *Milan*. The Duke rely'd on the Emperor's favour, who had given him the Earldom of *Aste*, and to whose Protection he fled with his Wife and Children, the *French* having made themselves Matters of the greatest part of *Piemont*.

1536.
Grounds
of new War
betwixt
the Em-
peror and
France.

Piemon, but the Admiral intending to advance towards *Milan*, was stopp'd by the Cardinal of *Lorraine*, who requir'd him not to break the Peace with the Emperor, and his Influence over the King being great, the Admiral durst not gainsay him, for which he was afterwards much blam'd. Tho' nothing appear'd in Publick but Rejoycing whilst the Emperor continu'd at *Naples*, which was Four Months, yet underhand all things were carry'd on towards a War, and a League concluded with the *Venetians*, on the same foot it had been with Duke *Sforcia*. The *Swiss* were prevail'd with to promise that they would not march into *Italy* against his Imperial Majesty, and Money was sent the King of the *Romans*, to raise Forces in *Italy*. Most of the relation of all the following Transactions, is taken from the Original accounts the Earl of *Nieva*, then attending the Emperor, sent to the Constable of *Castile*, so that it is much more Authentick than what other Authors write by hearsay, or from common Printed Papers.

The Emperor goes into Lombardy.

2. March the 22d 1536 the Emperor departed from *Naples*, and having visited several places in his way, came to *Rome* the 5th of *April*, where he was receiv'd in most solemn manner, conferr'd with the Pope, propos'd the calling of a General Council, in a great Assembly of Cardinals and Ferreign Embassadors, reprecach'd the King of *France* with breach of Faith, and spreading Scandalous Reports, challeng'd him to decide their quarrel by single Combat, and declar'd his intention was to commence the War immediately, unless the *French* King withdrew his Forces out of *Savoy*, and gave him satisfaction as to other points. The next day after making this declaration, which was the 18th of *April*, his Imperial Majesty departed *Rome*, pass'd through *Siena*, *Florence*, *Pisa*, *Luca*, and came to *Azzo*, where he gather'd his mighty Army, consisting of Thirty Thousand *Germans*, Ten Thousand *Spaniards* and Twenty Thousand *Italians*. From this place he sent the Prince of *Salerno*, on the 22d of *June*, to *Genoa*, there to imbarck aboard the Gallies of Prince *Doria*, and *D. Alvaro Bazan*, with Four

Four Thousand Germans and Six Thousand Italians. In Savillan, whether the Emperor remov'd from Me, he receiv'd the News that *Antony de Leyva* had reduc'd *Fossan*, in which was a strong French Garrison, to capitulate, allowing the Garrison Twelve days to acquaint their King with what they had done, which oblig'd his Imperial Majesty to continue Three Weeks at *Savillan* till the aforesaid days were elaps'd, and the place deliver'd, which was on the 6th of *July*. Part of the Imperial Forces lay before *Turin*, and part before *Mirandola*, and *D. Peter de la Cueva* had an Hundred Pieces of Cannon at *Genoa*, which he was to transport by Sea to *Nice*. *Fossan* being reduc'd, the Emperor with all his Forces advanced towards *France*, the Horse taking one way and the Foot another, but were all to Rendezvous at *Nice*. At the same time the Earl of *Nassau* had orders to make an Irruption on the side of *Flanders*, with Twenty Thousand Foot and a Thousand Horse. Besides he had post'd Twelve Thousand Germans to enter *Switzerland*, in case that People should offer to move to the Assistance of the King of *France*, which was a great check upon them. All things being thus dispos'd, the Army mov'd towards *Marseilles*, taking the same way the Marquess de *Pescara* had done Ten years before. The Army spent Eight days in passing the Mountains between *Savillan* and *Nice*, during which time they suffer'd very much, and many Horses and Men were lost, the ways being almost unpassable. As soon as the Army came to *Nice*, the Gallies went away to *Frejus*, a small Town on the Coast, which immediately surrendred tho' there was a good Garrison in it, and the Emperor repair'd thither, where the Cannon began to be Landed on the 2d of *August* to march by Land. *Grace* was taken without any expence of Blood and Garrison'd, and the Army marching on towards *Marseilles*, found all places abandon'd, at first full of Provisions, but the further it march'd still less and less, for there were Parties of *French* carrying away all they could, and destroying the rest. *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* overtaking one of these Parties, cut

cut it off so entirely, that it was reported not a Man escap'd to carry home the News. *Andrew Doria* entred the Port of *Toulon*, and took the Fort to secure his Fleet; and the Emperor being come to *Aix*, which is not far from *Marseilles*, went to take a view of that City. The King of *France* in the mean while lay at *Avignon*, expecting to be reinforc'd by the *Swisse*, and designing to obstruct the Forces that were to march out of *Spain* from joyning the Imperial Army. About this time dy'd *Francis* Dauphin of *France*, not without suspicion of being Poison'd by his own Brother *Henry* Duke of *Orleans*.

Returns
to Italy,

3. The Galleys being far from the Camp, all the Country wasted, and the King of *France* lying at *Avignon*, Provisions grew scarce, and the Army sickned. Some advis'd to march back into *Italy*, others to remove the King from *Avignon*, but the Emperor was for standing his ground. Whilst they were thus dubious, News was brought that *Guido Rangon*, and *Peter Sirozzi*, were marching from *Mirandola* to *Genoa*, to reduce that City under the *French*, but Two Thousand Eight Hundred Imperialists sent in good time, disappointed their design, and made them return into *Lombardy*, plundering *Carignan* and *Carmagnola* in their way. This News and Count *Nassau's* intending to lay Siege to *Peronne*, was all quash'd by the advice receiv'd that Twenty Thousand *Swiss* were marching to joyn the King of *France*, which undeceiv'd the Emperor that there was no good to be done by lying there, his Army declining, and the Enemies increasing. Here dy'd the famous *Antony de Leyva*, who had rais'd himself from a private Centinel, to be General of the League between the Emperor, the Pope, and *Venetians*, to be posselt of the Principalities of *Ascoli* and *Amorca*, and to give his Daughter *Constance* Two Hundred Thousand Ducats Portion. He was a notable Souldier, but Harsh, Cruel, Covetous, and Superstitious. After his Death the Emperor retir'd to *Genoa*, having lost in this fruitless Expedition Thirty Thousand Men by sickness, and endanger'd his own Health. The *French* King did not

not offer to pursue him. It being the latter end of *October* when his Imperial Majesty came to *Genoa*. *Andrew Doria* press'd him to put to Sea before the Winter Storms, yet being indispos'd he went not aboard till the end of *November*, but however had a good passage to *Barcelona*. At the same time the Emperor entred *Provence*, the Earl of *Nassau* broke into *France* by the way of the *Low-Countries*, and with no better success, being forc'd to raise the Siege he had laid to *Peronne*, and not able to prevent the Kings of *France* taking *Hedin*, which was a loss his Imperial Majesty much resented. Nothing else of note was done on either side this Campaign.

4. Before we conclude this year it will not be amiss to relate what *Barbarussa* did, when he fled from *Tunex*. From *Bona* where we left him, he made his way to *Argier*, ordering his Men not to mention the loss of *Tunex*. and giving out that he was hastening to *Constantinople*, to increase his Fleet, in order to destroy the Emperors, which would be unable to oppose him. There he put to Death *Bucca Alcayde* of *Argier* his great Favourite, pretending it was through his fault that the Christian Captives had broke loose and secur'd the Castle of *Tunex*. At his departure he left his Son *Hazzan* to govern *Argier*, and *Salac* to direct him. Then sailing over to *Majorca* he durst not land seeing the Bonfires and Illuminations, made for the Emperors Victory, which he thought to be Beacons lighted to raise the Country, but making his way to *Minorca* landed Two Thousand Five Hundred *Turks*, batter'd the place, and having made a breach had it surrendred to him, through the Treachery of six Towns-men. These six he left in the Island, where they were afterwards executed for their perfidy, but carry'd away all the rest of the Inhabitants, to the Number of Eight Hundred, without leaving any thing behind that could be taken away, to the very Locks that were on the Doors. This done he return'd to *Argier*, wash'd and Tallow'd his Gallies, took in fresh Provisions, and sail'd away for *Constantinople* about the end of the

Barbarussa
his further
Actions.

year. At his arrival there *Solyman* was in *Asia*, whether he went, found him in *Caramania*, gave an account of his past disasters, promis'd better success for the future, found a favourable reception, and assurances of being furnish'd with as good, if not a better Fleet than he had before. The *French* Ambassador who had follow'd *Solyman* to the *Persian* War, press'd him at the same time to engage against the Emperor, so that their advice prevailing, he with incredible celerity march'd to *Vallona* with Two Hundred Thousand Men, *Lufsi Bassa*, and *Barbarussa* repairing thither with their Fleets consisting of Four Hundred Sail, whereof Two Hundred were Galleys. *Lufsi*, *Barbarussa*, and *Troilus Pignatelli*, a *Neapolitan* Outlaw, were sent over with Eighty Galleys to make some attempt on the Coast of *Italy*, and discover whether any *French* came to their assistance. They Landed at *Castro*, two Leagues from *Otranto*, had it surrendred upon Articles, yet plunder'd and carry'd away all the Inhabitants into Captivity: But *Solyman* afterwards sent them back, and punish'd the Officers that were the cause of Captivating them. A body of *Turkish* Horse set ashore pillag'd the Country as far as *Brindisi*, till the Governour of *Calabria* made head against them. Nevertheless they carry'd off much Cattle and abundance of Captives, which was done in the year 1537, at the end whereof we shall set down what *Andrew Doria* did against the *Turkish* Fleet.

1537.
Alexander
Duke of
Florence
Murder'd.

5. *Alexander de Medicis* the Emperor's Son-in-Law, as having Marry'd his Natural Daughter *Margaret*, was this year Inhumanely Murder'd. He was a person of excellent Behaviour and obliging, by which means he had gain'd the Affections of the *Florentines*, tho' he was the first Duke, and consequently the first they thought had usurp'd upon their Liberties. *Laurence de Medicis* his near Kinsman, but a melancholly, contriving, base Man, a double dealer, playing the Pandar to *Alexander*, and at the same time contriving his Ruin, was much in his favour, tho' several intimations were given him of the designs of this Villain, yet all avail'd not for

for the Duke confid'd so much in him, that their Routes joyning he suffer'd a door to be broke open to pass from the one to the other, and each of them had a key to it. The Duke being given to Women, *Laurence* promis'd to help him to a Lady of Quality he knew him passionately to lust after, and getting of him on this pretence alone into his own Bed-chamber, there with the assistance of two of his Servants barbarously Murder'd him. There follow'd great Troubles in *Florence*, which do not directly belong to us to relate, but in the End *Cosmo de Medicis*, with the assistance of the *Spaniards*, expell'd the Enemies of his Family, made himself Master of the City, and was by the Emperor created Duke, to whom he was ever after faithful, and a great friend to the *Spaniards*, who supported him in his new acquir'd Dominion, as they had help'd to raise him to it, and by that means he establish'd himself in the Sovereignty which continues in his successors to this day.

6. We mention'd before that the *French Forces* had taken the City *Hedin*, after which they without any great difficulty made themselves Masters of *S. Paul*, *Lilliers*, and *S. Venant*, and put succours into *Terouenne*, then Besieg'd by the Imperialists, which done the King dispers'd his Forces, leaving about Eight Thousand *Germans* at *Dowlans* to relieve *S. Paul* in case of need. The Count *de Bures* laying hold of this favourable opportunity, gather'd all the Force he could, and on a sudden clapt down before *S. Paul*, which he summon'd to surrender, but receiv'd such a scornful answer as highly incens'd his *Germans*. They planted their Cannon, batter'd the place furiously, and, having made a large breach, gave a desperate Assault, meeting with no less Bravery in the Besieg'd, which made the success stand doubtful for some time, till five companies of Imperialists assaulting the other side of the Town which was ill guarded, and killing Twenty Five or Thirty Men they found there, broke in, and enclosing the *French* that fought at the breach overpower'd and bore them down. The slaughter was great, for the *Germans*, as was said

Actions in Flanders.

before incens'd at the scornful Answer return'd by the Garrison, put them all to the Sword, except three or four principal Officers, sav'd on account of the great Ran'some they expected from them. Nor were they so satisfy'd, but exercis'd their Cruelty on the Inhabitants, sparing neither Men, Women, nor Children, so that above 5000 Perish'd. From this Place the Count march'd to *Montreville*, which was soon deliver'd to him upon composition. *Terouenne* before block'd up, was now more closely Besieg'd by the Count; yet not so, but that the French put in some Supplies, a Party of Horse breaking through the Imperial Camp in a dark Night, and furnishing the Town with what they were able to carry; but before they could return, the Imperial Horse fell upon those that came to second them; so that being taken in the middle, they were bore down with much Slaughter, and most of their principal Officers taken. *Henry*, the Dauphin of France, and *Monsieur de Montmorenci* came down with a powerful Army, and encamp'd strongly, where the Country being ruin'd on both sides; a Truce was concluded on for three Months, the Siege rais'd, and all Hostilities ceas'd.

7. The War ceasing in *Flanders*, let us return to *Italy*, where, upon the Death of *Antony de Leyva*, the Emperor conferr'd his Command of Captain General, and Governor of the State of *Milan*, on *D. Alonso de Avalos*, *Marquess del Gasto*, and *Pescara*. The Winter pass'd away in *Piemont*, in small Actions between both Parties. In the Spring the *Marquess* laid Siege to the Castle of *Carmagnola*, where the *Marquess de Salusses* was kill'd with a Cannon Shot; to revenge whose Death, *Pescara*, tho' an Enemy to him, broke the Articles, on which the Castle was surrender'd to him, hanging up the Man that shot him. The Lord *Humieres* was sent to Command the French Army before *Aste*, and might have easily taken it, had he made good Use of his Time; but letting it slip the Garrison was reinforc'd, and he lost all hope of being Master of the Place; wherefore understanding that the *Marquess de Pescara* was gathering an Army, he resolv'd to retire.

In his Retreat the *Imperialists* fell upon his Rear, but were Repuls'd with such Loss, that they return'd no more. In the mean while the *Marques del Gasto* being reinforc'd with two Regiments of German Foot, and some Horse, had now 25000 Foot, and 3000 Horse, and four pieces of heavy Cannon; and *Humières* being gone back into *France* after distributing his Troops into Garrisons, he invest'd *Quier*, and having made a Breach, took it by Storm; the Governor and Garrison, who had made great preparations for their Defence, forsaking all without striking a stroke. Thence the *Marques* remov'd to *Quieras*, where, in an Assault, he lost above two Hundred Men, besides five Hundred Wounded, and was forc'd to desist; nevertheless *Cesar Fregoso*, the Governor, who then lay Sick, seeing no hopes of Relief, surrender'd upon honourable Conditions, and went away to *France*. Having left a Garrison in this place, the Army remov'd to *Alva*, which was deliver'd upon the same Conditions as *Quieras* had been, and after such another fruitless Assault given. These Places thus reduc'd, and nothing obstructing, the *Marques* sat down before *Pignerol* which being a Place of great Strength, and having a Garrison of 5000 Men he resolv'd to Starve it, despairing of being able to force a place so well Mann'd and Fortify'd. The King of *France* lay at *Lions*, gathering his Forces to Repulse the *Marques*; and having got together 10000 Men, sent his Eldest Son, the *Dauphin*, with them before, to gain the pass of *Susa*, on the *Alps*, which he perform'd with much Bravery, being forc'd to march in many places a Foot, by reason of the badness of the ways, to break the Ice as the Army march'd, and giving so furious a Charge on *Cesar* of *Naples* and *Camillo Colonna*, who Commanded there, that he routed their Troops, and open'd a way to send supplies to *Turin*. The young Prince thus successful, advances and spreads his Terror about the Country; which the *Marques del Gasto* perceiving, he rais'd his Siege and retir'd to *Moncalier*. King *Francis* hearing of his Son's Success, soon follow'd him with the rest of the Army, took several Towns

and pursu'd the Marquefs, who was putting Garrisons into all Places of Strength. To put a stop to their Proceedings, News was brought the King, that the three Queens, *Ellenor of France, Mary of Hungary, and Margaret of Navarre*, had concluded a Truce between him and the Emperor, upon much the same Conditions, as those which seven Years before put an end to the Bloody War. Monsieur de *Montmorency* sent the Marquefs del *Gaffo* an Account of it, which he had soon after more at large from the Emperor. This Truce was proclaim'd on the twenty ninth of *October*, and to continue till the twenty second of the following *February* 1538; during which time nothing being concluded towards a Peace, it was prolong'd for six Months, that is, till the twenty second of *August*. Monsieur de *Montmorency* was now made Constable of *France* for his great Services, being the first Man that had the honour since *Charles Duke of Bourbon*, but it afterwards cost him Dear, as we shall see in its place.

Andrew
Doria at
Sea.

8. Having given an Account of the Actions ashore, and brought the two contending Princes almost to a Peace, let us see what was done at Sea this Year 1537. *Andrew Doria*, by the Emperor's Order, repair'd with his Gallies to *Mecina*; where understanding that the *Turk* was already come to *Vallona* with his Army, he Sail'd over for *Greece* receiving Intelligence by the way, that the Enemies Fleet was gone three Days before. At *Zant* and *Cephalonia* intelligence was brought him of ten Ships that came from *Alexandria* loaded with Rice, Cheese, Bisket, and Linnen for the *Turkish* Army. In his way to seek them out he took a *Venetian* Ship laden with Scarlet, and other rich Commodities, and near *Capo Bianco* in *Corfu*, discover'd the ten Ships, of all which he made himself Master without fighting a stroke, tho' there were 300 Infidels aboard, they imagining his Gallies had either been *Turks* or *Venetians*. These Ships he Burnt, and then two *Turkish* Gallies that ran ashore flying from the *Venetians*. Certain *Greeks* he found in a small Vessel inform'd him, that twelve Gallies lay among the
Islands;

Islands; he row'd towards them all Night, till within two Leagues of the Place where they were; then rested his Men a while, and before Day put out again. The *Turks* kept close under the Shore, and having fir'd all their prow Guns, run on violently with all the strength of their Oars. The Fight lasted very hot above an Hour at small Shot and handy-strokes Board and Board; but the match was not equal, the Christian Gallies being thirty five, and the Infidels but twelve; yet they being full of *Janizaries* and *Spahi's* chosen People, fought rather to die Reveng'd than to save their Lives; for when they were able to withstand no longer, they threw their Cimeters into the Sea, that the Christians might not have them, and very many leap'd over Board thinking to get to the Shore, who were all kill'd by the Country People; five Hundred of them were taken. *Andrew Doria* lost 250 Men, besides many Wounded, and among them his Kinsman *Antony Doria*. Such Gallies as were unfit for Service he sunk, and tow'd the rest about *Corfou*; for understanding that *Barbarussa* was in pursuit of him with above eighty Gallies, he made for *Sicily*, and arriv'd in triumph at *Mecina*.

9. *Solyman* did not find the Expedition of *Italy* so easie as he had imagin'd; for neither the *Apulians* stir'd as *Pignatelli*' had promis'd, nor did the *French* come to his Assistance as he had hop'd; nor did *Barbarussa* shut up *Andrew Doria* and his Fleet: On the contrary *Doria* took the Ships above mention'd; the Viceroy of *Naples* reinforc'd all Garrisons, and the Pope rais'd Forces for the Defence of *Italy*. This made the Infidel vent his malice upon the *Venetians*, because they had receiv'd *Andrew Doria* into their Ports, supplying him with Provisions, and giving intelligence under hand of the motions of the *Turkish* Fleet; and besides, *Alexander Contarini* near *Otranto*, had sunk two of his Gallies because they refus'd to strike, or salute him; and *Ferome Pesaro* put a Shore those two Gallies, which, as we said, *Doria* Burnt. The War between

Solyman
turns a-
gainst the
Venetians.

between *Solyman* and the *Venicians* does not belong to this History; but the Pope us'd all possible means to unite the Christian Princes in a League against the Infidels. On the nineteenth of *October* the Empress was deliver'd of a Son, who had the Name of *John* given him, but in *March* following he Dy'd at *Valladoilid*. This Year there happen'd a dreadful Eruption of *Mount Erna*, casting out vast Streams of burning Sulphur, which Burnt and Destroy'd all the Country about it, kill'd great multitudes of Men and Cattle, and exhald such Pillars of Smoak and Flame as were seen many Leagues off, to the Terror of all the Islanders. This same Year the Emperor held the Cortes at *Valladolid*, and Coin'd a new sort of Gold, which we call Crowns, not so fine as that they call'd Nobles.

C H A P. XXIV.

Interview of the Pope, Emperor, and King of France; Mutinies; Actions of the Christian Fleet; two pleasant Passages; Death of the Empress; Loss of Castelnovo; Emperor's Journey through France; Rebellion at Gant punish'd.

1. **T**HIS Year 1538, wherewith we begin a new Chapter, prov'd more peaceable than the former, Pope *Paul III.* using all his Endeavours to unite the Christian Princes against the Infidels, as was said before. He was already enter'd into a League to this effect with the Emperor and *Venicians*, and to make it the stronger, only wanted to bring in the King of *France*: In order to it, he labour'd to persuade him to give the Emperor and himself a meeting at *Nice* in *Piemont*, that they might there adjust all Differences. Thither all three Princes repair'd, His Holiness was Lodg'd in *Nice*, His Imperial Majesty in *Villafranca*, and the King in *Villanova*: The two latter went daily or sent to see the Pope, and had long Conferences with him, but it could never be brought about that they two should meet; nevertheless he prevail'd that the Truce between them should be prolong'd for ten Years which was Proclaim'd at *Nice* on the eightenth of *June* 1538, in the presence of his Holiness, and the Imperial and French Commissioners: After which the three Potentates departed, the Emperor attending

1538:
Inter-
views of
Princes.

The HISTORY of

attending the Pope as far as *Genoa*, and promising to give the King of *France* a meeting before he return'd home. The King of *France* sent a Gentleman to desire of the Emperor, that their Interview might be at *Aigues Mortes*, where his Imperial Majesty arriv'd in *July*; and there the Constable *Montmorenci* came to acquaint him the King would be upon the Shore immediately, and come aboard his Galley, if he thought good. The Emperor knowing it would oblige him to go a Shore, would gladly have diverted it; but before he could send a Message to that purpose, the King was coming in a Boat, and went aboard the Galley, the Emperor giving him his Hand. They Embrac'd, Kiss'd and Convers'd together about an Hour, all the *Spaniards* and *Italians* kissing the King's Hand. The King being gone, the Emperor consulted whether he should trust himself a Shore to repay the King's Visit, and it was resolv'd he should, since the King had been so generous as to come Aboard his Galley. Accordingly the next Day His Imperial Majesty, attended only by as many as three of the Galley Pinnaces could carry, went a Shore, and was most lovingly receiv'd by the King and Queen. Nothing of Business was talk'd of, for all had been before concluded at *Nice*. They Din'd and Supp'd together, gave one another rich Presents of Jewels, and his Imperial Majesty lay a Shore. Next Day, being the sixteenth of *July* they took their Leaves with great demonstrations of Affection, and the Emperor went Aboard his Galley in order to return to *Spain*. The ten Years Truce before mention'd, was concluded upon these Conditions: That there be a free Trade between the Subjects of both Princes. That each of them continue possess of the Places he now holds. That out-Laws be pardon'd and restor'd to their Estates, except those of the Kingdoms of *Naples* and *Sicily*. That neither relieve the Enemies of the other. That such as desire it, be admitt'd into this Truce. That the other made at *Worms* be observ'd. This at *Nice* on the eighteenth of *June*. In *October* after the above mention'd Interview, it was added: That Persons be appoint-

ted on both sides to take information of what has been plunder'd in the Low-Countries, that each Prince may make satisfaction. That the Duke of *Kendosme*, Prince of *Orange*, and Duke of *Arescot* be restor'd to their Rights. That the controversy about the Abbey of *S. John* near *Terouenne* be put to Arbitration. That the following year both parties send Commissioners to *Cambray*, to reform the Coin, which was much deprav'd. This pacification caus'd much joy among the Subjects of both Nations, but it was not lasting.

2. Whilst the Emperor was at *Aignes Mortes* the Spanish Souldiers in *Milan* Mutiny'd for their pay, committing all manner of outrages. They possess'd themselves of *Galerita*, whence they ravag'd the Country, raising Contributions in such inhuman manner, that whosoever did not pay immediately suffer'd no less punishment than Death. The *Milaneses* complain'd to his Imperial Majesty, but speaking somewhat haughtily, obtain'd nothing but a Letter to the Marquess *del Gasto* to pacify them. The Marquess to mend the matter extorted One Hundred and Twenty Thousand Ducats from the *Milaneses* to satisfy those Mutineiers, which so incens'd those People that had any body offer'd to stand by them they would certainly have revolted from the Emperor, who was not well pleas'd with the Marquesses unjust proceeding. However the Country was deliver'd from that plague, the Companies being reform'd, only Eight left in *Piemont*, the rest sent some into *Hungary*, and the rest sent over into *Sicily*. At the same time the Spanish Garrison in *Goleta* mutiny'd on the same account, and it was to be fear'd would have betray'd the Fort to the Infidels, had not *D. Bernardin de Mendoza* hapned to come thither with the Spanish Galleys, who took them aboard and carry'd them over to *Sicily*, promising *D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga* the Viceroy would pay and employ them. Being Landed in *Sicily* and no pay coming, they joyn'd with others that were there before, plunder'd *Cassanera*, *Montforte*, and *S. Cecilia*, and had done the same at *Castro* but that it was not in their power. The Viceroy sent *D. Al-*

varo de Sande with some raw Troops to quell them; but he was glad to desist. Their Officers left the Outlaws, and they chose others among themselves every three days, got so much pillage that they knew not what to do with it, and settled themselves at a place call'd *Rochela*, where they continu'd three Months, as if they were in their own Houses. The Viceroy was loath to reduce them by force, because it would cost much Blood, and therefore employ'd some *Spanish* Officers to endeavour to reduce them to their duty with promise of a general pardon, and Four Months pay. They agreed to it, and the Viceroy with the Officers employ'd swore to the performance of Articles on the one side, and on the other one *Heredia* the Head of the Mutiniers, and Twenty Four Corporals, one of each Company, for so many were in Rebellion. The Viceroy, who had not sworn with a good-will, soon after distributed them all by Twenties and Thirties into several Garrisons, and three Months afterwards all the Twenty Four Corporals and the Two great Ringleaders, *Heredia* and *Carranca*, to be apprehended and brought to *Mecina*, where they were hang'd on as many Gibbets along the shore. Not so satisfy'd he sent orders to all Governours of Towns to hang all the Mutiniers they could lay hold of, which was accordingly executed upon a great number of them, such as escap'd that search, were apprehended and sent over into *Spain*. This Punishment was justly due to such Insolencies, and the Emperor approv'd of it, tho' it is true the breach of the Viceroy's Oath cannot well be excus'd.

*Christian
fleet worst-
ed by Bar-
barussa.*

3. It was mention'd before that the Pope, Emperor, and *Venetians* had joyn'd in League against the *Turk*, the Pope obliging himself to fit out Thirty Six Gallies, the Emperor Eighty Two, and the *Venetians* as many. *Andrew Doria* was to command the Fleet, and *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* the Land Forces, in case the Duke of *Urbino* could not go. All places taken by the Christians were to be deliver'd to the *Venetians*. This Treaty was made publick on the 8th of *February*, 1538. Before the Christians could be ready, *Barbarussa* sail'd from *Constantinople* with

with One Hundred and Thirty Gallies, besides Tenders; Landed some Men in *Candia*, but was beaten off, leaving Twelve Hundred of his Men ashore, who were all destroy'd by the Islanders. Thence he sail'd along the Island trying other places, then cross'd over to *Modon*, and so to *Prevesa*, where the Patriarch of *Aquileya*, who commanded the Popes Gallies, Landed some Men, thinking to make himself Master of the place, but was repuls'd and forced to leave Two pieces of Cannon behind him. Some time after all the Confederate Fleet join'd, consisting of one Hundred and Thirty Four Gallies, and Seventy Two fighting Ships, besides Two Hundred and Fifty Privateers and Tenders. The Land-Forces aboard were Five Thousand *Italians* and Eleven Thousand old *Spanish* Souldiers. *Barbarussa* lay in the Golph of *Arta* with Eighty Seven Gallies, Thirty Gallies, and Thirty Seven Brigantines, and other Vessels, which being too small a force to engage the Christian Fleet, he had lay'd the Sterns ashore to save his Men in case of need, having rais'd Platforms and planted Cannon on them to cover his Vessels. As he lay in this posture *Monuc*, an Eunuch, reproach'd him with Cowardize, saying, This was the time to show what a brave Pyrate he was. *Barbarussa* afraid of this Reproach said to *Salac*, Tho' inferior to our Enemies, let us go out and Fight, that this half Man may not upbraid us. This said he sail'd out, dividing his Fleet into Three Squadrons, and giving the Command of the Forlorn, in which were Ten Gallies and Six Gallies, to *Dragut*. *Andrew Doria* perceiving he intended to give Battle, order'd his Gallies to be in a readines, where all the Men were eager to Fight, but he would not engage without his Ships, nor *Barbarussa* with them. This made *Doria* ply to and fro behind his Ships, which the Wind Calming, had no command of themselves, and the Gallies could not come in to their Relief. *Barbarussa*, who at first was afraid to engage the Ships, now drew his Fleet into a Half-Moon, and gave the signal to fall on, tho' *Dragut* was already engag'd, but to no purpose, with the *Venetian* Galeon,

Galeon, which the Captain bravely Defended ; the rest of the *Turkish* Fleet falling on at first onset, Burnt two Ships, one of *Candia*, the other a *Venetian*, laden with Bisket, the Men having abandon'd them both. Another Squadron attack'd three Ships full of *Spaniards*, and took that in which Captain *Villegas* Commanded ; but the Captains *Bocanegra* and *Machin de Monguia Biscainers* sunk three Gallies, and held out till Night when they made their escape. Two *Venetian* Gallies were taken, but Night coming on with much Rain, Thunder and Lightning, *Barbarussa* Sail'd away for fear of the Storm, and *Andrew Doria* fled towards *Corfou*, without putting out any Lights. This Defeat was a great blemish to his Reputation, and *Barbarussa* is reported to have scoffed at his putting out his Lights, saying, he did it because he would not see which way he fled.

Castel-
novo taken
by the Chri-
stians.

4. The Christians were beholding to the Wind that carry'd them away to *Corfou*, without any more loss than what has been mentioned, tho' with much Dishonour. The *Venetians* blam'd *Andrew Doria*, and the *Genoeses* recriminated the *Venetians*. They all continu'd fifteen Days at *Corfou*, refitting and consulting what was best to be done, *Barbarussa* lying all the while at *Pachsu*, another Island bearing them ; but at last, for fear of foul Weather, he Sail'd away for the Golph of *Arta*, after plundering *Parga*. *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* reconcil'd *Andrew Doria* and the *Venetian* Admiral, prevailing with the latter to suffer fifty *Spaniards* to be put A-board every one of his Gallies. *Barbarussa* being gone they Sail'd to *Castelnovo*, a Town in the Golph of *Cattaro*, not strong, but defended by a Castle on a Rock, in which were 350 *Turks*. The Christians Landed at *Catara* with thirteen Pieces of Cannon. Four Companies of *Spaniards* sent to discover, routed some *Turkish* Horse ; then having planted the Cannon, they began to batter the Castle and a Bulwark, whether all the Inhabitants were retir'd. The Gallies coming up to fire upon the Place, fell foul of one another so that eight of them ran a Ground ; but the Men in them, with
the

the help of their Oars, got into the Town, others scaling it from Land at the same time. Three Days after the Castle and Bulwark were surrendred; upon Condition the *Turks* should be ransom'd at *Ragusa* for forty Ducats a Man. There was a great deal of Plunder but not valuable; the Prisoners taken were 1600, many of whom said they were Christians. *Andrew Doria* and *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* put a Garrison of three Thousand *Spaniards* into the Place, under the Command of *Francis Sarmiento*; the *Venetians* opposing it: For according to the Treaty it ought to have been put into their Hands. *Barbarussa* Sailing to relieve *Castelnovo*, lost seventy Ships, and 20000 Men in a desperate Storm; *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* and the *Venetian* Admiral would have pursu'd him after that Loss, but *Andrew Doria* would not consent for fear of more bad Weather, it being about *Allhallowtide*, but lay still ten or twelve Days because of the tempestuous Season. As soon as it clear'd up, they all return'd home. Thus ended the League made to so little purpose, so little being gain'd, and that so soon lost, as we shall see hereafter.

5. This Year 1538 the Cortes met at *Toledo*, being call'd by the Emperour to raise Supplies to pay the Debts he had been oblig'd to contract and put the Kingdom in a posture of Defence. The Prelates met in a Room by themselves and the Laity in another. The Clergy propos'd to grant a general Excise for some time, which was what his Imperial Majesty expected and desir'd; but the Lords Temporal oppos'd it to the last, pressing the Emperour that he would reside in *Spain*, and make Peace abroad, to save Expences, that he would allow them to confer with the Commons, and retrench his Family. In fine, they continu'd so obstinate, that no good being to be done, they were dissolv'd on the first of *February*; and such a general Assembly of Nobility has never been held since. The Emperour was very much disgusted both with Lords and Commons, and with reason since they refus'd him their Assistance upon such an extraordinary Exigency. Whilst the Cortes were sitting, the Courts

Cortes at
Toledo.

ageneral
excise

tiers made some Entertainments on Horse-back on the Plain before the City, where an Alguazil making way for them that Rid, happen'd to strike the Duke *del Infantado's* Horse, for which the said Duke drew his Sword and Wounded him, and *Alcalde Ronquillo* coming to apprehend him for that disrespect to the Emperor, who was present, the Constable Rescu'd him, and they both went off with all the Nobility following them; so that only the Cardinal of *Toledo* remain'd with the Emperor, who seeing the insolence was so general conniv'd at it. Having dissolv'd the Cortes, the Emperor went away to *Madrid*, and thence to *El Pardo*, where being eager in Chase of a Stag, he lost his Company, and kill'd the Stag in the Road, two Miles from *Madrid*. An old Country Fellow coming by with an Ass and a Load of Wood, he proffer'd to give him more than the Wood was worth, if he would carry the Stag to *Madrid*. The Countryman merrily answer'd, *By the Lord, Friend, I believe you are a Fool, you see the Stag is heavier than the Ass and Wood together, and yet you wou'd have the poor Beast carry him; it were better that you, who are a young lusty Fellow, should carry them both.* The Emperor was pleas'd, and whilst he waited for his Company, fell into Discourse with the old Man, asking him how many Kings he had known: The Peasant answer'd, *I have liv'd under five, King John II. his Son Henry, King Ferdinand, King Philip, and this Charles;* Which of them Father, said the Emperor, was the best, and which the worst. *There is no great doubt to be made,* reply'd the old Man, *but Ferdinand was the best; and who was the worst, that I shan't say; but he we have now is bad enough, always rambling to Italy, Germany, and Flanders, carrying all the Money out of Spain; and tho' his Revenues are great enough to Conquer the World, yet he is always laying new Taxes; so that we poor Country Men are quite Beggar'd.* The Emperor finding the Fellow was in earnest, began to plead his own Cause the best he could without discovering himself till his Company came up, and the Countryman seeing the Respect they shew'd him, said, *It were pleasant if you should prove to be*

Two pleasant Adventures.

the King; but had I known it I should have said much more. The Emperor lik'd the Discovrse, and and bestow'd a sum of Money on him, besides a Portion for his Daughter. Another time, tho' I find not what Year, his Imperial Majesty loosing himself a Hunting, came after Midnight almost starv'd with Cold, to a little Village, and knocking up the Curate, desir'd he would let him go into his warm Bed, Roast him a Pullet and get some good Wine, and he would pay for it. The Curate was willing, but ask'd for Money to send for the Wine and Pullet; because he had none himself. The Emperor told him he had none about him, but his Man would come in the Morning and pay all the Expence. Neither having Money, the Curate sent out upon trust, gave him his warm Bed without knowing him, was well pay'd, and the Emperor resolv'd never to go without Money.

At Naples, on the thirteenth of September 1538, about an hour within Night, after many flashes of Lightning, such a Thunder-Clap was heard as astonish'd all the People, and a while after there fell abundance of fine Earth like Ashes, as if it were Rain. This kept all the City at their Prayers, and the next Day the tops of the Houses and Streets appear'd cover'd two Fingers thick, as it were with sifted Ashes. Being curious to enquire whence this proceeded, they saw abundance of Men, Women and Children come from towards Pozzuolo, some half Naked and Weeping, who gave an Account of what had happen'd, which the Gentleman, who took this Relation, went himself to see, and delivers thus, *Between the Town of Pozzuolo and the famous Baths between the Mountains and the Shore, is a large Plain, where about two Miles distance from the Town, the Earth open'd in two places, the one about a Spane throw from the Sea, the other about two Musket-Shots higher. These two Mouths sent out a vast quantity of thick Smoak, and after it such terrible Thunder-claps were heard ten Miles about. With the Smoak came out abundance of Water and Stones, and this was heard by such a violent Wind, that there was no Grass to be seen for several Leagues about; all the Country*

A wonderful Eruption;

was ruin'd, and the Trees either kill'd or torn to pieces with the weight of the Earth that fell on them. The Birds and Cattle were all destroy'd, being surpriz'd in the Night. Besides all that spread farther, the Earth cast up near at hand was so much, that it rais'd several Hills in the midst of the Plain, and many Persons who had the curiosity to go up to the tops of the Mountains the better to discover, were kill'd. All the four Elements, that is, Fire, Water, Earth and Air, gush'd out of these yawnings, and the Weight was so great that it bore down Houses, and broke great Beams; yet what is most wonderful, all that fell into the Water floated, so that for four Miles in length, and one in breadth, it look'd like firm Land, but that Boats made their way through it: Tho' Naples be six Miles distant, and the Sun shin'd bright, on Thursday the fourth of November, it cover'd the whole City with a Darkness, as if it were Night, which stretch'd to the Mountains, six Miles on the other side of the City, so that the tops of those Mountains could not be seen. All this proceeded from Natural Causes, which is not our Business to treat of, but the Accident being so remarkable very well deserves to be mention'd.

We shall begin this Year 1539, with the Death of the Empress, before which, besides a great Eclipse of the Sun on the 8th of April, there appear'd in the West a Comet for the space of thirty Days. She fell sick at Toledo, being then big with Child on the twenty first of April, and departed this Life on the first of May, in the thirty eighth Year of her Age, being first deliver'd of a Dead Son. The next Day her Body was carry'd down to the Bridge of Alcantar, attended by all the Clergy and Nobility then in the City where it was laid on a Beere, like a Litter, carry'd by two Mules, and convey'd to Granada, accompany'd all the way by several Persons of Quality and many of her Servants. In her Life-time, she was counted one of the most accomplish'd Beauties in the World; but when the Body came to Granada, and those who had brought it were to deliver it there in solemn manner, they uncover'd the Face; which they found so deform'd and gashly to behold, that none of them durst

1539.
The Em-
press
Death. &
How soon a strange
Change of it &
so unorthodox

durst affirm it to be her Face. On the contrary the *Marques de Lombay*, afterwards Duke of *Gandia*, who was to deliver it, and Swear that was the Empress's Body, durst not take that Oath, but only depos'd, that such care had been taken, in Conducting and Guarding of it, that he was assur'd it could be no other. The rest of the Company went aside, Loathing such a Dismal Spectacle, and so grievous a Stench, but the *Marques of Lombay*, who had always been a great admirer of her, whilst she Liv'd, could not satisfie his Eyes with gazing on her. This change in her Body, wrought a greater in his Soul, for from that moment he resolv'd upon a New Life, and some time after forsaking his great Estate, and all the Pleasures of the World, he betook himself to the, then newly instituted, Society of Jesus, in which he led a most Holy Life, and made an end Sutable to it. Soon after the Empress's Death, there happen'd the greatest Famine, that had been known in *Spain*, for many Years; and then ensu'd a Pestilential Feaver, which Destroy'd Multitudes of people, so that the Elements seem'd to War against *Spain*, when it was at Peace with its Neighbouring Countries.

8. *Solyman* the Great *Turk* enrag'd at the loss of *Turks Castelново*, this Year sent an Army of 30000 Foot, ^{take Castel} and a proportionable number of Horse, by Land, ^{stelnovo.} to Reduce that Place again to his Obedience, and at the same time order'd *Barbarussa* with a greater Fleet than that he had the precedent Year to shut it up by Sea. On Board this Fleet were 10000 *Turks*, and 4000 *Janizaries*, and they arriv'd at *Vallona* in *June* this Year, 1539. *Barbarussa* hearing that *John Doria*, with twenty Galleys, was gone to put Supplies into *Castlenovo*, thought to have intercepted him in his return, but he had made such haste, that he sav'd himself. On the 12th of *July*, 1000 *Turks* Landed to take Water; and the *Spaniards* Sallying beat them off, with great loss. In the Afternoon they return'd stronger, and were again repuls'd, with the loss of 300 Men. On the 16th of *July*, all *Barbarussa's* Fleet being come up, he began to Land his Men and Cannon, and the Land Army

The HISTORY of

Army coming up, at the same time, they incamp'd and level'd two Hillocks, that lay between them and the Town; having made their approaches, they planted 44 pieces of Cannon, and some Mortars, out of which they threw Stones of great Weight, to destroy the Houses. Ten Galleys, ply'd the Battery, from the Sea, and in this manner they continu'd it nine Days, without intermission, with such fury, that they levell'd the Wall, even with the Ground on one side, and destroy'd many Houses. *Francis Sarmiento* the Governour had, during the time he was there, fortify'd the Place, the best he could, and sent for Succours to *Spain, Italy, and Sicily*, but none came, so that there were in the Town, about 3000 *Spanish* Souldiers, 1000 Servants and Women, 40 Traders and Clergimen, 150 *Albanian* Horse, and several other *Greeks*. In one fall the *Spaniards* made, they are reported, to have kill'd 6000 *Turks*, which *Barbarussa* perceiving, and that he should never take the Place, as was design'd at first, he Landed 20 pieces of Cannon more, and, with 60, Batter'd the Castle five Days following, never giving over at Night, so that he scarce left one Stone upon another. Then he gave the Assault, carry'd the Castle three several times, and was as often beaten out again, with incredible Loss on both Sides. On the seventh of *August*, the Morning being very Rainy, put out the *Spaniards* Matches, so that the *Turks* giving a general Assault, they were forc'd to come to handy Strokes; Behaving themselves with wonderful Bravery; *Francis Sarmiento* the Governour, Riding about to encourage them, because he could not go Afoot, by reason of his Wounds. In fine, the Multitude prevailing, all the Christians were put to the Sword, except a few, who had retir'd into the lower Castle, where they artickled for Life, being about 800 in all. Of the *Turks* near 10000, are said to have Perish'd, during the Siege. *Barbarussa* Beheaded Captain *Machin de Alonzua*, and all the Preists, the other Prisoners he put to the Oare.

Rebelli- 9. In *May* this Year the Rebellion of *Gant* brok
 on of Gant. out, which had been long before hatching, for in the
 Year

Year 1536. the War being then Hot, Queen *Mary* who Govern'd the Low Countries, Assembling the States of the Country, had lay'd a great imposition, said to amount to two Millions of Florins, whereof *Flanders* was to pay four Hundred Thousand. All the rest of the Country submitted and paid it, only *Gant* stood out, for which reason the Queen caus'd several of the Principal Men, to be Apprehended, and kept in Prison, till the Town paid the Money. The People Offended at it, in the Year 1537 sent a Sindick of their City, to present a Petition to the Queen, desiring she would release their Fellow Citizens, and to shew her their Priviledges, by which they pretended to be exempt from paying of Taxes. She refer'd the Priviledges to be Try'd by the Councils of *Mechlin* and *Brussels*, but press'd the Payment of the Money. After trying whether other Places would joyn with them, and finding none would, they obtain'd leave to send a Petition to the Emperor: Whose Answer was, that they should Obey the Queen, as if he were there in Person, and pay the four Hundred Thousand Florins, or he would take a severer Course to compell them. They grew hardned, and sent another Petition, to the same effect as the former; at which the Emperor being much Offended, he resolv'd to go in Person, with all speed into *Flanders*, and Humble those Haughty People: In the mean while, they perceiving the Queen rais'd Men to reduce them, and that the Council of *Mechlin* had given judgment against them, ran to Arms, and turn'd the Collectors of the Tax out of the City, secur'd all Places of Strength, Listed Men, and sent to offer themselves to the King of *France*, who was so far from giving them any Encouragement, that he sent their Original Letters to the Emperor.

10. His imperial Majesty had before resolv'd to sail over into *Italy*, and thence to go into *Germany* to settle the Affairs of Religion, but the News of the Rebellion at *Gant*, made him alter his Resolution, and take his Journey for *Flanders*, through *France*. Many endeavour'd to dissuade him, because of the danger of putting himself into the power

The Emperor's
Journey
through
France;

The HISTORY of

of the King of *France*, but he was Undaunted, and resolv'd to Rely on that King's Word, without any further Security. He left *D. John de Tavera*, Cardinal and Archbishop of *Toledo*, the same power to Govern *Spain*, he had us'd to leave the Empress, and set forward by the Post, with a small retinue, In *November*, 1539. Monsieur *Granvelle*, was sent before to advertize the King of his coming, who perfectly sent his two Sons, the *Dauphin* and Duke of *Orleans*, with the Constable *Montmorency* to Meet and Conduct him. When the Duke of *Orleans* met him in *France*, he is Reported to have lay'd his Hand on his Back, and said, yield your self a Prisoner, to which the Emperor made no Answer, but Embrac'd him. In *January*, 1540, the Emperor and King of *France*, met at *Chastellerault*, went thence to *Amboise*, where the Hangings in the Emperor's Bed-Chamber, being set a Fire, he had like to have been Stifled. Thence they remov'd to *Blois*, and so to *Orleans*; where it is said a Consultation was held, about detaining the Emperor; but that *Montmorency* exclaim'd against it, as a bare breach of Faith. Another Accident or rather Contrivance is thought to have sav'd the Emperor, which was, that he being in Discourse with the Dutches *d'Estampes*, who was in great Favour with the King, Designedly let fall a Ring, of a prodigious Value, which she stooping took up, and offer'd him, but he refus'd to receive, desiring her to keep it in Memory of his passing through *France*. This Generosity so Oblig'd the Lady, that it is believ'd, she prevail'd with the King, not to Detain him. From *Orleans* the Emperor went to *Fontainebleau*, where he spent some Days, and then remov'd to *Paris*, where he was receiv'd with the greatest Magnificence Imaginable. The King waited on the Emperor as far as *S. Quintin*, and the two young Princes to *Valenciennes*; where Queen *Mary* Entertain'd them, as became their Dignity, and they took their Leave of him.

Punishment of
Rebels at
Gant.

11. The Emperor immediately, order'd a Body of *German Foot*, to March before to *Gant*, and he follow'd with the *Flemmish Horse*. The People there hearing of his coming with such a Power, and be-
ing

ing in no Condition to make Opposition, resolv'd to receive him in a Peaceable, but Sorowful manner. King *Ferdinand* was also come into *Flanders* with 12000 *Germans*, and attended the Emperor and Queen *Mary* to *Gant*, where they enter'd on the twenty fourth of *February* 1540. Immediately the Gates, Walls and Towers were secur'd, that none might escape; and the Attorney General having before the Council charg'd the People of *Gant* with their Rebellion and many Insolencies, on the last Day of *April*, the Emperor gave Judgment against them, which was as follows. The Fort they had rais'd he demolish'd, and with the materials built a Citadel, in the place where at that time there was a Monastery of Benedictine Monks, they being translated to the Cathedral and made Canons of that Church. All the Magistrates of the City were depos'd; the City Priviledges and Charters all declar'd forfeit; all their Corporations broken, new Laws establish'd; 26 of the principal Mutineers Executed, others Fin'd, others Banish'd. The Criminals had the Sentence Read to them, being brought Naked, only with white Shirts down to their Feet; some were enjoin'd long Pilgrimages, where they Dy'd; others all in white with Ropes about their Necks, cast themselves at the Emperor's Feet, and others flying, ended their Days in Misery, a just Reward of Rebellion. The Duke of *Cleves*, who was come to *Gant* upon the Emperor's safe Conduct, to adjust the Differences about the Dukedome of *Guelthers*, making unreasonable Demands, went away without obtaining any part of what he came about. The King of *England* at the same time made Overtures of Reconciliation; but the Wrongs he had done the Emperor were too great to be put up till more urgent Necessities made them be forgot.

Whilst the Emperor was in *France*, he endeavour'd to persuade that King to joyn in League with him against the *Turk*, and both of them sent Embassadors to *Venice* to joyn with that Republick, and dissuade the Senate from making Peace with the Infidels. This Treaty came to nothing, because

Peace between the
Turks and
Venetians.

the

the *French* were not sincere, shewing in publick to promote the League, and underhand using all endeavours for Peace; so that the *Venerians* perceiving their double Dealing, agreed with the *Turk*, and the Alliance propos'd came to nothing. The Cardinal of *Lorraine* and Constable *Montmorenci* were at *Gant* in behalf of the *French King*, pressing the Emperor to grant the Duke of *Orleans* the investiture of *Milan*, which *French* Historians falsely affirm his Imperial Majesty had promis'd that King when he was in *France*. The Emperor offer'd the Duke his Eldest Daughter in Marriage, and to give him the Low-Countries with her, and the Title of King; but that Princes Father had set his Heart upon *Milan*, and would not be satisfy'd with any other thing, so that it plainly appear'd a War must ensue. Besides this, Cardinal *Farnesius*, the Pope's Legate, being offended, that the Emperor had summon'd the Diet to meet at *Wormes* to settle Religion, went away without taking his Leave. His Imperial Majesty continu'd three Months at *Gant*, settling that Government, and there pardon'd *Reyner* Lord *Brederode* condemn'd to Death for high Treason, in serving the King of *France* during the late Wars, and aspiring to usurp *Holland* and *Zealand*, calling himself Count of those Places. Hither the *Lutherans* sent Deputies with extravagant Proposals to the Emperor, who refus'd to see them, but remitted them to the Diet appointed to meet at *Wormes*. In *May* King *Ferdinand* return'd to *Austria*. From *Gant* the Emperor took a Progress to *Holland*, and other Provinces of the *Neatherlands*, where he spent the whole Year in Peace, only disturb'd with the continual Importunities of the *Lutherans*, whose Books he forbid any Person to Print, Publish and keep. The Plague mention'd before, rag'd so violently this Year, that the eleventh part of all the People of *Spain* was computed to be swept away by it. In *September*, this same Year, Pope *Paul V.* confirm'd the Order instituted by *S. Ignatius* of *Loyola*, commonly known by the Name of the Society of *Jesus*, which was afterwards again confirm'd in the Year 1560, by Pope *Julius III.* *S. Ignatius*

natus the Founder, Dy'd in the Year 1556, of whom it does not belong to this History to give any further Account.

C H A P. XXV.

The Emperor holds the Diet at Ratisbon; his unfortunate Expedition to Argier; his Return to Spain; War between him and France; Actions on both sides in Flanders, Italy, and the Frontiers of Spain: The Emperor goes into Italy, Germany, and Flanders; reduces the Duke of Cleves; Turkish Fleet in France.

1. AN unexpected Accident hasten'd the Breach between the Emperor and the King of France, which was before unavoidable on many Accounts. The King employ'd one *Antony Rincon*, a fugitive *Spaniard*, as his Ambassador at the Port. This *Rincon* was come from *Constantinople* into France, where having given an account of his Negotiation; he was furnish'd with new Instructions, and sent back through *Piemont* to embark at *Venice*. *Cezar Fregoso* was to have guarded him with a Troop of Horse for fear of the *Spaniards*, had he gone by Land, but being fat and unweildy, he chose to go down the River *Tesin* in a Boat, and so into the *Po*; being come to the place where the *Tesin* falls into the *Po*, they were set upon by a company of Men Mask'd, who kill'd *Rincon*, *Fregoso*, and all that were with them, hiding their Bodies, so that no News was heard of them for above two Months after, when they were found half devour'd by wild Beasts, and *Fregoso's* Body known, because he wanted a Finger of one Hand. Who
the

1541
French
Embassa-
dor to the
Turk Kil-
Pd.

the Murderers were could never be discover'd, but the Marquess *del Gasto* was most suspected, tho' he always deny'd it, and the Emperor protested he had never order'd, nor knew who had done it.

2. The Emperor being at *Wormes*, the beginning of this Year 1541, there were great disputes there concerning Religion, which all came to nothing, and he remov'd thence to *Ratisbon*, where the Diet was appointed to meet, and some of the Princes and the Embassadors of others began to repair thither in *March*. In *May* following the Duke of *Cleves* went away privately into *France*, where he Marry'd the Daughter of the King of *Navarre*, and enter'd into an Alliance with the King of *France* against the Emperor. The Duke's Embassadors would have made some excuse for him, but his Imperial Majesty turn'd away without giving ear to them. On the nineteenth of *July* the Diet at *Ratisbon* broke up, where the principal matters concluded were, That matters of Religion should continue in the same posture they were till a general Council met, or for want of it, till the next Diet, which was to meet that Day eighteen Months. That the *Lutherans* should teach nothing contrary to the Articles their Divines had agreed to, nor draw any other Persons to their Party. That Prelates should labour to reform their Churches, till the Pope made a thorough Reformation. That the Peace concluded at *Nuremberg* should be inviolably observ'd. That all Churches among the Protestants should continue as they were till a general Council. That Church-men should enjoy the Lands they had among the Protestants. There were some more Articles of less note, not worth inserting; but the Assembly agreed to furnish the King of the *Romans* with ten Thousand Foot and two Thousand Horse, and four Months Pay for them after they were in *Hungary*. Besides they offer'd to maintain twenty four Thousand Men three Years, for the Emperor to make War against the *Turk*; left the Emperor at liberty to proceed against the Duke of *Cleves*; took the Duke of *Savoy* into the protection of the Empire; forbid all *Germans* serving

Emperor
in Germany

Diet at Ra-
tisbon

concluded that
nothing should be
taught but what
was a good use
in the year 1541

serving any Forreign Prince, upon pain of high Treason, prohibited the Printing of scandalous libels, &c. Thus the Diet broke up, after which a League was concluded between the Pope, the Emperor, King of the Romans, Arch-bishops of *Mentz* and *Salzburg*, the Duke of *Bavaria*, and other Princes for Defence of the Catholick Religion. After the Diet, his Imperial Majesty finding it necessary to take a Journey into *Italy*, to forward the General Council and other Affairs, he sent an Express, to desire the Pope to meet him at *Luca*, and then set forward himself with twelve Thousand *Germans*, and one Thousand Horse, he had rais'd for the War he design'd to make in *Africk*. In *August* he met his Holiness, as was appointed at *Luca*, where they both continu'd eight or ten Days, the Emperor visiting the Pope three times, and the Pope him but once. Whensoever they met, the *French* Ambassador was by, who demanded that *Rincon* and *Fregoso* should be deliver'd to him, not knowing they were Kill'd, and would admit of no Justification he could make. The Pope wisely forbore speaking for either Side, but earnestly Begg'd of the Emperor, that he would give the King of *France* the Investiture of *Milan*; which his Imperial Majesty would no way consent to, urging for his excuse, that it was only to give an Enemy Footing in *Italy*, who would not be so satisfy'd, but would, when he had that, aspire to *Naples* and *Sicily*. His Holiness perceiving he could not prevail desisted, and would have dissuaded the Emperor from his expedition against *Argier*, at least for that year, but he was unfortunately fixt in his Resolution.

3. Having taken his Leave of the Pope at *Luca*, the Emperor, tho' forc'd to put into *Sardinia* and *Corfica*, Arriv'd at last at *Majorca*, where he had appointed the rendezvous of his Fleet and Forces, which consisted of six Thousand Foot, and four Hundred Light Horse, Commanded by *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, in a Hundred and fifty Ships, six Thousand *Germaines*, under the Conduct of *George Fronsberg*, and five Thousand *Italians*, Led by *Camillo Coloma* and *Augustin Spinola*, in above 100 Ships.

Expedition to Argier.

Ships: The Galleys there, at that time were fifty, a good Train of Artillery, plenty of Ammunition, and great store of all sorts of Provisions. Besides what we have mention'd above, two Hundred Vessels of all sorts were provided in *Spain*, Loaded with Ammunition and Provisions, carrying 400 Men at Arms, 700 light Horse, without any Foot in pay, but a vast number of Voluntiers of all qualities. This Fleet tho' provided for the purpose, came not to *Majorca*, nor yet to *Argier*; all the Force the Emperor had, was 64 Galleys, two Hundred Ships, of three Masts, and 100 small ones, and 20000 Landmen, without including Voluntiers, or the Galley Souldiers. *Argier* is seated on the Coast of *Afrik*, on the side of a Hill, near a large Bay, which is no safe Harbour: The Plain about it is but small, Water'd by the two Rivers *Alcaraz* and *Sessaja*, and at a small Distance are the Mountains very rough and uncoth. The Town is Large and Rich, by reason of the Booty continually convey'd thither by Pyrates. For many Years it was under the Kings of *Tremexen*, and afterwards subject to those of *Bugia*, till *Barbarussa* made himself master of it. At this time it was Govern'd by *Hassan Aga* an Eunuch and Renegado, born in *Sardinia*, who hearing of the Emperor's Design, provided for his Defence. His strength consisted of eight Hundred *Turks*, most of them Horse, near fifty Thousand *Moores*, all Arm'd with Guns or Cross Bows, and a great number of *Arabs*; to make his Men the more Desperate, he order'd, upon Pain of Death that nobody should send, Wife, Children, or Goods, out of the City. To return to the Emperor, he set Saile from *Majorca*, as soon as the Weather was Fair, and in two Days time, was upon the Coast of *Argier* but the Fleet being disappears'd, and the Weather rough, spent three or four Days before he could land. On the twentythird of *October* the Sea grew settled; and then the *Spaniards* had orders to Land with their Armes, and two or three Days Provisions. Three Days were spent in Landing the Foot, some Horfes, and nine pieces of Cannon. The Emperor sent a Summons to *Hassan Aga*, to Surrender the Place

Place, promising him all Encouragement if he did, and Threatning the utmost Severity, in case of Refusal; but the Answer was, that he would defend the City to the utmost, or Die without betraying his Trust. Having receiv'd this Answer, his Majesty Advanc'd with his Army, driving the *Arabs* before him, and the second Day Encamp'd near *Argier*, between two great Hollows, which serv'd instead of an Entrenchment, because the Enemy could not get over without Bridges. The ground where the *Spaniards* lay, Commanded the Town, which the Emperor with his Army enclos'd not fearing the *Arabs*, for the reason aforesaid, and ordering the Ships and Gallies to batter from the Sea, not doubting to be Master of the Place in a few Days, because the Works about it were not Strong. The twenty fifth the Wind blew so Stormy at North-East, with Rain and Hail, that most of the Tents were blown down, and the Storm continu'd the twenty sixth, so that the Souldiers could scarce stand, which the Besieg'd preceiving, they made a strong sally, and routed three Companies of *Italians* that were upon Guard at a Bridge, but fresh *Italians* coming on to relieve their Company repuls'd the Infidels; pursuing them to the City-Gates. The Christians neglecting to retire in time, suffer'd much from the Walls, and *Hassan Aga* Sallying again beat them back, but the Knights of *Malta*, and some Gentlemen, made good a Wooden Bridge till they were Reliev'd; the Emperor in Person coming down with the *Germans*, and putting the Besieg'd to Flight. Three Hundred of the *Imperialists* were kill'd in this Action, and above two Hundred Wounded.

4. This Terrible Storm took the Fleet, before the Stores and Provisions were landed. Which prevented the taking of the City. In the height of it, came the Fleet from *Spain*, all which except some few great Ships, was cast away, so that in a short space about a Hundred and fifty Ships were lost, with all that was in them, save some Horses and the Men. Several Gallies having struggl'd all Night with the Tempest, in the Morning ran themselves a Ground, where the *Arabs* kill'd the Men as they came Ashore, and

*Storm
Destroys
the Empe-
ror's Fleet.*

and the Emperor sending three Companies of *Italians* to protect them, was the cause that others, who before would rather trust to the mercy of the Waves than of those Barbarians, follow'd the example of the first running a-Shore: The Captains of others by main Threats and Blows kept them out at Sea, yet fourteen or fifteen Gallies were lost, with all that was in them. The rest went away with *Andrè Doria* to cape *Metafuz*, who was much enrag'd with those that ran a Shore, at himself for having mistaken the Landing place; and at the Emperor because he would undertake that Expedition so late in the Year. This misfortune made the Emperor resolve to raise the Siege, having neither Cannon for Battery, nor Provisions for his Army. *Andrew Doria* hasten'd him to march the Army to *Cape Metafuz*; where the Ships lay, that being the best place to Ship off, and safe from the attempts of the *Arabs*. The twenty seventh having divided some Horses among the Men for want of other Provision, the Army broke up and march'd away, in the same order it came before the Town, the Emperor being heard to say nothing but *Thy Will be done*. The *Turks* and *Arabs* made a show of falling upon the Rear, but presently fled upon the Christians facing them. The 28th the Army pass'd the River *Alcaraz*, a Bridge being lay'd over, because it was much swollen with the Rain. There was no Provision, and the Men fed upon Horses, the small Twigs of Palm Trees, Tortoises, Snails, and Sea-Onions, which ill Food and worse Lying, bred Distempers. Next Day, being the twenty ninth, they pass'd the River *Sef Seia*, the Water up to their Arm-pits, and encamp'd at *Metafuz*, to the great satisfaction of them all. *Metafuz* was formerly a great Town, as appears by the Ruins of it; but at this time gone to nothing; yet it is the best Port about *Argier*, being shelter'd from the North East Wind by a slip of Land running out into the Sea; and able Seamen afterwards arriv'd, that had the Fleet Anchor'd there at first, no Loss had been sustain'd, and the Town had been taken. Here all sorts of Provisions were Loaded, so that there was
great

great Plenty; and it began to be controverted, whether the Army should return to the Siege, or be Ship'd of. *Ferninand Cortes*, who conquer'd *Mexico*, and was there present, would have had the Emperor return into *Spain*, and leave him the Army to take the City; but the great Ones oppos'd, and little Account was made of him. So that orders were given to Ship, and that there might be more Room for Men; so many Ships being lost, the Horses were order'd to be thrown over-Board, which the Owners being unwilling to perform, the Emperor himself went from Ship to Ship to see it done: His Majesty going once towards the Shore, the Soldiers thinking he would go aboard and leave them, began to mutter; but he turning to them with a pleasant Countenance, said, *Don't fear my Friends, I am not going, I assure you; if any Body be left here it shall be I, for I will not stir till I see you all safe.* In fine, the Forces were all Ship'd off, and the Weather growing boisterous again, Sail'd, every one his own way, and laying hold of the first opportunity. The Fleet was dispers'd, some into *Spain*, some on the Coast of *Africk*, part arriv'd in *Sicily*, and part in *Italy*. Two Ships full of *Spanish* Soldiers were cast a-Shore near *Argier*, where the *Arabs* refusing the Men Quarter, they drew up in a Body and made their way to the City, where they surrender'd themselves to the *Turks*. The Emperor with most of the Gallies was put into *Bugia*, where he continu'd some Days, tho' there was great want of Provisions, because the Weather was not fit to venture out to Sea. As soon as the Sky clear'd a little, he dismiss'd the Gallies of *Italy* and *Sicily*, and the Ships that came from *Spain*. The Wind coming up at South West, His Majesty Sail'd from *Bugia* to *Majorca*, and thence to *Carthagena*, where he was receiv'd with extraordinary joy, all *Spain* being in great fear for him. Thus ended the unfortunate Expedition of *Argier*.

5. *Andrew Doria*, and *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, running along the Coast of *Africk*, after they were dismiss'd by the Emperor, took several small places, and left *D. Alvaro de Sande* with the Regiment of

A a

Sicily

Sicily at *Monasterio*, ordering him to assist *Muley Haffem*, King of *Tunex*, against *Cide Harsa*, who had possess'd himself of the City of *Carrican*, and call'd himself King of it. *Cide Harsa* lay upon a Neck of Land, encompass'd on both sides by the Sea, near *Monasterio*, with Twenty two Thousand Horse, Fifteen Thousand Foot, and six Hundred *Turkish* Musketers. The King of *Tunex* had seven or eight Thousand Horse, and the *Spaniards* were about two Thousand five Hundred Foot, who resolv'd to give the Enemy Battle, because there was no way but what must be made through them. *D. Alvaro* acquainting the King with his Design, drew up his Men, sending four Hundred *Spanish* Musketers upon the forlorn. These broke six Hundred *Turks* that compos'd the Enemies Van, and pursuing their Advantage in disorderly manner, were set upon by fourteen Thousand Horse, who lay conceal'd in the Olive-Gardens, and fell upon the Conquerors with such Revolution, that *Muley Hassen's* Horse fled towards *Tunex*. The *Spanish* Forlorn was so far advanc'd, that when they would have retir'd to their Body it was too late, and about thirty of them were kill'd before they could be reliev'd, being encompass'd on all sides by the Enemy. The main Body of *Spaniards* made up and gave such a Charge, that putting the Infidels to the Rout they joyn'd their Forlorn, and so march'd back a League and a half. There the *Arabs* made a fresh attack, and were again repuls'd; so that the *Spaniards* march'd away without any further molestation across a Plain, that was four Leagues over, having secur'd all their Baggage, and six Field Pieces they had with them. In this Retreat five Hundred *Moors* falling upon the Baggage, a *Spanish* Woman, call'd *Mary de Montano*, gather'd seven Hundred Servants that follow'd the Camp, and taking upon her the Command of them, beat off those Infidels and secur'd all the Equipage.

6. Whilst the Emperor was employ'd in the un-
 War be- fortunate Expedition above mention'd, the King
 tween the of France was busie sending Embassadors to all
 Emperor of parts to raise him Enemies; but particularly he
 France. sent

sent to *Constantinople* to persuade *Solyman* to employ his Fleet against him. The *Turk* was easily brought to it, and would have persuaded the *Venetians* to joyn in the League, which they would never consent to. However, the *French King* being assur'd of the Infidel and of the King of *Denmark*, declar'd War against his Imperial Majesty, pretending the Truce was broken by the Murder of his Embassador above mention'd, tho' the real motive was the Dukedom of *Milan* he so ardently coveted. Before any open Hostilities began, he disgrac'd the Constable *Montmorency*, reducing him from his high Post to live in a poor Country House, as some will have it, because the said Constable dissuaded him from apprehending the Emperor when he was in *France*; or, according to others, he retir'd voluntarily, being disgusted that his Rival the Admiral was restor'd to the King's Favour. After this, Orders were sent to *du Bellay*, General in *Piemont*, to commence the War upon the best pretence he could; which was soon made known to the Marquess *del Gasto*. The *French* at that time were possess'd of *Turin*, *Moncaliere*, *Savigliano*, *Pignerol*, and other Places of less Note; the Emperor held *Aste*, *Vercelli*, *Uffiano*, *Fossano*, *Quier*, *Quierasco*, and *Alva*. Before any Declaration of War, the *French*, by Night, surpriz'd *Quierasco*, putting half the Garrison to the Sword, and turning out the rest, the Castle soon after surrendring for want of Provisions. They made the like attempt upon *Alva* and *Vercelli*, but fail'd in both places. The Marquess *del Gasto* gathering his Forces, made himself Master of twelve small Places, but all together much inferior to *Quierasco*. At the same time Monsieur *de Vendosme* routed a Body of *Flemish* Horse near *Terouennes*, in the Low-Countries, and the Duke of *Orleans* took *Luxembourg*, and several other places, all of them opening their Gates to him. He left the Duke of *Guise* Governour of those Conquests, and return'd to his Father, whith whom he had not time to rejoyce at his success, for almost as soon as he the News came, that the Prince of *Orange* had retaken *Luxembourg*; and all other places, except *Jvoy*, in

which he Besieg'd the Duke of *Guize*. The Prince was till *October* recovering these Places, and then bent his Force against the Country of *Juliers*, to revenge the harm done in the Province of *Luxembourg*.

The Duke of Cleaves against the Emperor. 7. Whilst the Duke of *Orleans* was in the Province of *Luxembourg*, the Duke of *Cleves* rais'd twelve Thousand German Foot, and fifteen Hundred Horse, and gave the Command of them to *Martin van Rosen*, who having some intelligence in *Antwerp*, march'd with all haste thinking to possess himself of that Place. The Inhabitants, who suspected his Design, rais'd some Forces, put themselves in a Posture of Defence, and made all strangers that would stay in the Town, take an Oath to defend it to the utmost. At the same time the Prince of *Orange* having gather'd five Hundred Horse, and three Thousand Foot, hasten'd to get into *Antwerp*, and *Rosen*, to prevent him. The latter coming first to the place where the two Roads met, left four Hundred Horse out in view, behind whom, with the help of some Trees, he hid his Foot; so that the Prince seeing so small a Number when he came up, made no difficulty to Charge them; but, they giving way, he was presently enclos'd, and with much difficulty gathering his Horse fought his way through to *Antwerp*. Many of the Foot were cut off, and two Thousand of them casting down their Arms, took Quarter. The People of *Antwerp* were much dejected to see the Prince come so thinly attended and from a Rout; but he encourag'd them, and set all things in order for their Defence. The next Day *Rosen* encamp'd in the Suburbs of *Antwerp*, and sent to summons the City, his Trumpet telling the People, that the Emperor was eaten by Fishes, meaning, that he was drown'd at Sea. The Townsmen gave a resolute Answer, and withall told the Messenger, *That if the Emperor were in the Whales Belly, he wou'd, like Jonas, come out again the third Day.* *Rosen* finding no Treason, as he expected, in the City, burnt all the Country about, and then march'd away towards *Lovain*, without making any attempt upon *Antwerp*. Some small number of

of Troops, sent by Queen *Mary* Governess of *Flanders* to secure *Lovain*, basely quitted the place, thinking themselves too few to maintain it, yet the Schollars obstructed the Composition the Townsmen were making with *Rosen*, and firing the Canon at it, made him depart as empty handed as he had done at *Antwerp*. Failing of his Expectation, he cross'd the Country, Pillaging and Destroying all wheresoever he came, till at last he joynd the Duke of *Orleans*, in the Province of *Luxemburg* and he having broke up his Army, as was mention'd before, after reducing all that Territory, sent *Rosen* with his Forces back to *Cleves*. Whilst these things were doing in those Parts, the Duke of *Vendosme*, Governour of *Picardy*, with another Army, Took and Demolish'd *Terouenne*, *Lilers*, and several other Places of Strength, Plunder'd the Country and return'd with great Booty into *Picardy*.

8. Having given an account of the success of three Armies, employ'd in *Flanders*, against the Emperor; we must now turn towards the Frontiers of *Spain*, where the *Dauphin* March'd with forty Thousand Men, to lay Siege to *Perpignan*. His Imperial Majesty being advertis'd of it, Summon'd all the Nobility and Gentry to oppose the Enemy, and they appear'd in great numbers, very well attended. The Duke of *Alva* gave orders for fortifying *Perpignan*, put in a good Garrison, and sufficient store of Ammunition and Provision, so that when the *Dauphin* came before it, finding all things better provided to oppose him, than he had expected, and hearing the Emperor was coming to Relieve it, he made but a short Stay, and return'd to *Monpellier*. All Necessary precautions had been taken at the same time, to secure *Navarre* and *Biscay* against any irruption of the *French*, but they retiring, as has been said, nothing worth Relating was done in those Parts. The *Spanish* expedition failing, the King of *France* dismiss'd the *Swiss*, and sent *Annebauc* with the *Italians* that serv'd him into *Picmont*, to lay Siege to *Coni*, where he met with no better Success than the *Dauphin* had at *Perpignan*: Nor was he more Fortunate at *Como*, which he batter'd six Days with-

Armies
in Roussili-
on and
Picmont.

out ceasing, yet he made himself Master of some other Places of less Note, most of which he demolish'd. Winter was not without Action in the Low Countries, where the Prince of *Orange*, with a powerful Army, ravag'd all the Dominions of the Duke of *Cleves* in Revenge for what *Rosen* his General had done in *Brabant*, but as soon as the Prince was gone Home, the Duke recover'd all the Towns he had lost, and laid Siege to *Hensberg*, whence the Prince with a Powerful Army, made him to rise and so the War ceas'd for that Season. This same Year, the Councell of the *West-Indies* in *Spain*, was purg'd, turning out several Members of it, and *F. Bartholomew de las Casas* of the Order of *S. Dominick*, having acquainted the Emperor, how Cruelly the *Spaniards* Treated the *Indians*, he order'd, that for the future none of them should be put to work in the Mines, at the Fisheries, or to carry Burdens, unless they undertook it voluntarily, for Daily hire. In *October*, his Imperial Majesty repair'd to *Barcelona*, to confer with the Prince *Doria* about matters of great Concern. Thus we conclude the Year 1542.

1543
Great Storm
of Snow.

9. To begin this Year, 1543, *Annebualt* the French General in *Piemont*, returning from that Country into *France*, and passing over Mount *Cenis*, on the first Day of *January*, was taken in such a Storm of Wind and Snow, that many of his Company Perish'd in it, others lost their Eyes, some their Hands, and some their Feet, and he when the Tempest ceas'd, was sav'd by the Mountain People, who carry'd him to one of their Cottages and recover'd him, but neither he, nor any of the rest, ever enjoy'd their Health after it. Upon his Departure, the *Spaniards* Attempted to surprize *Turin*, by sending some Souldiers in Carts of Hay, to Secure a Gate till a Party lay'd in ambush, came to their Assistance, but the Secret being Accidentally Discover'd, five of them were Kill'd and the Design Miscarry'd. In the mean while, the Emperor by his Embassadors, ceas'd not to Solicit the Pope to joyn in League with him, against the King of *France*: But his Holiness, Prudently refusing to declare himself, for

fear of widening the Breach among Christian Princes, his Imperial Majesty was so incens'd, that he put out an Edict, by which he declar'd, all For-
 eigners incapable of any Benifice or pension in *Spain*, which much Troubled the Pope, but did not alter his Resolution. The Emperor failing in this Point, pres'd for a General Council, to settle the Affairs of Religion, which his Holiness willingly agreed to, and appointed *Trent*, for the Place of its meeting, that the *Lutherans* might have nothing to excuse them from coming to it. His Legates for holding the Council were Cardinal *Pool* of the Blood Royal of *England*, Cardinal *Moron*, and *Paul Paris*, and with them he sent 100 Learned Men, as well *French*, as *Italians*. The Emperor being disappointed of his intended League with the Pope, concluded an Alliance with *Henry VIII.* King of *England*, and being resolv'd to pass over into *Italy* thence to take his Journey into *Germany* and *Flanders*, he committed the Government of *Spain* to his Son *Philip*, already Sworn Heir to the Crown, Appointing *Francis delos Covos* to take care of the Civil Affairs, because of the Princes tender Years, and the Duke of *Alva* Captain General. Having thus provided for the Government of *Spain*, he embark'd at *Barcelona* on a Fleet of 47 Gallies, and above 40 Ships, in which were 700 *Spanish* Horse and 8000 Foot, all old Soldiers. He Arriv'd at *Genoa* about the Latter end of *June*, and was lodg'd in the Pallace of Prince *Andrew Doria*. Here *Cosmo de Medicis* for a Hundred and fifty Thousand Ducats had the Castles of *Leghorn* and *Florence* deliver'd to him. The Pope, who as we said, had before refus'd to comply with the Emperor's Desires, now solicited for an interview, which, the Emperor seeming very averse to it, was at last with much Difficulty agreed upon. Accordingly they met at *Buxeto*, with each 500 Men, and continu'd there five Days Visiting one another, and conferring about Affairs of great moment, but the Popes principal Aim was to purchase the Dukedome of *Milan* for his Grandson, which, the Emperor being in great want of Money, had like to have taken Effect, but

*The Em-
 peror in
 Italy.*

in the end came to nothing. Having taken leave of the Pope, his Imperial Majesty continu'd his Journey into *Germany*, where the General Rumour was, that he had Died at *Argier*, and that the *Spaniards* carry'd about a statue very like him to deceive the World. When he came to *Spire* Deputies were sent from several parts, to see whether it was really he or no, such Persons being employ'd, as were well Acquainted with him. His Arrival at this City was on the 20th of *July*, and he continu'd in it fifteen Days, hearing the Deputies of the *Lutherans* sent to him to intercede for the Duke of *Cleves*, as did the Count *Palatin* and Archbishop of *Cologn*. This last presuming to press him upon that Point again, after his departure from *Spire*, he took him aside, and so severely reprimanded him for suffering the *Lutherans* to Preach in his Dominions, that the Archbishop went from him weeping, and protesting he would never allow it for the future.

10. His Imperial Majesty came to *Bonne*, where he had appointed the randevouz of his Army, on the fifteenth of *August*, and stay'd there five Days, Landing the Cannon and Reviewing his Forces, which consisted of 15000 *Germans*, 4000 *Spaniards*, 4000 *Italians*, 2000 Men at Arms, and 800 Light Horse, besides all his Family and retinue making up 400 Horse more, tho' the *Spanish* Horses made no good appearance, being harras'd with their long Journey. On the 22th the Army came before *Duren* in the Dukedom of *Fuliers*. The Country about it is fruitful, the City Strong by Nature and Art, being in the Midst of a Plain, without any Hill to overlook it. There was a double Ditch about it, and a strong Wall, or Rampart, all finish'd but a very small part, which they were filling up with all possible speed. Some small outworks it had but inconsiderable, abundance of small pieces of Cannon, and some heavy, tho' not well Distributed. The City was Summon'd on the 23d, and the same Day the Prince of *Orange* came to the Camp, being sent to the Emperor's Assistance, by Queen *Mary*, Governess of *Flanders*, with 8000 *Flemmings*, 2000 *Burgundian* Men at Arms, and 500 *Grison* Light Horse

Goes in-
to Germa-
ny.

The Em-
peror Con-
quers the
Duke of
Cleves's
Dominions.

Horse. That same Night a Battery was finish'd, and the next Morning, being the 24th began to play, some pieces of Cannon at the same time firing from two other Places. About one in the Afternoon the *Spaniards* and *Italians* gave a Disorderly Assault, each Nation trying for the Honour of the Day, maintain'd it deparately three Hours, when the Emperor observing that many Brave Men were lost, sent a battalion of *Flemings* to relieve and bring them off, but they seeing this supply gave a fresh Charge, with such fury, that they made their way into the Town, where they put all Souldiers and Inhabitants to the Sword, without Distinction, Ravishing the Women, and setting fire to the Houses. Two Days after the Emperor order'd such of the Inhabitants as were left to return to the Town in all safety, gave Directions for fortifying the Place, and left a Garrison of 1000 *Flemings* in it. Several Places sent to submit themselves to his Imperial Majesty, who Marching on the 27th to *Juliers* the Capital of the Country had it Surrender'd to him without firing a Shot, as was *Ruremond* in *Guelderland*, only compounding for its *Franchises*. *Venlo* a Strong Town, made a vigorous opposition, but whilst the Army lay before it, the Duke of *Cleves* better advi'd, came into the Camp, and having with difficulty obtain'd admittance to the Emperor's Presence, fell upon his Knees. *Henry* Duke of *Brumswick* and the Embassador of *Cologn* were present, and interceded for him, after which his Imperial Majesty said he pardon'd him, and rising touch'd his Hand with a pleasing Countenance. then had some Discourse with him, and all signs of Displeasure ceas'd for the future. The Substance of the Principal Articles on which the Duke Surrender'd his Dominions, and they were restor'd to him by the Emperor, was as follows. That the Duke shall preserve the Catholick Faith, within his Dominions. That he shall be faithful to the Emperor, King of the *Romans*, and Empire and Renounce all Leagues with *France*, or other Princes, and make none for the future. That he will deliver up to his Imperial Majesty the Dukedom of *Gulders*, and Earldom

Earldome of *Zuifen*, the Castle of *Nemberg*, and some other places mention'd. That a new Treaty of Alliance be concluded. The Emperor to pardon all Offences, to restore the Dukedome of *Guelders* to be held as a fief of the Empire, except some places to be with-held till the Duke shall give good assurances of his fidelity. To pardon all the Dukes Subjects. That *Joanna*, Daughter to the Duke of *Vendosme*, be sent back into *France*, and that *Martin Van Kossen* be pardon'd and taken into the Emperor's Service. The rest is much in length, but not material.

French
take Lux-
burg.

11. The Joy of this great success was not lasting, for before the Emperor remov'd from *Venlo*, he receiv'd the News, that *Barbarussa* had taken *Nice*, and *Soliman* Seven Churches, and *Gran* in *Hungary*, and was gone to lay Siege to *Alba Regalis* From *Flanders* Advise was brought, that the King of *France* had broke into the Country of *Artois* with a numerous Army, and taken *Landresi*. Whilst his Imperial Majesty was employ'd in the War of *Cleves*, the Duke of *Orleans* enter'd the Dutchy of *Luxembourg*, and sat down before the City of that Name, and had it Surrender'd to him without any opposition. The King himself came thither, and having spent some Days in rejoycing, and given orders for fortifying the Place, Marched out, took *Thionville* in his way, which made him Master of all the Dutchy, and so return'd to *France*, hearing the Emperor was coming with his Victorious Army. The Forces of Queen *Mary* the Governess had laid Siege to *Landresi*, and the Emperor was Marching thither to reduce that place, but by the way he fell ill of the Gout, which laid him up for some Days. In the mean time *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, the Imperial General joyn'd the other Forces before the Town. The King of *France* return'd with 40000 Men to relieve the place, and drew so near the *Imperialists*, that there pass'd a Bloody Skirmish between them, but in the heat of this Action he put a fresh Garison, and great store of Ammunition and Provisions into the Town, which being the Principal Design he came for, he drew off again without coming

coming to a Battle, and encamp'd within a League of his Enemies, where he continu'd two Days expecting, as the *French* say, the Emperor should offer him Battle. The Emperor came to his Army on the first of *November*, and the same Day the King march'd away towards *France*, the Imperial Army following, and they incamp'd within a Mile of one another. On the third His Imperial Majesty drew his Army into *Battalia*, and continu'd so four Hours expecting the *French*, who, after all their King's boasting, that he came to drive the Emperor out of the Country, lay close in their Trenches without offering to stir. The next Day they continu'd in the same place, but that Night stole away with all the secrecy imaginable, marching very disorderly, dropping many of the Sick, and several Carriages loaded with Tents and other heavy Lumber. The *Imperialists* persu'd as soon as they had notice of it, but the Van running on in great disorder, the *Dauphin*, who lay conceal'd in a Wood, fell on them with such fury, that many were kill'd, and the rest fled to the main Body. The Emperor perceiving the Season of the Year was too far advanc'd to carry on the Siege of *Landrese*, and that his Enemy had escap'd him, march'd away to *Cambray*, where he was inform'd there were some Practices for betraying the City to the *French*, for which reason he put a good Garrison into it, and rais'd a strong Citadel to curb the Inhabitants, and then put his Army into Winter Quarters.

12. We said before how the *French* Embassador solicited *Solyman* to send *Barbarussa*, with his Fleet to their Assistance. Their pressing Instances overcoming all Difficulties, that Pirate Sail'd from *Constantinople* about the latter end of *April*, this Year 1543. At *Modon* he gather'd an Hundred and ten Gallies, forty Galliois, and other small Vessels of Pirates, and four great Ships, with which he came to an Anker near *Ripolis* to Water. The Inhabitants had left the City desolate, but about sixty *Spanish* Soldiers that stay'd in a strong place, killing three *Turks*, *Barbarussa* landed some Cannon, batter'd

ter'd the place, had it surrender'd, and carry'd away all those Men. He sail'd along the Coast of *Italy* without doing any harm, and came to *Marseilles* on the twenty fifth of *July*, where he was nobly Entertain'd by the General of the *French Gallies*. Thence he set Sail with the *French Fleet*, consisting of twenty two Gallies and eighteen Ships, with seven Thousand Land Men in them for *Nice*. They Landed at *Villafranca*, which they found abandon'd, and presently laid Siege to *Nice*, where they met with little Opposition, the City being soon surrender'd upon Articles; but the Castle made such a vigorous Defence, that the *Turks* and *French* were forc'd to desist. The Infidels at their going off plunder'd the City, carrying away all the Inhabitants into Captivity. *Barbarussa* sent *Solyman* three Ships and a Galliot, carrying three Hundred Boys, Girls and Nuns; but it pleas'd God they were rescu'd by the Pope's Gallies, and those of *Spain* and *Malta*. As soon as *Barbarussa* was gone, the Duke of *Savoy* and *Marquels del Gasto* came to *Villafranca* with *Andrew Doria's* Gallies, and those of *Genoa* four of which were cast away upon the Rocks by a sudden Whirl-wind. *Barbarussa* with his Fleet went to Winter at *Toulon*, where he and his Men were well entertain'd by the *French*, and committed many Barbarities, which were tolerat'd by Christians, on Account of the Assistance they gave against their Enemies.

C H A P: XXVI.

*The Marriage of Prince Philip of Spain ;
the Emperor holds the Diet at Spire :
Actions of the Imperialists and French
in Italy : The Emperor invades France :
Peace concluded : The End of Barbaruf-
fa.*

i. **P** R I N C E *Philip of Spain*, only Son to his Imperial Majesty, being now upward of sixteen Years of Age, was, on the 15th of *November*, this Year 1543, solemnly Marry'd at *Salamanca*, to *Mary* Princess of *Portugal*, Daughter to King *John III.* and *Catharine* the Emperor's Sister. This same Year certain *Portugueses* carry'd a little sort of Pigmy in a Cage about *Spain* to be seen, that was but three quarters of a Yard high. The great Rains, which began in *September*, were so continual, that they never fail'd a whole Week from that time till *August* following; so that they did very much harm, particularly in *Andaluzia*. The Rivers overflow'd, the Roads were impassable for Water, abundance of Corn was destroy'd, and many Houses overturn'd : The Floods were greatest three Days after the Increase and Decrease of the Moon.

At the beginning of the Year 1544, the Emperor went away out of the Low-Countries for *Germany*, having before sent D. *Ferdinand Gonzaga*, his Embassador, to *Henry VIII.* King of *England*, to concert the Methods of carrying on the War against *France*. D. *Ferdinand* adjust'd all Matters with

that
the Emperor King of England & Denmark August in a war
against France

that King as the Emperor desir'd, and return'd loaded with Honours and rich Presents. The King of *Denmark* was also brought into this League, which was a great Benefit to the Low-Countries, because of his nearness to them, and a great Loss to *France*. It was agreed with the King of *England*, that he should invade *France* with an Army of his own; the Emperor to do the same, and each of them to act separately, the more to distract the Enemy and make their particular Advantage of what they could gain upon him.

Diet at
Spire.

2. Soon after the Emperor came to *Spire*, all the Electors, and many other Princes of the Empire resorted thither. The Diet was open'd on the twentieth of *February*, with the usual solemnity, and very readily agreed at the publick Expence, to furnish his Imperial Majesty with twenty four Thousand Foot, and four Thousand Horse, and to raise Pay for them for six Months, which was to be put into the Hands of his Treasurers, at three Payments to be made on the first of *June*, of *August*, and of *October*. Next they sent their Deputies to require the Cantons of *Switzerland*, not to suffer the King of *France* to raise any Men in their Dominions; two of the Cantons promis'd so to do and perform'd it; the others said they would first advise the King of *France* to forsake his Alliance with the *Turks*, and to pay a sum of Money he ow'd them, which if he perform'd, they could not refuse him Men for his own Defence, but not to offend the Emperor. The King of *France*, by his Ministers, endeavour'd all he could to obstruct this Resolution of the Diet, but fail'd of his Design. Matters of Religion were conniv'd at, because the Emperor having his Hands full with the *French* and *Turks*, was not then in a Condition to encounter fresh Enemies. Whilst the Diet was sitting, there pass'd frequent Messages between *Andrew Doria* and *Barbarussa*, and they sent one another considerable Presents, which rais'd a jealousy in the King of *France*, that the Pirate corrupted with Money, might secure his Fleet, and even the Port of *Marseilles*, and therefore he began to meditate how to get rid of him.

At

At the same time he demanded of the *Genoefes*, that they would lend him 600000 Ducats, admit of an Embassador of his to reside among them, and allow his Gallies the liberty of their Ports. They answer'd, they had no Money to lend, could admit of no *French* Embassador, being under the Emperor's protection, and for his Gallies they might freely come into their Ports, but they could not secure them against those of *Andrew Doria*, that were in the Emperor's Service.

3. When the King of *France* retir'd from *Landrest*, as was said in the last Chapter, perceiving the Emperor had dismiss'd his Army, he sent the greatest part of his Forces into *Piemont*, to relieve *Turin*, which the Marquess *del Gasto* having taken all places about it, was then in Distress. The Marquess at that time was not in a Condition to oppose those Troops, he being not above 10000 strong, and most of them in Garrison, at *Carignan*, *Quier* and other places. This oblig'd him to acquaint the Emperor with the posture of Affairs in those parts, and his Imperial Majesty order'd him a Recruit of 4000 *Germans* rais'd in the County of *Tirol*, the Duke of *Florence* sent him three Thousand Men, the Cardinal of *Trent* the like number, and 500 *Spaniards* were rais'd at *Rome*. Whilst these Forces were gathering, the *French* laid Siege to *Carignan* and *Quier*, but were repuls'd with Loss and Dishonour. The Marquess being joyn'd by the Forces above mention'd, and his Army consisting of 1500 *Spainards*, 11000 *Italians*, 7000 *Germans*, and 1000 Light Horse, he resolv'd to relieve *Carignan*, where Provisions began to grow scarce, tho' the Garrison made a brave defence. The *French* knowing his design advanc'd to meet him from *Carmagnola*, to a place call'd *Somarriba*, where the Marquess was to Encamp, concealing part of their Men in a Wood, and leaving the rest in view to draw him on. He soon discover'd the ambush, and tho' some Skirmishes pass'd, would not come to a Battel that Night. In the Morning seeing there was no getting by without Fighting, he drew up betimes, and the *French* were not behind-hand with him. To the 1500 *Spainards* he joyn'd as many old

Defeat
of the Mar-
ques del
Gasto in
Piemont.

Germans

German Souldiers, making up a Battalion of 3000 and gave them the Van. They were follow'd by 6000 *Italians*, in one Body, and 6000 new rais'd *Germans* in another, and other 5000 *Italians* brought up the rear. The Horse being 1000, were divided into three Squadrons, one of 150 in the Rear of the first *Italians*, the others more Advanc'd. The *French* drew up in the same manner, to the Van they oppos'd 6000 *Italians*, 7000 *Swiss* and *Gascons*, were set against the *Germans*, and the *French* against the *Italians*. Their Horse being about 3000, were drawn up between the Van and main Body. The Signal being given, the *Spaniards* and *Germans* joyn'd together, as was said before, made the first onset with such bravery, that they broke through the *French* Van, took their Cannon and in the heat pursu'd their Advantage without looking back near two Miles. In the mean while the *French* Horse charg'd the Imperial, who without striking a stroke turn'd their Horses and fled, breaking the Body of new Rais'd *Germans*, who were routed and trod down by them and the *French* Horse following the Chase, the Imperial Horse flying to *Aste*. The *Swiss* and *Gascons*, seeing the *Germans* broken, fell in and made a great Slaughter of them. Here accounts vary, some affirming that the *Marquefs's* Men threw down their Arms and ran away without striking stroke, others say they behav'd themselves bravely but that the Enemies Horse and Foot fell upon them when they were in disorder, and the *Germans* offend'd it should be said they ran away, urge they lost eight Captains, that the *Marquefs* had Posted them ill, and that he run as far as *Aste*, before they gave over fighting, and swore they would never fight under him again unless he were afoot as well as they. The *Italians* who were in the Rear, perceiving how matters went, retir'd in good order, with their Arms Colours and Baggage, without offending or being offend'd. The *Spaniards* and *Germans*, that had the Van, and thought themselves Victorious, perceiving the Route stood together, and Fought till they were beset by the Enemies, and then yielded themselves Prisoners, to the number of

six Hundred *Spaniards*, the rest, who by order of the Marquess had not gone so far, escap'd. These *Spaniards* the King of *France* Treated most generously, and sent them away into *Spain*. Of the *Germans* some took to serve the *French*, the rest were dismiss'd, Swearing not to serve the Emperor in four Months. On the Emperor's side eight thousand Men were kill'd. On the *French* four Thousand. The D'Duke *Enguien* Commanded the *French*. The Marquess *del Gasto* never stopp'd till he came to *Aste*. Some would have it, that he Fought and was Wounded in the Knee, but others said he got that Hurt as he Fled, running against another. At *Aste* he made a Stand, and gather'd about seven Thousand Men, the rest that Escap'd being dispers'd. After the rout of *Cerisoles*, the Siege of *Caringan* was carry'd on, without any interruption, and tho' the Garrison made a vigorous Defence, they were forc'd to Surrender on the 22th of *June* following, upon terms not at all Honourable. The Marquess being reinforc'd with 5000 Men brought him by *Johan de Vega*, sent the Prince of *Salerno* with eight Hundred Horse; and seven Thousand Foot, to fall upon *Peter Strozzi*, who was Marching with about eight Thousand *Italians* to joyn the *French* Army. The Prince overtook him near *Sarrazval*, eight Leagues from *Genoa*, Routed him with the Slaughter of three Thousand of his Men, and took most of the rest. This success made some amends for the last Defeat and restor'd the Emperor's Affairs in *Italy*; besides the *French* were forc'd to draw away their Troops out of *Italy*, to oppose the Emperor on the *Rhine*; and so lost all the Advantages they might have hop'd to make of their Victory.

4. *D. Alvaro de Sandi*, a *Spanish* Collonel, with two Thousand five Hundi'd Men had Winter'd near *Luxemburg*, keeping it in a manner block'd up; that no Provisions could get into the Place. The *French* gather'd about 10000 Men to Relieve it, but mis'd of their Aim, *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* the Emperor's General coming to reinforce the Blockade, and in a small time making up 20000 Men. The *French* having Intelligence of it, desisted from

Luxemburg taken by the Imperialists.

their enterprize, and he to loose no time fate down before the Place, where the Garrison wanting Provisions, Capitulated to Surrender on the sixth of *June* following, if not reliev'd, which was done accordingly. Thence *D. Ferdinand* March'd into *Champagne*, where after two Days Siege, he made himself Master of the Town and Castle of *Comericy* deliver'd to him upon Discretion. On the sixteenth of *June*, his Imperial Majesty came to *Metz* in *Lorraine*, where he made some short Stay, till his Army increas'd to 50000 Men (besides 4000 Pioniers) 15000 *Spaniards*, 7000 Horse, and all the rest *Germans* or *Gulderlanders*. There were 6000 Carts of Ammunition, Bridges, Mills, Ovens, and all other Necessaries. Fifteen Thousand Men more, rais'd by the King of *Denmark*, for the Service of *France*, came to *Liege* and joyn'd the Emperor, so that now his Army was above 60000 strong. There was great want of Provisions, in the Emperor's Camp, what they had being brought from far, and the *French* endeavouring by all possible means to cut off their supplies, not only obstructing their Convoys, but Burning and Destroying all the Country about, that they might make no Advantage of it. The Emperor designing to March towards *Paris*, fate down with his Army before *Ligny*, which after some resistance he took by Assault, tho' the Garrison was then Treating in order to Surrender. As soon as *Ligni* was taken, the Horse went and invested *S. Disier*, which made a vigorous Resistance, inso much that a Breach being made, and the Assaults given, the *Imperialists* were repuls'd, with the loss of above seven Hundred Men. However, the Emperor pressing the Siege, and there being no hopes of Relief, the Garrison Capulated, and the place was deliver'd upon Honourable terms. The King of *France* had sent *Monsieur de Brisac*, with some Forces to get into the Place, but the Emperor hearing he came as far as *Vitri*, which was within twelve Miles of *S. Disier*, sent Duke *Maurice* to surprize him, with a party of Horse, which he did effectually, without the loss of a Man, Routing the *French*, and putting to the Sword three Hundred of them

The Emperor Marches towards Paris.

them that took into a Church, and refus'd to Surrender. Some Germans left in Garrison at *Viri* return'd to the Imperial Camp, after Plundering and Burning the Place. *S. Disier* was Surrender'd about the middle of *August*, after a Siege of seven Weeks. Having secur'd the Town with a good Garrison, the Army advanc'd on the 25th of *August* towards *Paris*, hoping the King of *England* would do the same on the other side, till their forces were join'd, but that King did not design to move forward, till he had made himself Master of *Bologn*, and *Montrenille*. The King of *France*, with all the Force he could make, Encamp'd in sight of the Imperial Army, the River *Marne* parting them, and thus they March'd on both sides, keeping that River between them, because the *French* were inferior to the *Imperialists*, and would not put all upon the hazard of a Battle, when the Enemies were in the heart of their Country. This mov'd the King to make some overtures for a Peace, which the Emperor was not averse to, and therefore Admiral *Annebault* and the Chancellor of *France*, met six Leagues from *Chalons*, with *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, and *Monsieur Grandvelle*, the Emperors Commissioners, to Treat, and having been six Hours together parted without coming to any Resolution. Upon this the Emperor Advanc'd beyond *Chalons*; and that same Day *F. Gabrill de Guzman* a Dominican, came to intreat his Imperial Majesty to halt and give Ear to an Accomodation. Accordingly the Commissioners on both sides met the Day following, yet nothing was concluded, no more than before. Hopes of Peace ceasing, the Emperor held on his way, designing to pass the River, that parted him from his Enemy, and *William of Fustemberg*, who was acquainted with the Country, going to try a Ford for the Army to March over, was taken by the *French*, who made him pay 30000 Ducats for his Ransom. In *Paris* the consternation was great, the Imperial Army being but seventeen short Leagues from that City, the Inhabitants began to Ship away, and the King sent 8000 Foot, and 600 Horse to fortify and secure the place. It was now resolv'd

Tikes's
Dither and
other
places.

The HISTORY of

on the Emperor's side to pass the River, and force the *French* to a Battle; but God was pleas'd to prevent the great mischief that must have ensu'd; for the King who found himself in no Condition to withstand so powerful an Enemy, at last submitted himself to those Articles he had before rejected, and sign'd them on the 17th of *September*. On the nineteenth of the same Month this Year 1544, the Peace was proclaim'd at *Crespì*, the Articles were as follows.

Articles of Peace. 1. That there be a perpetual Peace between the Empeior *Charles V.* Francis King of *France*, and all others that desire to be comprehended in it.

2. That the Subjects of both Crowns pay the same Duties they did before the War.

3. That all that have been taken since the Truce at *Nice* be restor'd.

4. That the Duke of *Arescot's* pretentions to the Earldom of *Liens* remain in the State they were.

5. That the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Mantua*, and *Lorraine*, and the Marquess of *Monteferrat* be restor'd to all Places taken from them.

6. That the King and Emperor joyn their Forces against the *Turk*.

7. That the King renounce the pretentions to *Naples*, *Sicily*, *Milan*, and all Homage for the Low-Countries,

8. That the Emperor renounce all Right and Title to any Lands in the King's Possession, except *Burgundy* and its dependencies.

9. That Subjects on both sides, who have serv'd against their Prince, be restor'd.

10. That the Emperor give *Mary* his Eldest Daughter, or the second Daughter of *Ferdinand*, King of the *Romans*, to the Duke of *Orleans*, and give the first in Dowry, the Low-Countries and Dukedom of *Burgundy*; but if it be the second, then the Dukedom of *Milan*.

11. That the King settle on his Son the Dukedom of *Orleans*, that of *Bourbon*, *Chastelrauli*, and Earldome of *Angouleme*, and if these do not yield one Hundred Thousand Livres a Year, he add to the rest, the Dukedome of *Alencon*.

12. That

12. That the King concern himself no otherwise with the pretensions of *Henry d' Albret*, King of *Navarre*, than as a Mediator.

This is the substance of the Treaty, the Articles being too many and too tedious to be inserted at full length, nor is there in them any more very material.

5. Whilst the Peace was concluding, *Henry VIII.* King of *England*, lay with his Army before *Bologne*, whether the Emperor sent to give him an account of what was doing; he answer'd, His Imperial Majesty might do for himself as he pleas'd, but for his part he intended to carry on the War. His Batteries so terrify'd *Vernain*, the Governor of the Town, that he basely surrender'd the Place without standing an Assault, for which he afterwards lost his Head upon a Scaffold at *Paris*. The *Marschal de Biez*, who had thrown himself into *Montrueil*, made a better Defence, and the Duke of *Norfolk*, who Besieg'd him, fearing the *French* Army might obstruct his rejoyning King *Henry* before *Boulogne*, drew off and return'd to the main Army. King *Henry* having well provided *Bealogn*, return'd from thence to *Calais*, and so into *England*. The Emperor having put an end to the War, spent the Winter at *Brussels*, where he was visited by his Sister, *Ellenor*, Queen of *France*, his new Son-in-Law, *Charles*, Duke of *Orleans*, and two Sons of King *Ferdinand*. Here the Emperor decided a Controversie betwixt two great Ladies, which were *Madam de Berg*, and *Madam de Brederode*, who quarrelling in the Church for Precedence, had brought the Cause to be try'd before the Council of State, where considering the great Quality of both Parties, they were declar'd equal, but they not so satisfy'd appeal'd to the Emperor's Judgment, who, to humble their Pride, gave Sentence in these words, *Que la plus selle aille devant*; let the maddest go first. All the World admir'd that the Emperor had granted such advantagious Terms to *France* at a time when he had so much advantage over his

English
take Bou-
logne.

Enemy,

Enemy, but this was a demonstration of his Generosity, and the sincerity of his Intentions. Many believ'd he would not perform that part of the Treaty, by which he was oblig'd to give either the Low Countries, or the State of *Milan* to the Duke of *Orleans* in Dowry with his Wife; but to deliver him from this Necessity, it pleas'd God within the space of eight Months, allow'd before the Consummation of the Marriage, to take away the Duke by means of a Pestilential Feaver, to the great Grief of his Father, and of all that knew him.

D. of Orleans Dies.

Actions of Barbarussa and his Death.

6. We left *Barbarussa* with his Fleet on the way to *Constantinople*, pillaging, burning and wasting the Christian Coast. At the beginning of this Work we gave an account of this Pirate's base Origin, and will now of the mischief he did, and of his miserable Death. From *Toulon* he sail'd to *Valdo*, where the *Genosfes* presented him with abundance of Fruit and Silks, on which account he promis'd to do no harm in their Dominions, Having gather'd all his Fleet, whereof he had before sent part to find out *John Doria*, who had taken two Galliot's of Pirates; he sent to the Lord of *Plombin*, earnestly intreating that he would deliver to him a Son of his Friend *Sinan* the *Jew*, who was then a Slave in the Island, that he might send him down the Red Sea to his Father, who was then in *India*, serving against the *Portugueses*, and in case of refusal, he threatn'd to destroy the Island. The Lord answer'd, That the young Man being become a Christian, he could not deliver him, but for his sake would give him his Liberty and make him a Rich Man. *Barbarussa* in a Rage order'd the Island to be plunder'd, and the Lord of it purchas'd Peace at the price of that Slave, to whom *Barbarussa* gave the Command of seven Gallies, treating him as if he had been his own Son. From *Elva* the Fleet sail'd to *Telamone*, which they took and plunder'd, the *Turks* running two Leagues up the Country, and returning with abundance of Cattle and Captives. Thence they remov'd to *Porto Hercoles*, which, tho' surrender'd they destroy'd, setting Fire to the Houses. The People of *Siena* sent

D. John

D: *John de Luna* with the *Spaniards* that were in *Garrifon*, and some of their own Troops that were in that place; but they finding it lost, threw themselves into *Orbisello*, where *Barbarussa* made Floats to carry his Cannon near the place, which stands in the midst of a Lake and is strong. The *Spaniards* and *Sienseses* were for abandoning of it, when *Stephen Colonna* came with twelve Companies of Foot, and *Vuelli* with two of Horse, sent by *Cosmo de Medicis*, Duke of *Florence*. These encouraging one another, fell upon the *Turks* that were Landed, and beat them, and others still coming a-Shore in their Boats, back to the Gallies. *Barbarussa* Sail'd away to *Gillo*, a Neighbouring Island, producing good Wine, where he took away all the Inhabitants: From *Gillo* he went to *Prochita* and *Ischia*, where he arriv'd upon *Midsummer* Eve, this Year 1544. He plunder'd both Islands, but not the Town of *Ischia*, because it was strong and well proviced. Thence he carry'd away eight Hundred, some say above 1000 Souls. Then he attempted *Puzzuolo*, but the Vice-Roy of *Naples* coming to relieve it with five Thousand Horse and Foot, he put off thinking to possess himself of *Salerno*: The Wind blowing hard at North West, put him by; yet he did some harm at *Policastro*, and other places. At *Lipari* he landed forty pieces of Cannon, and batter'd the City twelve Days without intermission; the Towns-men fearing Death, surrender'd, capitulating only for their Lives, and therefore were carry'd away Captives to the number of eight Thousand. Having pass'd the *Far* of *Mecina*, he took many Souls along the Coast of *Calabria*. In short, he took so great a Booty of Men and Cattle, that the Gallies could scarce hold it, many Dying with the Stench, and other inconveniencies. At length he arriv'd at *Constantinople* in triumphant manner, where he presented the Besses, Courtiers, and Court Ladies with Boys, and Girls, and other things. Being here in great Esteem, and preparing another Fleet against Christendom, he fell ill of the Flux, which hel'd him a long while, till a Fever ceizing him, he Dy'd at above eighty Years of Age. His Fortune

Fortune was wonderful, which rais'd him from the base Degree of a Potter's Son, to be King of *Argier*, and *Tunez*, and Admiral to the great *Turk*. As to his Person, his Hair was Red, whence he had his Name; well Proportion'd, but that he grew Fat; his Eye-brows long, and he grew short Sight-ed: He Lisp'd in his Speech; spoke many Languages; was very Cruel, Covetous and Luffful, Face-tious, Proud, and free of his Tongue, especially when Anger'd; brave in Action, politick in his Designs, enur'd to Hardships, and never daunted: He Dy'd very Rich at *Pera*, and, with the Great *Turk's* leave, left his Son *Hassan Barbarussa*, then at *Argier*, his Heir.

7. D. *Alvaro Bacan*, upon some disgust, had left the Command of the Gallies, and was retir'd to his own home; but the Emperor knowing what an able Commander he was, order'd him to his Post of General of the Gallies of *Castile*, Commanding him to the Coast of *Biscay* and *Guipuscoa*, to gather there what Ships and Men he could, and with them to sail to *Laredo*, that part of the Fleet might carry D. *Peter de Guzman*, and two Thousand *Spaniards* over into *Flanders*, and the rest under the Command of D. *Alvaro* stay to guard the Coast. D. *Alvaro* gather'd about forty Ships, fifteen whereof Sail'd with the Forces for *Flanders*; the rest were in a readiness, but had only one Thousand Soldiers Aboard. D. *Sancho de Leyva*, who Commanded at *Esenterabia* sent D. *Alvaro* an Account, that from the Town they had discover'd a Fleet of above thirty Sail of *French*, who had taken two Ships of *Biscay* Laden with Wool-Packs for *Flanders*. D. *Alvaro* being weak got five Hundred Men of D. *Sancho*; and hearing that the *French* had pillag'd the Coast of *Galicia* Sail'd with all speed to find out the Enemy, on the eighteenth of *July*. The *French* Fleet at this time lay before the Town of *Muros*, compounding not to plunder the place for a sum of Money; there D. *Alvaro*, with twenty four Ships, fell upon them, he himself attack'd the *French* Admiral, and sunk her, which done, he boarded and took another that came to second her Admiral: The Fight lasted

lasted two Hours, and ended in the overthrow of the *French*, who lost above three Thousand Men, and *D. Alvaro* not above three Hundred. Most of the Enemies Ships were taken and carry'd into the Port of *Corunna*. The Emperor's continual Wars reducing him to great streights for Money, he had put it to his Council to find out ways and means of raising Supplies, and they, to save themselves, found out no better Expedient than to take from the Church its Temporal Dominion over towns and Lands, whereof they enjoy'd many of ancient Times, being the Grants and Gifts of former Kings. In these Lands the Church had the supream Power in all Points administering Justice, and the People being absolute Vassals. The Pope had long before granted his Imperial Majesty leave to take these Royalties into his Hands, which he had twice refus'd, and tho' his Necessities were great, the Church-men having pleaded their Cause before him, he now again order'd, that nothing should be done to their Prejudice, nor was there whilst he Liv'd. His Son *Philip II.* took these Vassals from the Church, but the Money he rais'd by that means never prosper'd with him, and he being sensible of it, order'd in his Will that they should be restor'd, which was never done.

C H A P. XXVII.

Death of the Princess, Wife to Prince Philip of Spain: The Diet at Wormes; the Rise, Progress, and End of the Rebellion rais'd in Peru by Pizarro, and suppress'd by the Licentiate Gasca.

1. **T**HIS Year 1545, was the quietest *Charles V.* enjoy'd during the whole Course of his Reign; for King *Francis*, tir'd with continual Wars and Age, coming upon him, observ'd the Peace lately concluded; the King of *England* satisfy'd with the taking of *Bologn*, return'd into his own Kingdom: The *Turk* having his Hands full in *Asia*, did not look towards *Europe*; and *Barbarussa* being Dead, the Seas he us'd to infect were clear. The Emperor took a Progress with his Sister Queen *Mary* to visit the Towns of the Low-Countries: The Gout and other things began to afflict him, but above all the Care for the Church, whose defence he had undertaken, and which he saw attack'd by the *Lutherans* in *Germany*. The reducing of those People, and restoring matters of Faith to that Unity, there was before *Luther's* Innovation, took up all his Thoughts, and he sent Monsieur de *Andelot* from *Wormes*, on the fourth of *July* this Year, with large Instructions, to confer with the Pope, and conclude upon the means of putting an end to those Disorders. His Imperial Majesty was for using all possible fair means to reduce those People, and therefore thought nothing so proper or effectual as a general Council; whether if they would not come and sub-

mic

1545.
Peace.

The Em-
peror de-
signs to re-
duce the
Lutherans.

mit themselves to the Decision of the whole Church, assembl'd in that Body, he resolv'd to use force of Arms, and cut off that Sore which he could not heal. The *Lutherans*, who were no strangers to the Emperor's Designs, had provided against this Storm, confederating together at *Smalcalde* ten Years before this we now write of: Of these we shall have enough to say in the two following Years. On the twelfth of *July*, this Year, Dy'd *Mary* Princess of *Spain*, Wife to Prince *Philip*, in Child-Bed, having been deliver'd on the eighth of the unfortunate Prince *Charles*, who afterwards came to an untimely End, being put to Death by his own Father's Command. On the eighth of *September* Dy'd *Charles* Duke of *Orleans* of a Pestilential Feaver, as was mention'd before. The Diet was appointed to meet at *Wormes*, and the Emperor being lay'd up with the Gout, his Brother *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans*, presided at it, as Vicar of the Empire. Nothing was concluded there, for they would not hear of giving any Supplies against the *Turk*, and all the *Lutherans* oppos'd the Council of *Trent*. The Diet broke up, and another was appointed to meet at *Ratisbon*, the Emperor went in Person, the Gout having left him.

2. I will now give a brief Account once for all of the Rebellion and Troubles in *Peru*, which began in the Year 1544, and were not absolutely over till 1549; and tho' they contain so many Years, they shall be begun and ended in this Place, not to interrupt the Affairs of *Germany* with those so remote, and because intermixing these with the Transactions in *Europe*, would more perplex both the one and the other. I before mention'd the Ordinances made in *Spain*, to provide against the ill Usage of the *Indians*, which were Publish'd at *Madrid* in 1542, and Copies of them sent to all Parts of the *West Indies*, which caus'd much discontent among the Conquerors and Proprietors, but more particularly in the Province of *Peru*, where they were more sensible of the ill Consequences of them, because they ruin'd those People, and left them Beggars, who openly resent'd it, and did not spare to mutter.

Many

Many of them repair'd to *Cuzco*, to present their Petitions and make their Complaints to *Vaca de Castro*, who then govern'd there, and by his Advice they sent to Petition His Majesty to recal that Ordinance. Before their Agents came to *Spain*, *Blasco Nunnez Vela*, a Gentleman of *Avila*, and then *Veedor*, or Inspector General of the Guards of *Castile*, was appointed Vice-Roy, and Captain General of *Peru*, to see the Ordinance obey'd, and with him were four Oydores, or Judges for the Tribunal, to be erected in that Kingdom, who all Sail'd from the Port of *S. Lucar de Barrameda*, on the first of *November* 1543. The Vice-Roy arriv'd before the Judges, and put the Ordinances in Execution; the first of which was that the *Indians*, who were from their Native Countries, should return home; which, as soon as he Landed at *Tumbez*, a Port in *Peru*, he began to put in practice. The People Petition'd that he would expect the coming of the Oydores, that, when they were together at *Lima*, they might be better inform'd and acquaint His Majesty with their Reasons, but he would not condescend; so that his first coming was displeasing to all Men, and even the Oydores his Companions were dissatisfy'd with him; and therefore his Government had an ill Issue. He requir'd *Vaca de Castro*, in virtue of his new Commission, to desist from having any hand in the Government. The *Spaniards* perceiving how rigid the new Vice-Roy was in his way of proceeding, perswaded *Vaca de Castro* not to own him, or at least, if he would not appear in that Business, to lie still; and they would manage it, so that all tended to Confusion already. *Vaca de Castro* labour'd to pacifie them, but could not, and the Vice Roy gave him no thanks for his pains, but Arrested him upon suspicion that he had a hand in those Tumults.

Pizarro Abundance of the Principal Men assembled at *Cuzco*, and began to provide Arms, and bring thither the *Heads the Rebels* Cannon from *Guamanga*. *Gonzalo Pizarro*, came thither and was appointed Solicitor General for the Country. He was Brother to the Marquess *Francis Pizarro*, and *Ferdinand Pizarro*, the Principal, Discoverers, and

and Conquerers of the Country. They all intreated *Pizarro* to be their head in Petitioning for the repeal of the Ordinances, which he easily granted, being a bold Man, and having long desir'd to Govern *Peru*. He gather'd 150000 pieces of eight, brought about 30 Men with him, and was receiv'd at *Cuzco* with great Joy. Every Day Men flock'd in to him, and many came from *Lima*, Railing at the Viceroy, accusing him of more than was true, to incense others. Here they met in Council, and some were for admitting the Viceroy, and Petitioning, others said if they admitted him, and he took away their *Indians*, it would be long enough before they got them again. It was resolv'd that *Pizarro* should go as their Solicitor General to *Lima*, and present a Petition against the Ordinances in the Council, and that he should be attended with Armed Men, to defend him against the Viceroy who was raising Forces, and threaten'd to punish such as oppos'd him. Other Reasons were alleg'd for his going with an Arm'd Force, and Men Learned in the Law, justify'd that Proceeding, so that they rais'd Men by beat of Drum, and a great many came in. As the Viceroy was preparing, to oppose this Rebellion, the *Oydores* came, and the Seal was receiv'd with great solemnity in *Lima*, in the Year 1544. The Council or Supream Tribunal was Erected, but the Viceroy and *Oydores* agreed no better, than if they had been mortal Enemies, or had not serv'd the same King, but in these Particulars we must be brief, and Write only as much as may be proper for this History. The Viceroy and *Oydores* understanding the War-like preparations, *Pizarro* and others, made at *Cuzco*, gave out Commissions to raise Men for the King's Service, and accordingly got together six Hundred Fighting Men, besides the Inhabitants of *Lima*. Of the aforesaid number one Hundred were Horse, two Hundred Musketers, and the rest Pike-men. The Viceroy order'd abundance of Muskets to be new made, and Apprehended *Vaca de Castro* and others, without specifying their Offence. *Pizarro* rais'd all the Men he cou'd, and took the Field with about twenty pieces of Cannon, and a sufficient quantity of Ammunition

on

on. About twenty five Men of note left him, perceiving his designs were Disloyal, and in obedience to the Viceroy's Proclamation, went away to *Lima* through By-ways. *Pizarro* was concern'd at their going away, and it had cost them their Lives could he have caught them. Others and among them *Peter de Puellas* Lieutenant of *Guanuco*, and *Ferome de Villegas* with forty Horse, went over to *Pizarro*. There were more of the same mind, interest, and the Viceroy's Severity prevailing upon them. *Pizarro* put to Death some of his Captains, discovering they design'd to go over to the King's Service. He made *Francis de Caravajal*, an old Experienc'd Souldier, who had been at the Battel of *Ravenna*, but a bad Christian, Marshal of the Field. The Vice-roy in his own House stabb'd the Factor *Illan Xuarez de Caravajal* upon Suspition that his nephews were gone over to the Rebels. This Murder Committed on the thirteenth of *September 1545*, was much disapprov'd of at *Lima* and the *Oydores* drew up a process against the Vice-roy upon it. He, who had thought to expect the coming of *Pizarro* at *Lima*, finding the People all against him, resolv'd to retire eighty Leagues to *Truxillo*, carrying away all the People from *Lima*, and other low Towns, and obliging the *Indians* to retire into the Mountains. The *Oydores* oppos'd the Vice-roy, and taking the Seal from the Chancellor, gave it to the Licentiate *Cepeda*, as Eldest *Oydor*. They order'd the military Officers, in case the Vice-roy would force them away from thence, to joyn them, it being his Majesties will the Government should be in that City. In short, such was their Disagreement that they took up Arms against one another, and the Vice-roy being weakest fortify'd himself in his House. The *Oydores* took possession of the Market-place, and one Hundred Souldiers that were with the Vice-roy forsook him, and he being left alone deliver'd himself up to the *Oydores*, who order'd he should be immediatly Ship'd off for *Spain*, because if *Gonzalo Pizarro* came and found him, he would certainly Murder him. Having with much difficulty secur'd the Fleet, they thought

to send the Vce-roy in the nature of a Prisoner to Spain and the Licentiate *Alvarez*, one of the *Oydores* go along and Impeach him.

5 The *Oydores* sent *Augustin de Zarate* and *Antony de Ribera* to require *Pizarro* to lay down Arms, since they had sent the Vice-roy to Spain, suspended the Execution of the Ordinances, and done more than had been at first demanded. *Pizarro* bid him tell the *Oydores* they must declare him Governour, or else he would Plunder the City and their Lives would be in danger. Having sent this answer he March'd to the City, which he enter'd without any opposition, all the Souldiers forsaking the *Oydores*, whom he forc'd to declare him Governour of *Pern*, making his entry into *Lima* in great Pomp and state, and Hanging some Men of Note, for their Loyalty. *Blasco Nunez Vela* the Vice-roy had now made his Peace with the Licentiate *Alvarez*, who was to have carry'd him into Spain, Landed at *Tumbez* and hearing what had happen'd at *Lima* gave out Commissions, rais'd Men and made ute of the King's Money where he could find any *Pizarro* sent Captain *Bachica* against him, who took all his Ships, the Vice-roy flying to *Quito* because he had but 150 Men. In the same Ships with *Bachicao*, went the *Oydor Texada* and two others sent by *Pizarro* and the other *Oydores* to give his Majesty an account of what had been done in *Pern*. *Texada* Dy'd by the way, but *Francis Maldonado* and *James Alvarez de Cucto* arriv'd in Spain, whence they went into Germany, where the Emperor then was. Whilst they were on their Voyage, the Rebels committed many insolencies and tho' the Vice-roy with such Loyal Men as follow'd him did all he cou'd to oppose them, yet *Pizarro* was grown so strong and had such good Souldiers, that coming to a Battel, the Vice-roy was defeated and kill'd, and *Pizarro* became so absolute in that Country, that some advis'd him to be Crown'd.

5. The Emperor who, as has been said, was then in Germany, being inform'd of what had happen'd in *Pern*, tho' not of the Defeat and Death of the Vice-Roy, which happen'd later: After some delay, appointed

Pizarro
makes him-
self Gover-
nour.

Gasca
sent to Go-
vern *Pern*.

appointed the Licentiate *Peter de la Gasca*, at that time one of the Council of the Inquisition, and a Person of known Integrity and Experience, to go over into *Peru* with the Title of President of the Royal Council, or Tribunal of that Kingdome; with full power to govern the Country, and pardon all Crimes committed. With him went as Oydores the two Licentiates, *Antony de Zianea* and *Rentaria*, carrying all necessary Instructions in case there was no avoiding a War, tho' this was kept private and nothing spoke of but Pardons and other means to procure Peace. He set Sail in *May 1546*, without any other Attendance but his own Servants. At *Santa Marta* he receiv'd Intelligence; that *Melchior Verdugo* had been routed by *Hinojosa* one of *Pizarro's* Commanders, and expected him at *Carthagena*. He resolv'd to go away without him to *Nombre de Dios*, considering if he took him along, it might offend *Hinojosa's* Men, and be an occasion for them not to receive him. He came to an Anker at *Nombre de Dios*, where *Hinojosa* had left *Ferdinand Mexia de Guzman* with eighteen Hundred Men to secure the Country against *Verdugo*. *Mexia* receiv'd the President very honourably, and told him in private his design was to Serve the King, and he would persuade all his Men there to do the same. The President thank'd him, and they agreed to keep their designs private, and make no alteration for the present. *Hinojosa Pizarro's* General was at first angry with *Mexia* for receiving the President, who soon brought him and several others over to his Party; so that now he durst talk openly, and persuade others to submit to the King. *Hinojosa* would not declare presently, but sent to acquaint *Pizarro* with the Presidents Arrival. Some advis'd not to suffer him to come into *Peru*, others to Murder him privately, others to bring him to *Peru*, where they would better dispose of him at pleasure, and others to secure him with a Guard in some Island, till they had sent Agents to *Spain* to obtain a confirmation of what had been done, and a grant of the Government for *Pizarro*. The Agents they sent were, the Archbishop of *Limá*, the Provincial of

the

Provincial of the *Dominicans*, the Bishop of *Santa Marta* and *Laurence de Aldana*, who disliking *Pizarro's* Proceedings, being come to *Panama*, persuaded *Hinojosa* to declare for the King, as he did, delivering up the Fleet to the President, and all the Soldiers and Officers taking the Oath of Fidelity: They all went aboard to the Number of 300, and with them the Agents that were to have gone to *Spain*, the Viceroy sending to *Mexico*, and other Parts, to demand Succours.

6. *Peter Hernandez Paniagua*, sent by the President with two Letters, one from the Emperor, and one from himself to *Pizarro*, found but bad Entertainment, infomuch that some advited to Murder him. *Pizarro* understanding that the Fleet had submitted to the President, rais'd Men, and took all other Measures to oppose him. Being inform'd that *Laurence de Aldana* was drawing near to the Port with the Fleet, and fearing many would forsake him, he drew all that were able to bear Arms into the Field, and kept Guard himself between them and the Port. He sent *John Fernandez* in a Float to the Ships, to bid *Aldana* send some Person ashore to give an account of what he came for; and *Fernandez* was to remain as a Hostage for the return of the other. Captain *Pena* came and brought a Copy of the King's general Pardon, and of the Directions for the revoking the Ordinances; which *Pizarro* answer'd, by threatening to Hang and Quarter all that came in the Fleet. *Pena* return'd to the Ships, where *Aldana* had persuaded *John Fernandez*, who, as has been said, was there as Hostage for the return of *Pena*, to carry ashore Duplicates of all the King's Concessions and Letters to several Men of Note, hid in his Boots; so that coming ashore, he gave one Copy to *Pizarro*, pretending he had taken it to betray *Aldana*, and by that means had the Opportunity of publishing the others. From this time, several of *Pizarro's* best Men began to leave him; so that finding his Strength decay, and growing jealous of every Body, he march'd away towards *Arequipa*, several deserting from him daily. The City of *Lima* declar'd im-

Pizarro's
Proceedings

diatly for the King, where the King's Pardon and other Orders the President brought, were proclaim'd. Pizarro perceiving his Ruin drew on, call'd *John de Acosta* to him, who lost many of his Men, and could no way prevent it. He went away to *Cusco*, and thence to *Arequipa*, where he join'd Pizarro; who of 1500 Men he had at *Lima*, had now only 300 left; and as he Declin'd, the President grew in Strength.

7. The President arriv'd at *Tumbez* with 500 Men; and as soon as Landed, the People sent from all parts to offer their Service, abundance coming in to him, so that he thought himself Strong enough, without the Assistance of other Provinces; and therefore sent to *New Spain*, *Guatemala*, *Nicaragua*, and *Santo Domingo*, to acquaint them with his Success, and let them know he stood not in need of any Supplies. He appointed *Hinojosa*, as General, to march the Forces to join those at *Caxamalca*, and make one Body, and *Paul de Meneses* to Command the Fleet. He took his way himself along the Plains to *Truxillo*, resolving not to go into *Lima*, till he had concluded this Affair, ordering all that were for the King to join him in the Vale of *Xauxa*, a convenient Place either to stay for, or fight the Rebel, because there was plenty of Provisions, and so he march'd along with above 1000 Men, all glad to be rid of Pizarro, whom they were out of conceit with, seeing he had Hang'd and Beheaded above 500 Men. *James Centeno* was always very Loyal, and escap'd great Dangers from Pizarro, Caravajal, and other Rebels. Now Pizarro was declining, he endeavour'd to win him by Persuasions; but these nothing availing, they came to a Battle on the 19th of *October 1547*. *James Centeno* had above 1000 Men, whereof 200 were Horse, 150 Musqueteers, and the rest Pikemen. Pizarro had 300 good Musqueteers, 80 Horse, and the rest to make up 500, were Pikemen. They Engag'd, and through the Conduct of *Caravajal*, tho' Pizarro was but half the Number, *James Centeno* was Routed, and above 300 of his Men Kill'd. Of Pizarro's, 100 Died, and many were Wounded. The President, tho' much

Centeno,
a Loyalist,
Routed.

much concern'd at the Defeat of *Centeno*, disguis'd his Sentiments, and gave Orders for hastning the Conjunction of his Forces. *Hinojosa* continu'd General, as he was before ; and at the last Muster, they found 700 Musqueteers, 500 Pikemen, and 400 Horse. After that, they increas'd to 1900 fighting Men, and they were so Strong on the 19th of *December* 1547, when they march'd from *Xauxa* towards *Cuzco*, in quest of *Pizarro*. *Peter de Valdivia* arriv'd in the Camp from *Chile* to Serve His Majesty, which much rejoiced all the Forces, he being the only Soldier in those Parts able to cope with *Caravajal*, whom all Men dreaded since his late Victory over *James Centeno*. Being come to *Andaguaylas*, they staid there most part of the Winter, which was very troublesome by reason of the great Rains ; and above 400 fell Sick, of whom great care was taken.

8. With the first of the Spring in 1547, they march'd from *Andaguaylas*, till within 20 Leagues of *Cuzco*, where they staid till a Bridge was made to lay over the River *Apurima*, twelve Leagues from *Cuzco*. The Enemy had broke all the Bridges, that it was thought they could not have got over, without fetching a compass of above 70 Leagues, which obliged them to make a Bridge ; and they pass'd over with much Danger, and loss of some Horses. *D. John de Sandoval* was sent out with a Party of Horse to discover the Enemy, and travelled above three Leagues without meeting one Man of *Pizarro's*. *John Nunex de Prado* came over to the President, and gave an account of the Rebels Camp, and that *Acosta* was marching with 300 Musqueteers to secure the Passes. Upon this, the President order'd 900 Men, well Arm'd, to advance ; and *Acosta* seeing so great a Power, drew back, giving *Pizarro* an account of what he had found. The President with his Forces went up a great Mountain above a League and a half in length, and rested there three Days. *Pizarro* seeing himself hard beset, sent to require the President to grant a Cessation till the Emperor's Will were known, making great Offers to *Hinojosa* and *Alonso*

President
marches a-
gainst Pi-
zarro.

de Alvarado, if they would join him. The President persuaded him to submit, offering good Terms, sending him a Copy of His Majesty's Pardon, as he had done several times before. Pizarro understanding that the President had passed the River, and was gone up the Mountain, came out of *Cusco* with 900 Horse and Foot, whereof 550 were Musqueteers, and six pieces of Cannon, posting himself at *Xaquixaguana*, five Leagues from *Cusco*, in a Plain, upon the Road the President was to take when he came down the Hill, and encamping in a place of such Strength, that there was no Attacking of him but one way, which was up the narrow side of a Hill, which was his Front, having the River and a Morass on the one side of him, the Mountain on the other, and a deep broken Ditch in the Rear. Two or three Days were spent in Skirmishing, till the President coming down, Pizarro drew out in Order of Battle. The President would not willingly have Engaged, hoping very many would come over to him, but could not delay for want of all Necessaries, whereas the Enemy had plenty. The Rebels had thoughts of Attacking the President in the Night, three several ways; but one *Nava* deserting, they concluded he would give Intelligence of their Design. This *Nava* and *John Nunez Prado*, advis'd the President not to Fight, because most of Pizarro's Men would come over to him, many of them being such as had escaped after the Rout of *Centeno*, who serv'd against their will. The President march'd down, and *Hinojosa* chose a place where the Men were shelter'd from the Enemies Cannon. Very many deserted to the President, and one whole Squadron of thirty Musqueteers came over together; after which, the Battalions began to break, some following those that deserted, some flying to *Cusco*, and others to the King's Army. Pizarro observing it, said, *Since all go over to the King, so will I. Acosta*, one of his Commanders, said, *Let us fall on, Sir, and Die like Romans.* Pizarro is said to have answer'd, *It is better for us to die like Christians.* This said, he deliver'd himself up, and after him most of his Officers were taken. *Cara-vajal*

Pizarro
Routed and
Taken.

jal his Major-General, fled, but being Bog'd, his own Men brought him to the President. Pizarro was the next Day Sentenc'd to Die; and accordingly, his Head was cut off, his Body bury'd at *Cusco*, and the Head set up at *Lima*, with this Inscription, *This is the Head of the Traytor Gonzalo Pizarro, who Rebell'd in Peru against His Majesty, and gave Battle against his Royal Standard in the Valley of Xaquixaquama.* His Estate was forfeited to the King, his House at *Cusco* pull'd down, and sow'd with Salt, but he dy'd like a Christian. Caravajal was Drawn and Quarter'd, eight or nine Captains Hang'd, and others Executed as they were taken. This Engagement hapned on *Low Monday*, being the 9th of *April 1548*. The President pardon'd those that had Fought under the Royal Standard, all past Crimes and Offences whatsoever, and divided the Lands and Indians of the Rebels amongst the Loyalists. He settled all the Affairs of that Kingdom with wonderful Prudence, and return'd to *Spain* in *December 1549*, whence he went into *Germany*, to give the Emperor an account of his Successes.

C H A P. XXVIII.

The beginning and progress of the War between the Emperor and Lutherans of Germany, during this Year 1546, which tho' the Emperor began under great disadvantages, ended much to his Honour.

1546.
State of
Germany.

I. GERMANY was now in a deplorable Condition, rent by several Factions arising from the multiplicity of Religions; all hopes of Composing matters in an amicable manner were vanish'd; there remain'd only force of Armes, and the Lutherans were so powerful, that the Emperor alone could scarce cope with them, they being all fast link'd together by the League of *Smalcalde*. At this time the Emperor was in *Flanders*, ordering the Affairs of that Country, and set out for *Germany*, taking *Ulrecht* in his way, where he held a Chapter of the Golden Fleece, and created some Knights. Thence he went to *Maelricht*, and so to *Spire*, whence he continu'd his Journey to *Ratisbon*, where the Diet was appointed to meet. The Duke of *Saxony* and *Lantsgrave* of *Hesse* came not. Publick Disputations were appointed about Religion, which came to nothing; and News being brought that *Martin Luther* was Dead, his Followers all slunk away out of *Ratisbon*. His Majesty, among other things, propos'd in the Diet, that the *Germans* should submit to the Council of *Trent*, then sitting, which the *Lutherans* absolutely refus'd as they had done before, demanding a Natural Synod to be held in *Germany*,

Germany, where all things might proceed according to their Minds. Whilst the Emperor was at *Ratisbon*, *Anne*, Eldest Daughter to King *Ferdinand* was Marry'd to the Duke of *Bavaria*, and *Mary* the Second to the Duke of *Cleves*. The Princes and States engag'd in the League of *Smalcald*, perceiving that the Emperor gave Orders for Warlike Preparations, presented a Petition to him, desiring to know against whom his Forces were design'd. He Answer'd, that against Rebels; but that such as would, according to their Duty, adhere to him, should find him a good Emperor and gracious Lord, and such as did not, should be treated as Rebels. Having receiv'd this Answer, the Leaguers withdrew, and both sides provided for War.

2. The greatest part of *Germany*, except *Bavaria*, *Prepa-*
Cleves, and the Dominions of the King of the *Romans*, *rations for*
 was in the power of the *Lutherans*, and those that *War.*
 were not, to secure themselves, furnish'd them with
 Necessaries. The Duke of *Bavaria*, tho' a *Catholick*,
 was fearful, and it was late before he declar'd him-
 self, which much retarded the Emperor's Affairs;
 as did the King of the *Romans* coming a Month la-
 ter than was expected. The People of *Ausburg*
 were the first that began to raise Men and bear
 Arms, yet not so as to Declare against the Em-
 peror, for they permitted his Servants to buy what
 Arms they would; and at *Nurenberg* *James de To-*
ralva bought up twelve Hundred Quintals of Pow-
 der, one Thousand of Match, and other Stores for
 the Artillery, which he was suffer'd to carry away,
 without molestation, safe to *Ratisbon*. The Lan-
 grave endeavour'd to possess himself of this City,
 but they would not admit him, and he march'd
 backwards towards *Ausburg*; some said to hinder
 the Conjunction of the Forces from *Italy*, others, that
 the Count *de Bure* brought out of the Low-Coun-
 tries. The Emperor had at this time sent his Colo-
 nels to raise sixteen Thousand *Germans*. *D. Alva-*
ro de Saali was order'd to come out of *Hungary*
 with his Regiment of eighteen Hundred *Spaniards*;
Collon-el Arze was to bring three Thousand of the
 same Nation out of *Lombardy*. *Albertus* Marquess
 of

The HISTORY of

of *Brandenburg*, sent 2500 Horse, which was his Quota. *John*, Brother to the Elector of *Brandenburg*, was to bring 600 Horse, and the Great Master of *Prussia* 1000, Duke *Henry* of *Brandenburg* 400, the Prince of *Hungary* 1500; but all these were so parted with the Enemy in the midst of them, that it was a hard matter to bring them together. It was no small wonder that the Emperor got safe from *Ratisbon*, having scarce 1000 Men with him, the City being full of *Lutherans*, and the *Lantgrave* having practis'd to set fire to the Powder brought from *Nuremberg*. Pope *Paul* the Third promised to furnish 12000 Foot, and 800 Horse, with six Months Pay, and 300000 Ducats over and above for this Expedition. *Peter Lewis*, the Pope's Son, furnish'd 200 Horse, the Duke of *Florence* 200 Foot, the Kingdom of *Naples* gave 80000 Ducats, the Kingdom of *Sicily* the like, and others according to their Ability. The Forces in *Italy* were raising, and the Count *de Bure* had Orders to raise 10000 *Low-Country* Foot, and 3000 Horse. The Forces to be raised, were considerable enough, but the difficulty lay in bringing them together from places so distant one from the other.

Lutherans
commence
the War.

3. By that time the Emperor had gathered 7000 Foot, and 700 Horse, the *Lutherans* march'd from *Ausburg*, being 22 Companies of that City, six of the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, four of *Ulm*, and 1500 Horse, with 28 pieces of Cannon, pretending they had no Design against the Emperor, but were marching against the Pope's Forces that came out of *Italy* to destroy *Germany*. The *Lutheran* Forces Commanded by *Sebastian Xertel*, who had formerly been a Sutler, and growing Rich, was now become a General, march'd to *Fieffen*, which was deliver'd without any Opposition; and thence to *Chusa*, which they also took, it being the pass they imagin'd the Forces of *Italy* would take to come into *Bavaria*. After taking *Chusa*, they march'd towards *Inspruch*, hoping to make themselves Masters of that City, which would have been a matter of great Consequence, for then they had commanded both the Ways that lead out of *Tirol* into *Bavaria*, and that

that which leads to *Italy* by *Trent*, so that they had cut off all the Emperors Supplies of Men and Money from those Parts. However, the People of *Inspruch* gathering 12000 Men for their Defence, the *Lutherans* durst not approach them, but march'd off, leaving Garrisons in *Chusa* and *Fiessen*. *Xertell* in his return possess'd himself of *Tonabert*, a Place of great Consequence, where the Duke of *Saxony* and *Lantgrave of Hesse* join'd him with the Forces of the League, so that now they were between 70 and 80000 Foot, and 9 or 10000 Horse, with 100 pieces of Cannon: Had these Forces march'd directly to *Ratisbon*, they had drove the Emperor out of that Place, and out of *Germany*, for he had not 1200 Men with him; but they went and took *Rain* and *Newburg*, which last has a Bridge over the *Danube*, is three Leagues from *Donawert*, and as many from *Ingolstat*. The Emperor being inform'd that the Rebels designed to possess themselves of *Landshut*, a Town of *Bavaria*, in the Road between *Ratisbon* and *Inspruch*, and the only pass left for the Forces from *Italy* and the *Black Forrest* to join him, he resolv'd, tho' with manifest Danger to his Person, to maintain that Place against which his Enemies bent all their Force: Therefore leaving *Pyrrhus Colonna* with 4000 *Germans*, one Company of *Spaniards*, and a sufficient quantity of Ammunition to secure *Ratisbon*, with the rest of his Troops he march'd away to *Landshut*, where he encamp'd with a resolution to expect the Enemy there, and the *Italian* Foot, if they could come before the others. The Duke and *Lantgrave* sent him a Letter, which he would not see, nor their Messenger; but in return, sent them back Copies of the Imperial Ban into which he had put them. The *Lutherans* halted at six Leagues distance from the Emperor, and whilst they delay'd, the Pope's Troops join'd him, being 10 or 11000 Foot, and 600 Horse, the best that ever came out of *Italy*; besides these, there were 200 light Horse sent by the Duke of *Ferrara*. Then came the *Spaniards* from *Lombardy*, next those from *Naples*, and the *Germans* from the *Black Forrest*; so that now the Emperor had something of

an

an Army; for with those in *Ratisbon* he had 16000 *Germans*, near 8000 *Spaniards*, and 10000 *Italians*, besides 600 Horse of the Marquis *John of Brandenburg*, and 800 of the Marquis *Albertus*; so that in all he had 2000 *Curassiers*, and 1000 light Horse, his Foot being the best in the World.

38400

The Emperor marches towards the Rebels.

4. Having gather'd this Force, the Emperor march'd to *Ratisbon*, where he order'd a Train of 36 pieces of Cannon to be made ready and march'd away towards *Ingolstadt* after the Enemy. On the 18th of *August* he encampt at *Newstadt*, a Town on the *Danube*, where tho' there was one Bridge already, he laid two more of Boats, and pass'd over his Army to the same side the Enemy was on, who drew back towards *Ingolstadt*, and encamp'd six miles beyond *Ingolstadt*. On the 25th of *August* the Emperor advanc'd, and tho' late, pass'd on to a Place he had design'd to encamp in beyond *Ingolstadt*, leaving that Town on his back, the *Danube* on the left, a Morass on his right, and the Plain before him; but that part was secur'd at Night by a good Trench. Two Days after, the Enemy drew nearer, and encampt within three Miles of the *Imperialists*, who every Night Attack'd their Out-Guards, and kept them in continual Alarm. There was nothing between the two Armies but a small River, fordable in several places. On the 30th of *August*, the *Lantsgrave* with his Army of 80000 Foot, 15000 Horse, and 130 pieces of Brass Cannon, with 800 Carts loaded with Powder and Ball, 8000 Draught Horses, 300 Boats to make Bridges, and 6000 Pioniers pass'd the River and march'd directly towards the Imperial Camp. The Emperor having notice of his approach, mounted a Horseback, and the Duke of *Alva* repair'd to the Trenches to give the necessary Orders. A Mist that had darkned the morning, clearing up, discover'd in what Order the *Lutherans* came on, which was in form of a Half-moon; on their Right, which was next the Morass, was a great Body of Horse guarding eight or ten pieces of Cannon; on their Left, at some small distance, another great Body of Horse, with 20 pieces of Cannon; and so all the rest of their

their Cannon and Horse in several parcels. All the Foot march'd in good Order behind the Horse. In the Emperor's Camp, the *Spaniards* were next to the Morafs, on their Right the *Germans* Commanded by *George Fronsberg*, then the *Italians*, and then another Body of *Germans*: The rest of the vacant space that ran to the City, was fill'd with the Boats carry'd to lay Bridges over Rivers, and what remain'd with the Horse. The Enemy drew as close as conveniently they could to the Imperial Camp, and began to play their 130 pieces of Cannon, some whereof were not above 600 paces from the Imperial Troops, who answer'd with 40 pieces they had. His Majesty went from place to place still at the head of his Men, and in the midst of Danger, which made them not regard their own. The Bullets flew thick without ceasing, for which reason, it was thought when that fury was over they would Attack the Trenches, and therefore all things were dispos'd to receive them. Still the Enemies ply'd their great Guns, which yet did but little Execution, no more than the Emperor's, which answer'd them; and was so hard ply'd, that six pieces burst. The Battery continu'd seven or eight Hours; and then the Emperor perceiving they slackned, and came not on to give the Assault, he order'd the Horse to their Quarters, but to be always in a readiness. The reason why the Horse were kept mounted within the Works, was, Because in several places the Trenches were so low, it had been a very easie matter to get over; and therefore the Horse stood ready to oppose the Enemy, if they should attempt it. At Night, the *Lutherans* retir'd to their Camp, one end of which was not above 800 paces from the Emperor's, whose Men spent the Night bringing Fascine and raising their Works, so that in the Morning it was safe standing behind them. Besides, the Camp was enlarg'd towards the Enemy, and that part which before had been open, was enclos'd. That Day the Enemy forbore firing their Cannon, but sent out some Parties to Skirmish, which were bravely repuls'd, tho' both Horse and Foot, by about 900 *Spanish* Musqueteers.

The

Rebells
Cannade
the Camp
twice and
depart.

5. The following Night a new Trench was drawn towards a House the Enemy had possess'd themselves of in the Morafs; so that now the two Camps were within four Hundred Paces of one another, which was no way pleasing to the *Lutherans*, as appear'd by their continual firing upon that place. On the thirty first of *August* the Enemy drew out again, and Cannonaded the Camp with the same fury they had done the first Day, from Morning till four in the Afternoon; seventy Men were kill'd, but none of Note among them. Five Hundred *Spanish* Musketers went out to Skirmish and behav'd themselves well; at Night they allarm'd the Enemy, keeping them continually at their Arms without any respite, and the Trench was still carry'd on towards the House in the Morafs, in order to dislodge them that were in it. The next day the Canonading was renew'd, held on till Noon; then ceas'd for a while and began again. This Service was so hot, that, during the three Days it lasted, 1700 large Cannon Balls were gather'd in the Camp, besides all that fell short and were lost. The Enemy lost many of their Horse, were harras'd with continual Alarms, spent their Time and Ammunition in vain, and the Imperial Horse cut off their Provisions, which made them resolve to remove; and accordingly that very Night after the Cannonading, they march'd all their Foot and Artillery over the small River that lay on their Right, so that in the Morning nothing remain'd but their Horse, with some Field Pieces to bring up the Rear. Thus they march'd away towards *Newburg*, and on the fourth of *September* His Majesty sent out parties of Horse to observe what way they took. The second Night the Enemy reach'd *Newburg*, the Emperor not thinking fit to give them Battle, because he was much inferior in Horse, and expected the Count *de Bure*, who, he understood, was near at hand with six Thousand Horse, and fifteen Thousand Foot.

AMag-
zine of
Meclin
blown up.

6. I can not omit in this place, tho' it interrupt the Course of the Action we are upon, to mention the dismal Calamity that fell upon the Town of *Mechlin* in the Low-Countries, on the seventh of

August,

CHARLES the Vth. Emperor. &c. 397

August, this Year 1546. Queen *Mary*, Governess of the Low-Countries, had laid up seven Hundred Barrels of Powder in Vaults, under a great Tower near one of the Gates. The Tower being ancient there were several wide Cracks in it, and on the Day before mention'd, there arose a great storm of Thunder and Lightning, one flash whereof entering the Tower at a Cranny in the Wall, set fire to the Powder, which lifted up the Tower entire from the Foundations, and burst it in the Air before it could fall again to the Ground, the Stones flying about as if they had been Cannon Balls; one great parcel fell upon the Town-Hall and destroy'd two Hundred Houses, beating them flat with the Ground, and as many more in the Suburbs: Many more Houses suffer'd; all the Glass Windows were shatter'd to pieces: the Doors and Window-shutters, tho' fastned, flew open; as did all the Locks of Chests and Trunks; and all the Tiles were broken; above 500 Persons were kill'd, and 2000 hurt within the City, and upwards of 1500 perish'd within the Suburbs. The Town-Ditch, for 200 Paces, was fill'd up, the Wall near the Tower overthrowen, abundance of Trees were rooted up, and remov'd a considerable distance, and many more Blasted. The rest of the Night the Sky was clear and the Air serene.

7. To return to the Progress of the War, we must in the next place set down what way the Count *de Bure* took to joyn the Emperor with his Forces, baffling those considerable Troops that lay to obstruct his Passage. At *Andernac*, in the Archbishoprick of *Cologne*, the *Spaniards* and *Italians*, who had serv'd the King of *England* against *France*, joyn'd the Count, who thence remov'd to *Coblentz*, and so to *Tubingen*. where he had intelligence that Count *Aldemburg* lay with 21 Companies of Experience'd Soldiers to hinder his passing the *Rhine* near *Francofort*; *Fredrick Riemburg* with ten at *Cassel* opposite to *Mentz*, and Count *Bicklingen* with five at *Oppenheim*, which were the passes he had to joyn the Emperor. The Count in the Night cau'd ten Companies of Foot, and two Hundred Horse,

Count
Bure joyns
the Empe-
ror.

with

with a great many Drums, Trumpets, and Colours, to pass the *Rhine*, so privately, that the Enemy did not discover them. The next morning, spreading themselves very wide, beating all their Drums, and letting fly their Colours, they began to advance slowly, as if all the Army had passed the River, which the Rebels believ'd, and quitting their Posts on the *Rhine*, march'd away to *Francfort*. Then the Count passed over the rest of his Troops, where he found conveniency with the assistance of the Archbishop of *Mentz*, pursu'd the Enemy towards *Francfort*, and encamp'd before that City. Thus he advanced very cautiously, till News being brought that the Enemy mov'd towards him; whom he was not able to Cope with; he rested his tir'd Men three Days; and when the Enemy thought they had him safe, the last Night broke up very silently and slunk into a Wood not far from *Ingolstadt*, by which means he disappoynted them; and on the 15th of *September* came safe into the Emperor's Camp with 7000 Horse, and 25000 Foot; all well Arm'd. At the same time the *Lutheran* Army was Reinforced with 2000 Horse and 20000 Foot; so that now those two Armies which were within two Leagues of one another, consisted of 150000 Foot, and 24000 Horse.

The Emperor takes
Newburg.

8. The Emperor being thus Reinforced, resolv'd to pursue the Enemy, who was march'd from *Newburg*, which was a great oversight, that being a Pass of great Consequence, and commanding a very Advantageous Country. His Majesty in two Days remov'd thither from *Ingolstadt*, and being within half a Mile of the Place, the Burghermasters came out, offering to Surrender upon Articles; which was refus'd them; and therefore they put themselves upon His Majesty's Mercy, delivering the Town upon discretion, which was Plunder'd; tho' against His Majesty's Consent. The Garison was disarm'd and dismiss'd, after taking an Oath, not to Serve against the Emperor. Three Days he continu'd there, and Mustering his Army, found between 8 and 9000 Horse, and 79000 Foot. The next Day he advanc'd towards the Enemy, and at

two

two Incampments came within a League of them, they lying at *Tonabert*, and his Head Quarters being at *Marquesen*; but a Wood parted the two Armies, so that there was no way of coming together. The Emperor therefore, to draw them from their Fort, march'd away to the Right, and encamp'd between *Bendiguen* and *Nordling*; the first of which sent immediately to make its Submission, but the latter receiv'd a Garison of *Lutherans*, which it afterwards repented. The Scouts bringing Advice, that the Rebels were marching, the Imperial Army drew up; but there was so thick a Fog all the morning, that it was impossible to discover which way the Enemy mov'd; who marching all Night, and taking the advantage of the morning Mist, had gain'd two Passes on the Mountain which leads to *Nordling*. At Noon, the Fog clear'd up, and discover'd the *Lutherans* on the Hill by *Nordling*, a Place of great Strength; and the more, for that before them was a deep Water, which scarce above twenty Horse could pass a-brest, and the Foot over a Bridge. The *Imperialists* being in order, as was said, advanc'd to the Bank of the River, and some Parties pass'd it, to skirmish and draw the Enemy to a Battle, which they avoided, and encamp't close under *Nordling*, the Emperor returning to his former post. The next day, he came and lodg'd himself within a mile and a half of the Enemy, where he lay some days in *October*.

9. At length, finding the *Lutherans* were not to be drawn to a Battle, he resolv'd to make himself Master of the *Danube*, which was a matter of great consequence, because of the Bridges which laid *Bavaria* and *Swabia* open, and the great plenty of Provisions it convey'd to the Army. The Rebels were in possession of the Towns along it. Therefore His Majesty having kept his Design private, sent the *Italian* Horse and Foot, and part of the *German* Foot, to *Donawert*, which was three Leagues off, by Night; whether they came by break of day, and Assaulted the Place without firing a Cannon, took the Suburb, and the Town immediately surrender'd; where having left two Companies, in
Takes Tonabert.

which were 600 Men, they return'd to the Camp. This done, the whole Army broke up, and encamp't before *Donawert*, with the *Danube* on the Left. The next Day, His Majesty decamp't, marching towards *Tubingen*, with the *Danube* on his Left, and a Wood on the Right; by the way, that Town and *Hofter* sent to deliver their Keys, and *Laugingen* having been Summon'd, and pretending to make a Defence, surrender'd the next morning. His Majesty intending the Day after to proceed to *Ulm*, was diverted by the Intelligence brought him, That the Enemy had decamp't, and mov'd towards him; which they did, and took up their head Quarter at *Gingen*, a League from him; all the Imperial Army, and particularly the Count *de Bure*, openly Muttering, because a good Opportunity of Fighting was lost. On the 20th of *October*, the Enemies Horse, and some Foot, were drawn into an Ambush, laid for them in a Wood, where they sustain'd some Loss, but not very considerable: Thus some Days were spent in only light Skirmishes, and several practices to draw the *Lutherans* to a Battle, which took no effect, because they were Advantageously encamp'd, and would not leave their Strength.

King Ferdinand
over-runs
Saxony.

10. A strong Garison of the Confederates being put into *Ulm*, which render'd His Majesty's designs upon that Place impracticable, and the Camp where he lay growing very deep and muddy, he remov'd back to *Laugingen*, the Enemy never offering to disturb him in his march. At this Place he receiv'd advice, That his Brother, King *Ferdinand*, and Duke *Maurice*, had subdu'd the greatest part of the Dukedom of *Saxony*, for which all the Cannon in the Camp was fir'd. It being impracticable to lie long in a place, because of the Mire, His Majesty remov'd nearer the Enemy to an Advantageous post, dry, abounding in Wood and Water, safe for bringing of Provisions, and proper to cut off the Enemies, which in a short time reduc'd them to great Want. Being in this Condition, the Elector of *Saxony* and Landgrave of *Hesse* sent a Trumpet with proposals of Peace to *John Marquis* of *Brandenburg*, Brother to the Elector of that Name,

Name, to be communicated to the Emperor, who answer'd, That he would not hear of Peace, unless the Elector and Lantsgrave would put themselves into His Majesty's power; which they refusing, the Treaty went no farther. On the 27th of *November* news was brought, that the Enemy had decamp'd; but there being a great Fog, the Spy that brought it lost his Way, and came not till Noon, when the Confederates had march'd a considerable way. However, the Emperor pursu'd them with the Horse, and overtook their Rear at such a time as they had gain'd a Hill, where they made show of encamping; and it being late, His Majesty order'd his Foot to march all Night, that they might be with him before the Rebels could decamp. They having lighted a great many Fires, march'd away silently, which was discover'd by Captain *Lewis Quixada*, sent to observe their motions, and the Emperor acquainted with it. When Day appear'd, the Ground was cover'd with Snow two foot deep; the Foot were quite spent, and starv'd with Cold, and the Horses unfit for service, having stood Saddled all Night, and without Forrage. His Majesty notwithstanding all these Inconveniencies, would have pursu'd, but that if he advanc'd, the Country having been before waisted by the Enemy, he must have been quite destitute of Provisions, which they could not have wanted, having the plentiful Country of *Wirtemberg* behind them, which oblig'd him to return to his old Camp, where the Men were a little recruited in order to go through with what remain'd. From this time the Affairs of the Confederates began visibly to decline.

Lutherans
fly before
the Empe-
ror.

11. When his Majesty had refresh'd his Troops two Days in his Camp, he receiv'd advice, That the Enemy was marching towards *Francia*; and knowing that if they got into that Country, they would gain the best Quarters in *Germany*, be able to raise much Money, and to recruit their Army, so that they would become more Formidable than they had been yet; he resolv'd to prevent them,

Several
places sub-
mit to him.

D d having

having the shorter march, as being in a straight Line, whereas they were to fetch a great Compass. Accordingly he set out towards *Nordling*, tho' the Weather was as bad as could be for Frost and Snow, and reach'd it at two incampments; the Inhabitants sent to submit themselves, as did those of *Boffinghen*, but a mile from it. In two Days more he came to *Rotenburg*, where the Burghers came out to meet him, alledging in their Justification, That they had never furnish'd Men nor Money against him, which was true. There he understood the Enemy was near at hand, and still making for *Franconia*; and therefore, tho' contrary to the Advice of all his Generals, who pleaded the badness of the Season, he resolv'd to pursue them, till they were forc'd to break up their Army, and disperse, which afterwards appear'd to have been a most advantagious Resolution; for the Enemy being inform'd that the Emperor was at *Rotenburg*, struck out of the Road to *Franconia*, towards the Left, taking a vast compass, over uncoth Mountains, which oblig'd them to leave their Cannon in several Castles belonging to the Duke of *Wirttemberg*, and so got eight Leagues from *Rotenburg*. There they broke up the Army, the Duke going one way, and the *Lanisgrave* another, with only 200 Horse. At *Francfort*, the Government of the City ask'd of him as Captain-General of the League, What was best for them to do? He told them his Opinion was, That every Fox should look to his own Tail; an Expression much us'd by him. This said, he went into his Country, as did the Elector of *Saxony* with his Troops, putting the Abbeyes by the way to Ransom, and Robbing the Churches to maintain his Men. At *Rotenburg*, His Majesty understanding that the Enemy was gone, so as not to be lock'd after any more, dismiss'd the Count *de Bure*, ordering him to return to *Flanders* with the Troops he brought thence, and by the way if he could, to make himself Master of *Francfort*. After his departure, the Emperor resolv'd to bend his Force against those Cities which had contributed

to

to maintain the War against him, but many of them prevented him sending to make their Submission, and beg Pardon; so that before he remov'd from thence, all the Imperial Towns, as far as the *Rhine*, and some in *Swabia*, and towards *Saxony*, return'd to their Duty.

12. From *Rotenburg*, the Emperor came in ten Days to *Hall* in *Swabia*, a Town of the League, but that had submitted, where the Gout kept him longer than he had intended. At this time, which was about the middle of *December*, the Count Palatine came to the Emperor, and falling down before him, begg'd Pardon for the Assistance he had given his Enemy: His Majesty, after a sharp Re-proof, forgave and receiv'd him again into Favour. The People of *Ulm*, at the same time, sent their Deputies to implore the Emperor's Mercy, which he granted them, reserving to himself the right of disposing of the City; they presented him with 100000 Florins, and 12 heavy Cannon, and receiv'd a Garison of 10 Companies, that is, 3000 Men. Then His Majesty set out for the Country of *Wirttemberg*, where he met with no opposition, most places opening their Gates, and the Duke intirely putting himself into the Emperor's power, delivering three of the strongest Places he had, paying down 20000 Ducats, and promising to be Obedient in all things. Several Places daily sent Deputies to submit themselves and beg Pardon; and the Magistrates of *Ulm* came out to meet His Majesty, as he was on his way to that City, expressing great Affection; and, indeed, the *Germans* naturally Lov'd him, insomuch that the Soldiers call'd him, *Our Father*. It hapned that one of the Enemies being taken and brought before his Majesty, the Emperor ask'd, whether he knew him? The Prisoner answer'd, *I do, for you are our Father*. His Majesty readily reply'd, *You Knaves are none of my Children, these honest Men about me are my Sons, and I am their Faiber*. *Ulm*, *Ausburg* and *Strasburg*, were receiv'd to Mercy, and then the Emperor

The Palatine Pardon'd.

The HISTORY of

thought fit to spend the rest of the Winter at the first of these Places, giving the necessary Orders to be in a readines to prosecute the War the next Summer. To conclude this Chapter, I must only add, That *Francis*, the first King of *France*, Dy'd on the 30th of *March* this Year 1546, at *Paris*, of a *Fistula*, being 54 Years of Age, whereof he Reign'd 33.

C H A P. XXIX.

The remaining part of the War in Germany against the Lutherans: Saxony reduc'd, and the Elector taken. Rebellion in Naples suppress'd; the Diet at Ausburg; a Conspiracy against Genoa disappointed.

1. THIS and the foregoing Chapter are taken from the Commentaries of *D. Lewis de Avila*, who was present with the Emperor during the whole War in *Germany*; but *Sandoval* affirms the second Commentary of the said Book was not Compos'd by the said *D. Lewis*, but by an Anonymous Soldier who serv'd his Imperial Majesty. However it was the Relation has ever had an undoubted Reputation, and as such is made use of by *Sandoval* in this place.

2. Whilst the Elector of *Saxony* and *Lantgrave* of *Hesse* were busie in making Head against the Emperor, *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans*, and *D. Maurice* had over-run and made themselves Master of the greatest part of the former's Dominions; but as soon as the Confederate Camp broke up, the Elector, with a considerable part of the Army, recover'd all that had been taken from him in as short a time as he had lost it; and not so satisfy'd, subdu'd some part of their Dominions, particularly in *Bohemia*, where

Elector
of Saxony
recovers his
Country.

where the People being well affected towards him, at first admitted his Troops, as if it had been thro' Necessity ; but soon after lost all sense of Duty to their King. The Emperor, tho' he had need of Rest, made all necessary Preparations, resolving to manage this War in Person, because the Elector of Saxony having recover'd all his own, except the Town of *Zwickaw*, and taken Duke *Maurice* his Inheritance, save only *Dresen* and *Leipsick*, was at the Head of 4000 Horse and 10000 Foot, and it was requisite to crush him before he grew stronger, the *Bohemians* so far siding with him, as to keep their King's Daughters in a manner Prisoners in the Castle of *Prague*. Before his departure from *Ulm*, the Emperor had sent *Albertus* Marquess of *Brandenburg* with 4800 Foot and 1800 Horse, besides a sum of Money, to joyn the King of the *Romans* and Duke *Maurice*, and then they would be stronger than the Elector of *Saxony*, had they manag'd the War as they ought to have done. But they failing, and ill News coming daily from *Saxony*, His Majesty resolv'd to manage that War in Person for the publick Benefit of *Germany*. At this time Dy'd *Anne* Queen of *Hungary*, Wife to King *Ferdinand*, having fifteen Sons and Daughters. After His Majesty had receiv'd the Submission of the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, and several Cities mention'd in the last Chapter, he set out and came to *Giengen*, where the *Lutherans* encamp'd the foregoing Year. Thence he went to *Erling*, where he had so violent a fit of the Gout, that all Men despair'd of his Recovery in any reasonable time, but he us'd such means as set him up much sooner than was expected.

3. Whilst the Emperor lay ill of the Gout, *Albertus* Marquess of *Brandenburg*, sent by him, as was said before, to reinforce the King of the *Romans*, took up at *Roclies* with 3000 Foot and 1800 Horse; the other Forces of King *Ferdinand* and *Albertus* Duke *Maurice* being canton'd in other places. This Town of *Roclies* where Duke *Albert* was, belong'd to a Widdow Lady Sister to the *Lansgrave*. She very craftily continually entertain'd *Albertus* at Feasts and Balls, till she had lull'd him in security

rity, and giving intelligence to the Elector of *Saxony*, who was but three Leagues off, and marching by Night, came and surpriz'd him before Day, so that he was easily overthrown and taken, tho' he fought Manfully, and lost four or 500 Horse, either kill'd or taken, the rest fled to the King of the *Romans*, except some that took up in the *Saxon* Service. Of the Foot few Dy'd, most of them making their way to the King of the *Romans*, and others that were taken, Swearing not to serve against the Elector. *Albertus* was sent Prisoner to *Gotha*, a strong Town, and the *Saxon*, instead of falling upon Duke *Maurice*, as was expected he would have done, sent 3000 Foot and 600 Horse into *Bohemia*, who possess'd themselves of the Vale of *Laquimistal*. Upon this Advice the Emperor resolv'd no longer to delay taking the Field, and accordingly immediately remov'd to *Nordling*. Thence His Majesty continu'd his Journey to *Nurenberg*, where he had with him two old *German* Regiments, each of them consisting of between three and four Thousand Men; all the *Spanish* Foot, the *Neapolitan* Men at Arms, 600 Light Horse, and 1000 *German* Horse. Besides these Forces, orders were given for raising another *German* Regiment of Foot. There the Emperor continu'd five or six Days gathering his Forces, and recovering after his late indisposition. The King of *Bohemia* and Duke *Maurice* had appointed to meet his Imperial Majesty at *Eger*, on the Frontiers of *Bohemia*, where was to be the general Rendevouz of all their Forces; but *Gaspard Fluc*, head of the *Bohemian* Rebels, had cut down the Woods, and by that means so choak'd up the Roads that there was no passing, and therefore they were forc'd to take a great compass over the Mountains, the Emperor being then [within three Leagues of *Eger*, which, as is said, is on the Frontiers of *Bohemia*, but without the Mountains. *Bohemia* is all encompass'd with vast thick Woods, except on the side of *Moravia*, where there are some open avenues, but within the Woods the Country is plain, fruitful, and very thick of Towns and Castles. The People are naturally

turally brave and perfonable. The Horfe are Arm'd like the *Germans* , the Foot quite after another manner, fome with Halberds, others with Laſces, others with Poles a Fathom and a half long, at the end of which, by a Chain, hangs an Iron Bar half a Yard long, others have Fire-Arms, and broad Hatchets, which they will throw very dexterouſly twenty Paces. Great part of *Saxony* borders on *Bohemia*, and has the Mountains of *Bohemia* on the Right all the way as far as the River *Elbe*, which runs out of *Bohemia* into *Saxony*.

4. Three Leagues from *Eger* the Emperor was met by his Brother King *Ferdinand*, Duke *Maurice*, The Em-
peror mar-
ches to-
wards the
Enemy. and *John* Marquels of *Brandenburg*, Son to the Elector, who was now reconcil'd to the Emperor. They brought with them 3100 Horſe, whereof 900 were *Hungarians*, and excellent Light Horſe, Arm'd with long hollow Spears, and Bucklers broad below, and ending in a point above, ſome wear Coats of Maile; many of them carry both Cimeters and Rapiers, and a ſort of Pole-Axes. Foot they brought none, having left what they had in Garrifons. The Emperor ſtay'd at *Eger*, which was a Catholick Town all the Holy Week, and *Eaſter* Holidays, and then ſet out ſending the Duke of *Alva* before with all the Foot and part of the Horſe. All the Frontiers of *Saxony* about *Eger*, are Woody and full of Moraffes, till you come to *Plauen*, ſix or ſeven Leagues from *Eger*, where the Country is more open; and there are fine Plains and Meadows, Towns and Caſtles. The People were all in Arms, and the Elector with his Army was reducing ſuch places as ſtill held out. The Emperor advanc'd with all poſſible ſpeed to find him out before he got to any of four ſtrong places, which were, *Wittenberg*, *Gotha*, *Sonabarte*, and *Heldrum*. Some Priſoners taken gave Advice, that the Duke of *Saxony* was at *Meiſſen*, beyond the River *Elbe*, and had fortify'd his Camp. The Emperor having march'd ten Days without intermiſſion from *Eger*, reſted two Days, his Foot being much tir'd, and being reſolv'd to lay a Bridge over at *Meiſſen*, receiv'd intelligence that the *Saxons*

were marching towards *Wirttemberg*, and lay that Night at *Milburg*, a Town beyond the River, three Leagues from the Imperial Camp, where there was a Ford. This Intelligence made His Majesty resolve to lose no time, and therefore he order'd the Horse, with the Boats, to lay a Bridge over the River, to march before Night, and the Foot at Midnight. In the morning there rose a thick Fog, but clear'd up as they came near the *Elb*. The Duke of *Saxony* lay encampt at *Mulberg*, on the other side the River, with 6000 Foot, and near 3000 Horse, and 21 pieces of Cannon, and thought himself secure enough, having either time to retire if he pleas'd, or being able to make good his Post, because the River was there broad and deep, the Banks high, and he had a good Town and Castle to defend them. About 8 in the morning, the Emperor came to the River, between which and the Army, there were large Woods and Meadows, and perceiv'd the Enemy had fortify'd the further Bank, having planted their Cannon and distributed their Musqueteers along it, to make good the Ford, and defend a Bridge of Boats they had, which was divided into three parts to be convey'd down the River. That Bank on which the Enemy lay, was much higher than the other, and upon it was a sort of Entrenchment, deep enough to cover the Musqueteers. On the Imperial side, the Ground was so plain, that it was flooded upon great Rains, and naked only, at a good distance, there were Trees that made a Cover. The River was 300 paces over, where they judg'd the Ford to be, and the Stream, tho' to appearance easie, ran violently. Among the Trees, His Majesty plac'd some pieces of Cannon, and 1000 Musqueteers, to make their Volleys, in order to remove the Enemy, and then advance to the edge of the Water. The Enemy having put some Musqueteers into their Boats, were carrying them down the River, which oblig'd the *Spanish* Musqueteers to advance to the River, which they did with such Resolution, that many of them ran into the Water Breast deep, and began to fire so furiously upon the other Bank and Boats, that many being

CHARLES the Vth. Emperor. &c. 409

being Kill'd, they abandon'd them, and proceeded no further down the River. All the Enemies Cannon and small Shot play'd upon the *Imperialists*, who ply'd them so hotly, that they began to slacken in their Fury; and therefore the Emperor order'd Colonel *Arze*, with 1000 *Spaniards* more, to second those that gave the first Charge. When the Enemy abandon'd their Boats, they fir'd some of them, and in others they lay down to avoid the Shot.

5. By this time, the Emperor's Bridge was come to the River, but was found too short to reach over, and therefore it was requisite to gain some of the Enemies Boats to lengthen it out. Ten *Spanish* Musqueteers stript, and swimming with their Swords in their Mouths, notwithstanding the Enemies fire, made themselves Masters of two thirds of the Boats that were going down the Stream. These Boats being taken, and all the Imperial Foot lying along the Shore, the *Lutherans* began to disney. At the same time, the Duke of *Alva* acquainted the Emperor, That a Peasant had discover'd to him the right Ford, and immediately the Army march'd that way to pass it, His Majesty being resolv'd to fight the Enemy that Day. The Elector us'd all his endeavours to obstruct the passage of the Troops, but to no effect; for his Men quitted the Shore, and immediately the Imperial Horse enter'd the Ford, some of them passing the River before the Enemy got out of the Town, who began to fire upon them, but the *Spanish* Foot in the Water, ply'd the *Lutherans* so hard, that the Horse were out of danger. The Enemy having lost the Ford, and being beat off the Shore, resolv'd to save themselves at *Torgaw*, if they could not reach *Wittemberg*; or if that fail'd, to fight by the way. All the *Hungarian* and light Horse passing the Ford, carry'd each of them a Musqueteer behind him; after them follow'd the *Neapolitan* Men at Arms, and then the Emperor himself, and King of the *Romans*. The Guide that conducted them over, had two Horses and 100 Ducats given him. The Bridge of Boats was laying over, and the *Spanish* and *German* Foot ready to pass, whilst the Horse with those Musqueteers they carry'd

Lutherans
Routed at
Milburg.

carry'd over the Ford, kept the Enemy in play; for the Duke of *Saxony* retir'd with all speed, his Foot drawn up in two Bodies, and the Horse in nine Squadrons, turning every now and then to face the *Imperialists*, whilst the Foot continu'd their march. His Majesty pursu'd at as large a Trot as the Men at Arms could hold, and seeing a Crucifix on the Road, with a Musket-shot thro' the Breast, cry'd out *Exurge Domine, judica causam tuam. Arise, O Lord, judge thy own Cause.* This said, he held on his way, striking out to the Windward to avoid the Dust the Van rais'd, and have a clear sight of it, to prevent the Squadrons falling into Disorder. The Duke of *Alva*, with the Van, press'd so close upon the Enemy, that they halted, and fir'd their Cannon, which made his Majesty haste forwards to second him. The Imperial Foot with six pieces of Cannon could not yet come up with their Horse, who were advanc'd three Leagues from the *Elbe*; but the Emperor was resolv'd to press the *Lutherans* with his Horse, for fear they should gain the Post they design'd. All the Imperial Horse were 3470, the *Saxons* 6000 Foot in two Bodies, as was said before, and 1690 Horse in nine Squadrons, making a narrow Front, but deep in File; whereas the *Imperialists* had extended their Front, but their Files were thinner. The Duke at first discovering only the Imperial Van, by reason of the Dust which obstructed his further sight, thought to have made Head; but when he perceiv'd the main Body of Horse, he then thought to gain a Wood at a small distance, and there maintain himself till Night, when he might march off to *Wittemberg*, or Fight with more Advantage if necessity requir'd; and therefore, as soon as he came to the Wood, he order'd all his Fire-Arms to give the Imperial Horse a Volley, as they did in good order. The Imperial main Body came up, and made a Line with the Van, but coming to a Morass, were forc'd to close and let the Van pass first, for fear of breaking their Ranks at such time as the Enemy fir'd the Volley we spoke of before. At this time, the Duke of *Alva* Charg'd with the *Neapolitan* Men at Arms, and
 Duke

Duke *Maurice* with his Musqueteers a Horseback, then the other Men at Arms, and the main Body, which was again come up on the Right, pressing the Enemy so vigorously, that they fled, abandoning their Foot, who made some small Opposition, but were broke in a moment. The light Horse, and *Hungarians* fell in upon their Flank, doing great execution, and so got into the Wood, where the scatter'd Arms were a great hindrance to them. The Slaughter was great, and the Prisoners numerous. His Majesty follow'd the pursuit above a League, all the light Horse and some of the *Germans* three Leagues. As his Majesty halted in the Wood, to gather some of his Troops, which were too much dispers'd in the pursuit, the Duke of *Saxony* was brought Prisoner before him, several pretending to the honour of taking him. The Duke would have alighted and touch'd the Emperor's Hand, who would not permit it, but he saying, *Most Mighty and most Gracious Emperor, I am your Prisoner.* His Majesty answer'd, *Now you call me Emperor, you us'd to give me another Name.* This he said, because the Elector and *Lantsgræve* in their Prosperity used to call him *Charles of Gant.* He was sent under a strong Guard to the Camp by the River. Of the Enemy 2000 Foot and 500 Horse were Kill'd; the Prisoners were very many, but the certain Number is not known, yet it is unquestionable, that not above 400 got to *Wittemberg.* There were also taken 15 pieces of Cannon that Day, and 6 that were gone before, the next day 17 Colours, and 9 Standards, all the Ammunition and Baggage, where the Horse got a rich Booty; Duke *Ernestus* of *Brunswick* was made Prisoner, and the Elector's Son after being Wounded made his escape to *Wittemberg.* Of the *Imperialists* about 50 were Kill'd. This Battle was fought on the 24th of *April* 1547, began about 11 of the Clock upon the River *Elbe*, and was ended at 7 in the Evening, after a pursuit of three Leagues, the Horse alone breaking both Horse and Foot. The Emperor attributing all the Success to God, said, *I came, I saw, and God Overcame.* That Night, about One of the Clock, the Army return'd to its Camp. Colonel

Duke of
Saxony
taken.

lonel *Alonso de Vivas*, a *Spaniard*, had the Custody of the Elector and Duke of *Brunswick* committed to him. The Emperor would have Knighted all those that Signaliz'd themselves in the Battle, but their Number being great, after performing the Ceremonies with some, he said with a loud Voice, *Be ye all Knights.*

The Elector
of Saxony
resigns his
Title and
Dominions.

6. The Town of *Torgaw* submitted it self, and the Emperor march'd that way with his Army to *Wittemberg* crossing the *Elbe* half a League below it, and encamping in sight of the Place among the Woods. The City is large, makes a long Square, the *Elbe* running within 400 paces of it, is seated in a Plain, and encompass'd with a broad deep Ditch, the Rampart 60 Foot thick, under which is a Fausse-Bray of Brick and Lime for Musqueteers, so shelter'd by the Ditch, that there is no Battering of it. There are besides five great Bastions, and a Castle that Commanded all about. Preparations were making for a Siege, but the Elector of *Brandenburg* and Duke of *Cleves* interceding, and his own natural Clemency inclining him to it, the Emperor resolv'd to give the Elector of *Saxony* his Life, yet so as that he should not go unpunish'd. The substance of what was resolv'd and agreed upon, was, That the Duke should resign the Title of Elector, deliver up the Cities of *Gotha* and *Wittemberg*, release *Albertus* of *Brandenburg*, restore all he had taken from the Great Master of *Prussia*, renounce all Right to *Magdeburg*, *Halberstadt*, and *Hall*, discharge *Henry* of *Brunswick*, and his Son, renounce all Alliances made against the Emperor and his Brother, forfeit all his Possessions to the Emperor, part to be bestow'd on the King of the *Romans*, and part on Duke *Maurice*, who is to pay to his Majesty 50000 Florins in Gold a Year for them: That the Duke have the City *Gotha* given him, but dismantled; that his Children may inherit, and that the Emperor release *Ernestus* of *Brunswick* gratis. All these Articles were fulfill'd, and the Duke of *Saxony*, of one of the Greatest Princes in *Germany*, became a private Gentleman. At *Wittemberg* the Emperor receiv'd Embassadors from *Tartary* and *Tmesz*, each offering him 4000 Horse.

Horse. All places in *Saxony* submitted, and the Rebellious *Bohemians* hearing the Emperor's Success, sent Deputies to implore His Majesties Clemency.

7. The Emperor's Celerity avail'd him much, for Duke *Henry* of *Brunswick* sent by him against the Dukes of *Lunenburg*, was defeated by them and *Tumfern*, who had joyn'd them with the Forces out of *Bohemia*, so that they had now 4000 Horse and near 15000 Foot, which, with other Troops he expected, were to have joyn'd the *Saxon*, and would have made a formidable Army. All these Forces avail'd nothing after the late Victory, and the *Lantgrave* himself who before seem'd to govern all *Germany*, now laid aside all his Projects, and employ'd Duke *Maurice*, whom the Emperor had appointed Elector to interceed for his Pardon. After several Proposals rejected by the Emperor, the *Lantgrave* seeing there was no other way left him, submitted to such Articles as His Majesty thought fit to allow him, which were to this effect, That he put himself and Dominions into the Emperor's power, and wholly upon his mercy. That he come in person to beg the Emperors pardon, submit himself to the Judgment of the Imperial Camber, give aid against the *Turk*, renounce the League of *Smalcald*, banish the Emperor's Enemies his Dominions, allow him Passage through them, pay 150000 Florines for the Charge of the War, demolish the Fortifications he has rais'd, that he submit to the Decrees of the Council of *Trent*, and many more particulars, too long to be inserted. Upon these Terms the Emperor excepted him from the Imperial Ban. On the nineteenth of *June* he came to *Hall* in *Saxony*, where His Majesty was then, sign'd these Articles that same Day, and then went into the Emperor's Presence, where kneeling, he own'd his Offence, and begg'd Pardon. One of Council answer'd for the Emperor, declaring, that His Majesty, upon these Articles they had concluded, gave him his Life, and would not punish him with perpetual Imprisonment, nor forfeiture of his Dominions. Having receiv'd this Answer he stood up, but the Emperor neither touch'd his Hand, nor gave any other token of Friendship. The Duke of *Alva* carry'd him away to Supper, after which he

The Lantgrave submits and is secur'd.

told

told him he must remain a Prisoner; at which he was much startl'd, and call'd upon those Princes who had engag'd for his Liberty, to be as good as their Words, which they promis'd to do. His Majesty having receiv'd the Pope's Congratulations for his Success, and dispos'd all Affairs in those Parts, set out for *Hall*, and came to *Nuremberg*, where the Deputies of *Lubec* and *Bremen* came to make their Subinission, as did the Dukes of *Pomerania* and *Lunenburg*, and thus ended that famous *German War*. *Ulm* being at that time very unhealthy, the Emperor order'd the Diet to meet in *September* at *Augsburg*, being the more intent upon it, because *Henry* the young King of *France*, who had lately ascended the Throne, preserv'd the same Rancour King *Francis* had always show'd against him, and refus'd to sign the Peace his Father had concluded.

Rebelli-
on in Na-
ples.

8. Whilst the Emperor was thus successful in *Germany*, there happen'd a dangerous Mutiny in *Naples*, which was thus. *D. Peter de Toledo* Viceroy of *Naples*, a Man not belov'd for his harsh Disposition, by the Emperor's Orders attempted in *December* 1546, to settle the Inquisition in *Naples* as had been done in *Spain* by King *Ferdinand*. When this was first propos'd not only the Commonalty, but the Nobility and all People in general oppos'd it so unanimously that he was forc'd for that time to desist. Soon after Pope *Paul III.* set out a Bull, declaring that it belong'd only to the Church to take Cognizance of Heresies, and forbidding the Viceroy, or any other Lay Magistrates to proceed against Hereticks by way of Inquisition, or any other manner. This Bull and the encouragement given by the Emperor's Enemies, fix'd the *Neapolitans* in their Resolution of opposing the Inquisition. The Viceroy, that he might not be thought to have yielded, appointed Inquisitors. The multitude back'd by several of the Nobility remonstrated, and the Viceroy was positive to execute his Orders. This lasted till *January* 1547, when the multitude met one Morning in the Market-place in a furious manner, and thinking the Conservator and Council of the City were to blame, they

they depos'd them, putting one *Micer John de Sesa*, a famous Physician, into the place of the first, associating themselves Nobility and Commons, which they call'd *Union*. The Viceroy, who was then at *Pozzuolo*, thought fit to wink at them for the present, and sent the *Marques de Vico*, and *Scipio de Somma* to assure the People he would proceed no further in the Affair of the Inquisition. Upon this the multitude was pacify'd and deputed twelve Persons to go in their Name and return Thanks to the Viceroy, who gave them such good Words, that the City was convinc'd all was over. Some Days after, the Viceroy thought to punish the Ring-leaders of that Mutiny, and in order to it, order'd enquiry to be made after them, which could not be done so privately, but that the People got some Wind of it, and sent to intreat the Viceroy to desist. It happen'd just at this time, that a Man being Arrested for Debt, cry'd out he was taken by the Inquisition, and five *Neapolitan* young Gentlemen who were by, others coming in to their Assistance rescu'd the Prisoner, the Officer, with difficulty, saving his Life. One of the Regents of the *Vicarie*, which is like a Lieutenant Criminal, apprehended the five Youths, and the Viceroy, upon the first Advice hastning to *Naples*, without any form of process, caus'd three of them to be strangl'd in Prison and thrown in the Street, forbidding any person to Bury them upon pain of Death. The People immediately took up Arms, and the Viceroy was in danger of his Life. He got to Horse with 200 Men, and rode about the Streets, neither he nor the Towns-men daring to fall on. Next Morning the whole City ran to Arms, the *Marques de Pescara*, then a Child, carrying the Crucifix before them, and made all Persons swear to their *Union*, which was to oppose the Viceroy. Next Day the Viceroy order'd some Musketeers out of the Castle to sally and kill all they met, and at the same time the three Castles began to play their Cannon, doing great mischief among the Buildings. They fought three Days, and many Dy'd on both sides. After this a Truce was concluded for some Days,

the

The HISTORY of

the Viceroy promising to punish no Man till he had acquainted the Emperor. Both Parties sent Deputies to him ; but whilst they were gone stood upon their Guard ; and the Viceroy understanding there was a Conspiracy carrying on against him, sent to borrow 4000 Men of the Duke of *Florence*. The *Neapolitains*, to prevent them, thought to cut off the *Spaniards* that were in the City, and surprizing twelve that were abroad, relying on the Truce, Butcher'd them all. The Castles began then again to play upon the City, and the *Spaniards* falling slew all that they met in revenge for their Companions. This lasted a whole Day and Night. The People seeing themselves in Distress, and knowing the Viceroy expected Men from *Florence* and *Spain*, call'd in all the *Banditti*, and in one Day 5000 Murderers, Felons, and other Miscreants came in, so that the City was a Den of Thieves: These did more mischief than any Enemy could have done; for they Robb'd, Murder'd and committed other Insolencies. On the twenty second of *July* *John de Mendoca's* Company sall'y'd out of the Castle plunder'd and burnt one quarter of the City near the Custome-house, killing a great number of *Neapolitans*. On the other side, another party gain'd *S. Josephs* Quarter, kill'd abundance of the Citizens, plunder'd the Houses, and fortify'd what they had won. Then Captain *Origuella* took the Monastery of *S. Mary la Nova*, and defended it against 3000 of the Citizens, who gave it three Assaults. The Cannon of the Castles never ceas'd Day nor Night, doing incredible harm in the City. On the twenty third of *July* the *Neapolitans* renew'd the Truce, and yet that same Night assaulted Captain *Origuella* in the Monastery of *S. Mary*, and the Viceroy seeing there was no Faith in him, would not hearken to any more Proposals, but made the Cannon fire incessantly from the Castles, and the Soldiers to ply the Towns-men. The Banditty minded Robbing more than defending the *Neapolitans*; and on the twenty fifth of *July*, after much boasting of what they would do to the *Spaniards*, fell upon the *Neapolitans* and plunder'd their Houses.

Next

Next Day the *Neapolitans* fir'd a Monastery of Nuns near *S. Mary Nova*, whence 100 Musketeiers came out and putting to Flight 5000 Banditti, carry'd off the Nuns and best of their Goods, Lodging them near the Castle. On the twenty ninth the standing Horse went out to meet the Men at Arms, that were coming to *Naples*, and all the Country were so unanimous in Rebellion, that they would not Quarter nor furnish them Provisions. *Capua*, *Nola*, *Aversa*, and all the Province call'd *Terra di Laboro*, oppos'd the *Spaniards*, and broke the Mills that us'd to Grind for the Castles. On the second of *August* the Deputies sent to the Emperor, return'd, the Viceroy did not discover what orders he had receiv'd, but the Deputy of the City acquainted them, it was his Majesty's pleasure they should be obedient to their Viceroy, deliver up their Arms to him, and receive a general pardon, excepting only 30 Persons, whom the Viceroy had orders to Execute. The Viceroy publish'd the pardon, and commanded all to deliver their Arms. The *Neapolitans* hated the Viceroy and could not endure to deliver up their Arms; but on the fourth of *August* there came twenty four Gallies into the Harbour with 2000 *Spaniards*. On the fifth of *August* the Citizens were commanded to deliver their Arms, but they brought only such as were fit for no use, which the Viceroy observing, threaten'd to punish them as Rebels unless they brought those Arms they fought with. They made some Excuses, and on the seventh the most guilty persons and many more fled; so that the City was half unpeopled. The same Day the *Spaniards* march'd to reduce *Nola*, *Capua*, and *Aversa*, which presently submitted. On the eighth, the *Neapolitans* deliver'd into the Castle twenty five pieces of Cannon, which was all they had. The Viceroy told the Deputies of the City, that he would not punish them as he might, but would leave it to such judges as the Emperor would appoint. Of the Persons excepted, some fled to *France* and never return'd, others were pardon'd six Years after. The Country was fin'd 100000 Ducats, besides all Charges since the Rebellion. All within

forty miles of *Naples*, the People were disarm'd, the Viceroy having liberty to allow such Persons as he thought fit to wear Swords, but no other Arms. This was much resented, and abundance forsook their Country upon it; but such are the Fruits of Rebellion.

9. In *August*, this Year, the Emperor fell sick of a Fever and Ague, but recover'd time enough to be at the Diet. About the same time the King of the *Romans* reduc'd the *Bohemians* to his own content, for he increas'd his Revenue 700000 Florins a Year. A Truce was now concluded with the *Turk* for five Years; the *Swisse* Cantons sent Deputies under the Emperor's Protection; and an Embassador came to him from *Henry* King of *France*, offering his Sister in Marriage to Prince *Philip*, then a Widdower, their Children to inherit the State of *Milan*, to which *France* would renounce all its pretensions. Many other things were propos'd not worth mentioning, because none of them took effect. The Diet met very full at *Ausburg* on the tenth of *September*, and granted His Majesty a supply, which, with the Fines impos'd for Rebellion and other Crimes, amounted to 1600000 Florines of the *Rine*. The Emperor being sensible of leaving the Imperial Crown to a Prince of small power, was ambitious to convey it down to his Son, and to this effect caus'd his Sister Queen *Mary* to treat with King *Ferdinand* about making a Resignation, but he was highly offended at the Proposal, and therefore the Emperor desist'd, ordering there should be no more said of it.

A design
to surprize
Genoa.

10. King *Henry* of *France* continuing his Father's Ambition, study'd how he might possess himself of the State of *Milan*, and to this end lay'd a design of seizing the City of *Genoa*, forming a Conspiracy to that purpose with *Peter Lewis Farnesius*, the Pop's Son, *John Aloisius* Count of *Elisco*, and others. The Count was the chief manager, and having in the Night gather'd 300 Arm'd Men, one Hundred of them secur'd the Port, the other two Hundred were to break into Prince *Andrew Doria's* House and having Murder'd him and his Nephew *John Doria* to secure

secure the City for the *French*. They beset the Pallace, and *John Doria* running out at the noise was Butcher'd; but *Andrew Doria* got into a small Vessel and put out to Sea, landing five miles from the City. In that Confusion the Conspirators had secur'd most of the important places in the City, but Count *Eliseo* stepping from one Galley to another dropt into the Sea and was Drown'd. In the Morning the Magistrates appear'd in Arms, and tho' all the People were divided and knew not who to follow, as soon as the Count's Death was known his Followers dismay'd, the City was pacify'd, *Andrew Doria* recall'd, and several of the Plotters Executed. *Peter Lewys Farnesius* was one of the chief contrivers of this Plot, and therefore fearing *Andrew Doria*, he sent *Augustin* Count of *Landa* to him to clear himself of that Treachery: *Doria* who knew his falsehood dealt with him accordingly, persuading that very Count of *Landa* to murder *Peter Lewys*, which he perform'd in a short time after he return'd home, all the People of *Plasencia* rejoicing at his Death, and receiving *D. Ferdinand de Gonzaga*, who came to take possession of the City for the Emperor. The Pope endeavour'd to revenge his Son's Death, but without success; and the Marquess of *Messa* employ'd by him was publickly Beheaded at *Milan*, by *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*. The Emperor spent with continual fatigue, fell dangerously sick at *Ausburg*, where he was attended by *Ruy Gomez de Sylva*, sent to him by his Son, whose favourite he was. His Majesty had concluded match between *Maximilian* Eldest Son to the King of the *Romans*, and his Daughter the Princess *Mary*, and order'd Prince *Philip* to come into *Germany* to visit the Low-Countries. *Maximilian* went into *Spain*, where he was marry'd, and remain'd as Governor of those Kingdoms during Prince *Philip's* absence. This Year Dy'd the famous *Ferdinand Cortes*, Discoverer and Conqueror of the mighty Kingdom of *Mexico*. *Alonso de Idiaquez* return'd out of *Spain* to the Emperor, was Robb'd and Murder'd upon the *Elbe* by the *Lutherans*. This same Year Dy'd *Henry VIII.* King of *England*. 1547

The Emperor sick.

Death of Cortes, and
Henry VIII. K. of
England.

C H A P. XXX.

The Interim Publish'd in Germany, touching Matters of Religion; the Emperor's Instructions to Prince Philip, who comes into the Low-Countries; Actions of Dragut the Pyrate, and taking of the City Africa from him.

1548. *Of the Interim.* I. POPE Paul III. forgetting his Age, Profession and Character, Breath'd nothing but Revenge for the Death of his Son *Peter Lenys* before mention'd. He omitted nothing that might be prejudicial to *Andrew Doria*, and enter'd into a League against the Emperor with *Henry King of France*, and the *Swiss Cantons*, and not so satisfy'd, remov'd the General Council then held at *Trent*, to *Bononia*, notwithstanding the Emperor, with much difficulty, had prevail'd with some of the *Lutheran Princes* to send their Ministers to the first of these places; and now they all took the advantage of this removal to refuse sending any, because they had always insisted upon having the Council held in *Germany*, and in hatred to the Pope they refus'd to go into *Italy*. His Majesty seeing how unsettled Affairs were, appointed some able Divines to compose a Rule to be observ'd in *Germany* in matters of Religion, till a Council had fully settled it. This was the Book call'd, *The Interim*, on account of which many have presum'd to slander the Emperor, as if he intruded upon the Pope's Perogative, whereas in truth he did it because

because the *Germans* had such an aversion for the Pope, that they would have receiv'd nothing that came from him; and there was none in that case so fit to appoint those Divines, as he who was their Sovereign, well belov'd, and had so lately punish'd their Insolency. The Book was recommended by His Majesty as the means to preserve Peace in the Empire, and the Elector of *Mentz*, in the Name of all the Empire, promis'd it should be observ'd; but His Majesty being call'd out of *Germany* by other Affairs, the *Germans* follow'd their own Heads. The City *Constance* on the Borders of *Switzerland*, insisted upon unreasonable Conditions before it would submit it self to the Emperor. He sent Colonel *Alonso Vivas* with his Regiment of *Spaniards* to reduce it. They possess'd themselves of the Suburbs, and having several times attack'd the City with some execution on both sides, at last their Colonel *Alonso Vivas* was Kill'd with a Musket-shot, in revenge for whose Death they Burnt an Hundred Citizens in their Houses. At last, the City surrender'd itself to the King of the Romans, who settled the Government of it. Having now concluded his Affairs in *Germany*, the Emperor set out for *Ausburg*, and passing through *Ulm*, *Spire*, *Meiz*, *Cologn* and *Sirasburg*, plac'd Catholick Magistrates in them, and so came into *Flanders* with the Elector of *Saxony* and *Lantsgrave of Hesse* in Company.

2. It was mention'd before, that the Emperor had sent Orders into *Spain* for his Son Prince *Philip* to come to him, and to leave the Archduke *Maximilian* Governor in his stead. His Majesty fearing lest the Distempers that increas'd upon him might snatch him away before the arrival of his Son, sent him Instructions in Writing for the government of himself and Kingdoms, the substance whereof was, That he place all his Confidence in God, be very Obedient to the Church, Zealous for the Catholick Religion, and take care to see the Council of *Trent* brought to a happy Conclusion, in case the Emperor himself should not live to do it; That he choose worthy Persons for all Benefices, endeavour to pre-

*The Empe-
ror's Instru-
ctions to his
Son Prince
Philip.*

serve Peace, and pay the Debts of the Crown; That he always keep a good understanding with the King of the *Romans*, for their mutual Security, and endeavour to Assist and Support him against all his Enemies; That he do not carry Money out of *Spain*, unless for the Service of *Flanders*: That he observe the Peace with the *Turk*, endeavour to be in Amity with the Electors, and take no *Swiss* into his Service, when he can have other *Germans*: That he labour to be reconcil'd to the Pope, yet approving of what D. *Ferdinand Gonzaga* did at *Plasencia*, except the Death of *Philip Lewis* the Pope's Son: That when the Pope Dies, he use his Interest to have such a one chosen, as may be for the good of *Christendom*: That he be submissive to the Pope in all things that are not prejudicial to his Crown: That he preserve the Friendship of all the *Italian* Princes, particularly the Duke of *Florence*: That he Temporize with *Ferrara*, Confide in *Mantua*, keep *Genoa* in his Interest, protect *Luca* and *Siena*, never pardon Count *Galeote*, endeavour to be at Peace with *France*, Defend and Maintain what his Predecessors have left him, and give neither the Pope nor *Venetians* any occasion to break with him: That he administer Impartial Justice in *Naples* and *Milan*, maintain some *Spanish* Forces in those Parts, keep up the Gallies of *Spain*, *Naples*, and *Sicily*, endeavour to obtain a Neutrality for *Burgundy* in time of War, and to have a Sum of Money ready upon all Emergencies in *Flanders*, where the Towns are well fortify'd and dispos'd to resist the *French*: That he be not concern'd for *Spain*, where the *French* can never gain much, but be watchful that they send no Fleet to the *West-Indies*: That he never give any thing upon any Treaty with *France*, nor forget his just Title to *Burgundy*, or the Restitution of *Hedin*, yet not so as to make War upon this account: That he put it not into the power of *France* to disturb the Peace of *Italy*, nor consent any part of *Savoy* or *Piemont* be surrender'd up to them to restore the rest: That he endeavour to pay the Pensions appointed the Duke of *Savoy* and his Son, but do not make War to

to restore them, unless well back'd by the Empire, or *England*; That he permit the said Duke to enjoy the Profits of those Lands in which there are Imperial Forces, but withdraw them not for fear of the *French*; particularly, that he be very careful of the Castle of *Nize*: That he endeavour to be in Amity with *England*, agree with the *Scots* about Trade and Commerce, there being nothing else to be expected from them; and observe the Treaty concluded with the King of *Denmark*: That he be careful in his choice of good Viceroyes and Governours, to secure the Peace of his Dominions; and have special regard to the Affairs of the *West-Indies*: That he Marry again, and that if it could be conveniently, with a Daughter of *France*, or else the Daughter of the King of the *Romans*: That the Princess *Mary* be marry'd to the Archduke *Maximilian*, and Princess *Joanna* to the Prince of *Portugal*; and, That he fulfil his and the Empress's last Wills.

3. Prince *Philip*, before his departure out of *Spain*, held the Cortes at *Valladolid*, where he found but little compliance among them. There he alter'd his Family, as his Father had appointed, and was serv'd after the manner of *Burgundy*. About the middle of *September*, *Maximilian* the Archduke came to *Valladolid*, and there marry'd the Princess *Mary*. On the 1st of *October*, Prince *Philip* departed *Valladolid* for *Flanders*, leaving his newly-marry'd Sister and Brother-in-law to Govern *Castile* and *Aragon*. He embark'd at *Empurias*, and land'd in *Italy*, cross'd part of it, and all *Germany*, and arriv'd safe at *Brussels*, whence he took a progress through the Low-Countries, being magnificently receiv'd in all Places, and sworn Heir of those Countries. On the 10th of *November* dy'd Pope *Paul* the 3d, and was succeeded by *John Maria* Cardinal de *Monce*, a most virtuous Man, who took the Name of *Julius* the 3d. In the Year 1549, the *Bohemians*, which Kingdom was before Elective, swore Allegiance to the Archduke *Maximilian* and his Heirs entailing their Crown upon him and them. In *Spain*, great application was us'd to

Prince Philip in Flanders.

Bohemia is entailed

discover who they were that convey'd Money and Plate out of the Kingdom, but nothing was found. In *October*, *Mary* the new Queen of *Bohemia*, Wife to *Maximilian*, was Deliver'd at *Cigales*, 2 Leagues from *Valladolid*, of the Princess *Anne*, afterwards Queen of *Spain*, and Wife to *Philip III.* The Body of the Princess *Mary*, first Wife to King *Philip*, and Mother to the unfortunate Prince *Charles*, was taken from the Church of *S. Paul*, and convey'd in great Pomp to *Valladolid*. This, tho' short, is all the account I find of this Year, 1549.

1550.
Emperor
returns to
Germany.

4. The Emperor was still at *Brussels* at the beginning of the Year 1550. very desirous to return into *Germany* to settle the Affairs of Religion, which began again to be disturb'd, but kept back by his Indisposition and want of Health, which had oblig'd him to send for Prince *Philip* out of *Spain*. Not being able to set out sooner, he appointed the Diet to meet at *Ausburg* on the 25th of *June*. On the last Day of *May*, His Majesty set out for *Germany*, came to *Ausburg*, but many that ought to be present at the Diet, were not there on the 26th of *July*; and indeed, several of them were resolv'd neither to appear themselves, nor send their Representatives, knowing the Emperor's design was to settle the Catholick Religion. *Maurice*, Duke of *Saxony*, for whom the Emperor had done all that Man could do, and given him the Electorate taken from *John Frederick* of *Saxony*, now flew in His Majesty's Face; because having often made application for the *Lantsgrave's* Liberty, he had been deny'd. Duke *Maurice* was at this time making War upon the Duke of *Magdeburg*, at the expence of the Empire, which had appointed him General, and allow'd him 60000 Florins a Month for the Charge of the War. Here again the Emperor us'd Endeavours that his Son Prince *Philip* might succeed him in the Empire; but meeting with great Opposition from *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans*, and his Son *Maximilian*, who was come purposely out of *Spain*, he never mention'd it again. The *Lantsgrave* twice contriv'd to make his Escape, but being both times discover'd, and the Conspirators punish'd, he was

was kept closer, and had no hopes left of getting his Liberty, but by means of D. Maurice.

5. About this time *Dragut* the Pyrate infested the Coasts of the Mediterranean, and therefore it will not be amiss here once for all to give a short Account of him. He was Born in *Anatolia* of Base Parentage, went a Cabbin-Boy to Sea, serv'd *Barbarussa*, who made an Infamous use of him, and at last gave him a small Ship, and Commission to Command all other *Turkish* Pyrates. Being in this Post, he took certain Gallies from a *Venetian* Proveditore, and having gather'd eleven Sail, did much Harm. *Andrew Doria* sent his Nephew *John Doria* with ten Gallies against him, who joining those of *Sicily*, pursu'd and surpriz'd him in *Corfica*, where he took him and all his Vessels. *Dragut* was put to the Oar, and so continu'd four Years, when he was releas'd by *Andrew Doria*. Being at Liberty, he fell to his Profession, Ruining all he met with, till at the end of four Years, being grown Rich, he set out a Squadron of 14 Sail, and other Pyrates joining him, made up 26. He began to slight *Barbarussa*, his Benefactor, and marry'd the Daughter of a Rich Moor at *Gelvez*, where he settled his Residence. The Viceroy's of *Naples* and *Sicily* spent a whole Summer in search of him, but to no purpose, only they Burnt some Ships in the Docks at *Gelvez*. In 1548, he Ravag'd the Coast of *Naples*, took many Captives, and a Galley of *Malta*, with which he sail'd over to *Tunex*, and having settled strict Amity with that King, return'd to *Gelvez*. In 1549, *Andrew Doria* with his own Fleet and the Gallies of *Naples* and *Sicily*, rang'd the Mediterranean in quest of *Dragut*, but could never find him. *Dragut* understanding there was no safety for him, unless he had some Place of Strength to retire to, possess'd himself of *Monasterio* and *Cuza*, on the Coast of *Africk*, at the beginning of the year 1550, those Places receiving him without any Opposition. He endeavour'd to gain the Affections of the Inhabitants of *Africa*, a strong City not far from the other two; but they refusing his feign'd Kindness, he gain'd admittance, and made himself

*Actions of
Dragut the
Pyrate.*

self Master of it by the Treachery of *Brambarac*, one of the Governors of the Place. It is Advantageously seated on a Rock, almost encompass'd with the Sea, with a good Wall, and a Tower at every thirty Foot distance; that part where it joins to the Continent, which is but 260 Paces in Length, defended by a strong Rampart, and six large Towers, four of them square, and the other two round. The whole Circumference of the Place was about 5340 Paces; it has no Harbour, but good Anchoring; and at that time contain'd 1500 Families, and room for as many more. *Dragut* well pleas'd with his Conquest, Erected a strong Castle in it, and then put to Sea again, carrying 25 of the principal Inhabitants with him, as Hostages. Prince *Doria* set out again with 50 Gallies in search of him; and being drove by Stress of Weather near *Africa*, some *Arabs* came down and offer'd to assist him with 6000 Horse, if he would recover that City from *Dragut*. He sent two Officers with them to view the Place; which having done, they gave him an Account of what they had seen, and then he went himself to take a view of it next the Sea. He call'd a Council of War, where it was concluded to be impracticable to Besiege the Place; for which reason they sail'd on, and landed at *Monasterio*, which they took and burnt. Prince *Doria* sail'd away to *Goleta*, where, after some Debate, it was agreed to lay Siege to *Africa*. The Lord of *Quernan*, an Enemy to *Dragut's* Prosperity, engag'd to furnish 800 *Arabs*, who were to secure the Backs of the Christians on the Land-side. *D. Garcia de Toledo* sent to *Naples* and *Sicily* for Supplies and Necessaries to carry on the Siege, obtain'd all he desir'd at *Naples*, and *John de Vega*, Viceroy of *Sicily*, was so pleas'd with the Undertaking, that he resolv'd to go in Person with all the Force he could make. *Hesarrayz*, Governor of *Africa*, suspected there was some Design against him, tho' it was carry'd very privately.

Siege of
Africa.

6. All the Fleet being join'd, consisting of the Gallies of *Genoa*, *Naples*, *Sicily*, the Pope, the Duke of *Florence*, and Knights of *Malta*, they sail'd over to *Africa*,

Africa, and landed a mile from the Place, on the 28th of *June*. Immediately they advanc'd towards the Town; and after a small Skirmish with some *Infidels* that came out of it, took their Post and encamp't on a Hill at 600 Paces distance from the City, Intrenching strongly, and making Huts to secure themselves against the violent Heat of the Day, and cold Dew of the Night. Thus *Africa* was hemm'd in on the Land, and the Fleet at Sea hinder'd any Relief from coming to it that way. The Besieg'd us'd all necessary Precautions for their future Security, disposing their Affairs so as to make a vigorous Defence. Next Day, being the 20th, the Cannon was landed, and that Night two Batteries rais'd, one of 10, the other of 18 pieces of Cannon, with Lines of Communication, tho' it was very troublesome casting up of Works, because the Ground was all Sand, and moulder'd away as it was trod. On the 1st of *July*, the Batteries began to play, and the Viceroy caus'd Fascine to be brought from the Olive-Gardens a mile off, because the sandy Earth made no Trenches fit for Service. Having Batter'd the Place the space of eight Days, and made a Breach, they resolv'd to give a general Assault; but the Day appointed for it proving Stormy, it was put off, because the Gallies could not play their part. That Night, two Renegado's came over and gave Intelligence, That it would be dangerous Attacking by the way of the Breach, because of the many Works the Besieged had made within. Nevertheless, an Assault was given, but there being no means provided to pass the Ditch, which was deep and wide, the Christians were repuls'd with the loss of 14 Men Kill'd, and about 80 Wounded. The Besiegers brought their Camp into a narrower compass, sent to *Naples*, *Sicily*, and *Golea* for Supplies; and having receiv'd them, drew nearer to the Town, advancing their Batteries 210 paces. His Imperial Majesty sent Orders to *Milan*, *Genoa*, and *Florence*, to supply his Forces before *Africa*, with all things they stood in need of.

Dragut
attempts to
relieve A-
frica.

7. *Dragut* in the mean while was abroad ravaging all the Coasts of the Kingdome of *Valencia*, and in his return receiv'd advice of the taking of *Monasterio* and *Cuza*, and the Siege of *Africa*. He hasten'd back to *Gelves*, and having there and in other places, gather'd 3700 Foot and 60 Horse, sent a Messenger to the Besieg'd, to order them to be ready to make a great Sally on the twenty fifth of *July*, before break of Day, at which time he would himself attack the Christian Camp. The Messenger got safe into the Town, and *Dragut* with his Forces came undiscover'd to the Olive-Gardens, where the Christians, as was said, us'd to fetch their Fascine. The Viceroy having receiv'd some intelligence that there were *Moores* abroad, tho' he did not know that *Dragut* was come to relieve the Town, instead of one Company that us'd to march with the Pioneers that went for Fascine, order'd three and went with them himself. These three Companies might make about 900 Men. *Dragut* having discover'd them drew up his Forces, and being so much superior in Number, doubted not of cutting them all off; but the Cannon from the Camp and Gallies reaching him he drew back. *Lewis Perez* Governor of *Goleta*, Riding about to keep the *Spaniards* in their Ranks, was shot Dead, and there ensu'd a Bloody Fray about carrying off his Body; but at last the Christians prevail'd and sent it to the Camp. The Pioneers having made their Fascine, the Viceroy began to retire in good Order; but *Dragut* fearing he would get off with the Fascine, divided his Men, causing one part to attack him in the Front, and the other in the Rear. Thus they Kill'd above forty Men and Wounded many more, which made the Viceroy command the Pioneers to lay down their Fascine, and with their Axes, Stones, or such Weapons as they had, be aiding to the Soldiers, who, with this assistance, got out of the Olive-Garden, but with the loss of the Captain of the Pioneers. To be short, three Companies were sent to the Camp to relieve the Viceroy; the Besieg'd observing it, Sally'd and were bravely receiv'd; *Dragut* did as much as Man could to break through to the

the

the Town, but they all strove in vain; and after five Hours Engagement, he return'd to his Post in the Olive-Gardens, and the Besieg'd to the Town. This Repulse made the Infidels despair of relieving the Town without a greater Power; and the Lord of *Querra*, who till then had temporiz'd with him, then declar'd himself, sending to Congratulate the Viceroy upon his good Success.

8. On the sixth of *September* there arriv'd in the Camp four Companies of *Spaniards*, being about 1200 Men from *Italy*, with Supplies of Ammunition and Provisions. An Ingenier come from *Sicily*, discover'd a weak place in the Wall next the Sea, and planting a Battery of twenty Pieces of Cannon against it, in a short time made a considerable Breach. *Hessarraiz* the Governor clear'd away the Rubbish by Night, and threw up Works within, but could not repair the damage he receiv'd. This Battery not sufficing, two Gallies were fast grappl'd together, and parapets rais'd on them, where they planted more Cannon, and moving them conveniently, they batter'd the Curtin next the Sea, all the other Gallies coming up to second them: Four pieces of Cannon more were planted on a point of Land that look'd upon the same Curtin, and all of them play'd so incessantly, that a Gun aboard one of the Pope's Gallies burst. The Land Batteries play'd thirteen Days together, and those from the Sea two. All things being dispos'd for an Assault, and the Breaches in a good Condition, on the tenth of *September* in the Morning the City was Bombarded, and after that the Viceroy gave the Signal for the Assault, which was carry'd on in three several places at once. To relate the particulars of this Bloody Action would be too tedious, and not so proper in such a History; but to make short, the Infidels defended the Town with the utmost Bravery and Resolution, and the Christians show'd no less in attacking and gaining Ground upon them, which yet they did but slowly, and with the expence of many Lives. However they enter'd the place with much slaughter on both sides, and made themselves Masters of it. Of the Christians

Prosecution of the Siege.

Africa taken.

Christians above 500 were Kill'd, among whom many of Note, and above 1000 Wounded, whereof many Dy'd afterwards. Of the Infidels above 950 Perish'd, besides a multitude Wounded. The Dead and Prisoners amounted to above 7000 Men, Women and Children. Having order'd all things for the security of the City, and left his Son D. *Alvaro de Vega* Governor of *Africa*, with a Garrison of 1000 *Spaniards*, the Viceroy with 20 Gallies Sail'd towards *Gelves*, to seek out *Dragut*, who he heard was there, and at variance with the Xequé, or Lord of that place. *Dragut* after the Repulse he receiv'd in the attempt to relieve *Africa*, went himself to several parts to gather greater Forces to drive the Christians from the Siege: Some, for fear of offending the Emperor, refus'd him, others granted Supplies according to their Ability. Being thus busie. News was brought him that *Africa* was taken, which broke all his measures, and therefore he sent to acquaint the Grand Signior with his Loss, and beg his protection. The *Turk* offer'd him the command of his Fleet to recover *Africa*, or revenge the Loss. *Dragut* joyfully accepted of the Favour offer'd him, and with 25 Sail came to *Sicily* to be reveng'd on *John de Vega*, but being disappointed there, went to vent his Fury in other Parts, as we shall see hereafter. The *Turk* pretended the taking of *Africa* was a breach of the Truce concluded between him, the Emperor, and King *Ferdinand* for five Years, and demanded satisfaction; but the Emperor answer'd, That Truces made between Princes did not comprehend Pirates and Robbers, and that *Dragut* was none of his Subject, his Dominions in *Africa* being inconsiderable. The Infidel incens'd at this Answer, declar'd War against Christendom, which prov'd not so successful to him as he hop'd.

C H A P. XXXI.

War with France carry'd on in Flanders and Piemont. Further Actions of the Turks. War with the Lutherans in Germany, and Peace concluded. Siena revolts, and is reduc'd. Philip Prince of Spain Marries Queen Mary of England.

King Henry who had succeeded his Father in the ^{1551.} Crown of France, had also Inherited all his ^{War with} Qualities; for he was of a restless Spirit, Warlike, ^{France re-} Envious of the Emperor's Prosperity, and an utter ^{new'd.} Enemy to him. This his natural Disposition made him dislike the Peace his Father had two Years before concluded with the Emperor; and being now resolv'd upon War, he sought to Strengthen himself with Alliances in Italy. The first he drew to his Party, was *Octavian Farnesus*; who to revenge his Father's Death, in which he believ'd the Emperor to be concern'd, concluded a Treaty with the King, receiv'd a French Garison into *Parma*, *Peter Strozzi*, an Out-law of Florence, raising Men in *Mirandola* for that Service; this Proceeding so incens'd the Pope, that he appointed *John Baptist de Monte* his Nephew, his General, and order'd him to lay Siege to *Mirandola*; which he did at the same time as by the Emperor's Command, *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* fate down before *Parma*. *K. Henry* had also contriv'd to divide *Germany*, and had drawn Duke *Maurice*, who was offended at the Emperor for not releasing the *Lansgrave*, to join in League with him; nor was this all, the *Turk* was one of his Confederates, and to send his Fleet to join that of

France, as had been done before. Being thus provided, he commenc'd the War seizing eleven *Flemish* Ships, and a *Spanish* Galley; for which reason; *Q. Mary* Governess of *Flanders* seiz'd all the Effects of the *French*, and proclaim'd War.

Dragut
at Sea.

2. *Dragut* Encourag'd by the *Turk* and King of *France*, resolv'd to revenge himself for the loss of *Africa*; and in the beginning of *April* 1551, when the *French* had commenc'd the War, he began to scour the Seas with twenty *Turkish* Galleys. Being disappointed of his Designs in *Sicily*, he sail'd round *Malta*, and thence towards *Calabria*, Plunder'd a Village, Fought two *Venetian* Ships, but could not take them, thirty Galleys coming up to their relief, and went away to *Gelyez*, resolving to cut off the Supplies design'd for *Africa*. *Andrew Doria* having furnish'd the Place, sail'd away after the Pyrate, and found him in the Channel of *Cantara*, where he thought he could not Escape; but he made his way over the Flats, and got off at the other end of the Channel; so *Doria* return'd home with six Ships of Infidels he had taken: We said before, how the *Grand Seignior* look'd upon the Emperor's taking of *Africa*, as a breach of the five Years Truce, would admit of no Excuse, but was for revenging that Loss, by open War; whereupon the Emperor gave all necessary Orders, and great Industry was us'd in securing the Coasts of *Naples*, *Sicily*, and other Islands; and furnishing all their Garisons, as well as those on the Coast of *Africk*, the Great Master of *Malta* at the same time taking all imaginable Measures for the Security of his Island, against which it was believ'd the *Turkish* Fleet was design'd. *Sinan Bassa* was made Admiral of that Fleet; but because he was Young, *Salac* and *Dragut* were given him as Councillors and Associates. His Force consisted of 90 Galleys, 50 Galliot, and other Vessels of Pyrates, three great Ships to carry Ammunition and Provisions, and 10000 Land-Men.

Gozo and Tripoli ta- After doing some Harm in *Sicily*, he Landed at *Malta*; but finding the Place too Strong, and well
ken by the provided, went off again to *Gozo*, which after
Turks. some Opposition he took, carrying away 6000 Captives.

tives. Thence he sail'd over to *Tripoli*; and having batter'd the Place, it was safely deliver'd to him by the Governor, and all the Inhabitants and Garison, contrary to Articles, made Prisoners. The Great Master Hang'd some that were convicted of having a hand in delivering of *Tripoli*, and degraded the Knights in order to execute them; but the King of *France* demanded to have them deliver'd to him, and took much pains to clear himself of the Imputation of having been the cause of the loss of that Place, but could never wipe off the Stain of sending his Embassador to the *Turkish* Camp.

3. At this time, the War was carry'd on in *Italy*, Peace between the Pope and Parma. but by the Mediation of some worthy Persons, they were reconcil'd, and the Siege rais'd from before *Mirandula* and *Parma*, that Duke being afterwards restor'd to the Emperor's Favour, and his Wife made Governess of the Low-Countries. In *July*, this Year 1551, Prince *Philip* having receiv'd ample Commission from the Emperor to Govern the Kingdoms and Dominions of *Spain*, with as full Power, as if he were actually King, set out for *Ausburg*, where his Father then was, and embarking at *Genoa* on the Gallies of *Andrew Doria*, arriv'd safe at *Barcelona*. The Queens, *Mary* and *Elenor*, Sisters to the Emperor, Assembled the States in *Flanders*, of whom they obtain'd Money to carry on the War against *France*, and rais'd Forces, whereof *Martin Van Rosen* had the Command, who routed the Duke of *Nevers*, and kept the Duke of *Vendosme* in play, doing him much harm, tho' considerably inferior to him in Number of Men. Duke *Maurice* of *Saxony*, tho' he ow'd all he had to the Emperor; yet he bore him no good will, being himself a zealous *Lutheran*, and deeply engag'd in the *Lantsgrave's* Cause. For this reason he was slack in his proceedings against the City of *Magdeburg*, which he had now held Besieg'd a Year at the publick Charge of the Empire, and to be at leisure to carry on his Designs, Capitulated with that City, bringing it in appearance to a full compliance with the Emperor, but underhand he dealt with the Magistrates, and

D. Maurice
practices
against the
Emperor.

incens'd them against him, joining in League with them for the releasing of the *Lantgrave*. The same he did with *Henry K. of France*, who engag'd to pay the *Germans* 100000 Ducats per Month to pay their Troops, promising if the Emperor took the Field, to keep an Army on the Frontiers of *Germany*, and another in *Flanders*. *Maurice*, the more to inflame the *German Princes* against His Imperial Majesty, persuaded them to intercede for the *Lantgrave's* Liberty, which they all did at *Inspruck*, on the first of *December* this same Year; and His Majesty not granting their Request, they highly resented it, and resolv'd upon the War, that broke out the following Year.

1552.
Lutherans
& French
begin the
War.

4. The League was carry'd on with such Secrecy and Expedition, that before the Emperor could provide against it, or scarce secure his Person, then at *Inspruck*, the Confederates had a good Army in the Field in *March*, this Year 1552. Duke *Ferdinand Gonzaga* had enough to do to defend *Clarasco* in *Piedmont*, King *Ferdinand* was at *Vienna*, the King his Son at *Prague*, the Brave *Q. Mary* rais'd a good Army, but was at too great a distance in *Flanders*. The Confederate Army first enter'd *Suabia*, and possessing themselves of several Places, turn'd out the Catholic and put in Lutheran Magistrates. *Ausburg* open'd the Gates to them; they fate down before *Ulm*, in which there was an Imperial Garrison; and having receiv'd 18000 Florins, march'd on towards *Inspruck*, hoping either to secure the Emperor, or drive him out of *Germany*. At the same time, the *French Army* under the Command of the Constable *Montmorency*, march'd into *Lorraine*, and took *Toul*, *Verdun*, and *Metz* by Treachery, demanding only passage through them into *Germany*, and then securing them with strong Garrisons. *K. Henry* hearing how Successful his Army had been, went to *Nancy*, where he seiz'd the Infant Duke of *Lorraine*, sending him to be Bred at *Paris*, remov'd his Mother from the Government of him and his Country, and took the Care of both upon himself. From *Nancy* he went to *Pont a Mousson*, and thence to *Metz*, which Place he Fortify'd,
and

and Built a Cittadel to keep it in awe. It was now the latter end of *April*, when *K. Henry* march'd from *Metz* towards *Treves*, thinking to make himself Maister of it by the same Arts, but they had taken warning by his Infidelity in *Lorraine*, and so had the Inhabitants of *Strasburg*, whether he came after a troublesome March; both those Places refusing to admit him upon any Terms whatsoever. *Hagenaw* would have done the same, but the Cannon being planted against it, submitted upon force, being unable to oppose him. *Wisbourg* did the like. There he receiv'd Embassadors from the *Lutherans*, thanking him for his Assistance, but desiring him not to advance any further, because the Emperor was reduc'd to such a Condition, that he must of necessity comply with their Demands. This, in plain terms, was dismissing the King; and had he attempted to proceed, they would (doubtless) have oppos'd him. Three things oblig'd the King to return into *France* with his Army: The 1st was, That *Mary* the Heroine Governess of the Low-Countries, had taken *Stenay*. The 2d, That Duke *Maurice* was making his Peace with the Emperor: And the 3d was, Want of Provisions. As soon as he drew near *Flanders*, the Queen not able to cope with him, retir'd; and he entring the Country of *Luxemburg*, took *Roc-de-Mars*. *Mont S. Jean*, *Solignee*, *Danvilliers*, *Tvoy*, *Montmidy*, *Lumes*, *Trelon*, and *Glaion*, where all sorts of Inhuman Barbarities were committed, as Plundering, Massacring, Burning, and reducing all these Places to meer heaps of Rubbish and Ashes. The *French* in *Picardy* suffer'd for what their King did in *Luxemburg* for the Count *de Reux*, who Commanded the *Flemish* Army, took and burnt to the Ground *Noyon*, *Nesle*, *Chauny*, *Roye*, *Felembrey*, and above 800 Villages; and lastly, had the Town of *Hesdin* surrender'd to him, into which he put a good Garison: And thus ended the War for this Year in the Low-Countries; the King putting his Army into Garisons about the middle of *July*, it being extremely harrass'd and weakened with long toilsome Marches, Want, and the great Rains.

¶ *The Em- 5. We left Duke Maurice at the head of the Lu-*
peror's d'heran Army marching towards Inspruck. The
by the Re- Emperor sent what Men he could gather, to secure
bels and in the pass of Chiufa, but they being not above 800,
danger. were easily beat off several of them Kill'd, and all
their Ammunition taken. This done the Duke
march'd over those uncoth Mountains with such Ce-
lerity, that he was near surprizing the Emperor at
Inspruck, who is reported to have made his escape
out at one Gate of the City at mid-Night, as the
Enemy was entring at another. His Majesty went
away to Villac, and the Lutherans plunder'd part of
his Equippage left behind in the hurry, killing
some of his Servants. The Emperor had before releas'd
the Duke of Saxony, who chose rather to go
away with His Majesty, than stay behind with Duke
Maurice. The brave Queen Mary understanding
the danger her Brother was in, concluded a League
at Aquisgran, with some Princes, in defence of the
Emperor and Catholick Religion. At the same
time King Ferdinand pass'd between His Majesty
and Duke Maurice with Proposals of Peace, and
after much Labour and Pains taken, brought both
Parties to an Accomodation on the last Day of
July. The principal Articles were, That the Con-
federates lay down their Arms within twelve Days.
That the Lanisgrave be releas'd before the twelfth
of August, he giving Security to perform all he pro-
mis'd the Emperor. That a Diet be held within six
Months to settle Religion. That the Confederates
break the League with France. That the Emperor
pardon all that have engag'd against him, provided
they come in within three Months. That Albertus
of Brandenburg laying down Arms in the said time,
be included in this Treaty. That whosoever shall
violate it be look'd upon as an Enemy to the Em-
pire. The Peace being concluded, the Emperor
return'd to Inspruck, and thence to Ausburg, gather-
ing all the way Forces of Germans, Bohemians, I-
talians and Spaniards, that arriv'd at Genoa with
the Duke of Aiva in July. Albertus of Branden-
burg would not come into the Peace, but did all
the harm he could to the Lands of the Catholicks,
confiding

Peace
 concluded.

confiding in the Assistance he expected from *France*. The *Lanisgrave* was releas'd out of Prison, and honourably conducted into his Country. *John Frederick*, the depos'd Elector and Duke of *Saxony*, was also disinis'd, but never restor'd. His Imperial Majesty was nobly receiv'd and entertain'd at *Strasburg*, and there declar'd the Duke of *Alva* General of his Forces. Thence he march'd with his mighty Army and encamp'd before *Metz* on the twenty second of *October*. The City was strongly Fortify'd, well provided and defended by the Duke of *Guize*, and *Peter Sirozzi* with a Garrison of 8000 chosen Foot and 300 Horse, the very Flower of *France*. Here *Albertus* of *Brandenburg* being disgusted by the *French*, went over to the Emperor with all his Forces. Before he joyn'd him, understanding that the Duke of *Angoulesme* was sent by King *Henry* to cut him off, he went out with his Horse to meet him, routed his Forces, slew 800 of his Men, and took him Prisoner. The Emperor, who had lain at *Thionville* sick of the Gout, came to the Camp on the tenth of *November*. The Town made a vigorous defence, but the Season of the Year defended it much more, for it was impracticable to lie in the Field, 40000 Men of 100000 the Emperor brought before the Place, Dying of Sicknefs caus'd by extream Cold and Wet. This oblig'd His Majesty to raise the Siege, and depart, with so great a disappointment at the Head of the greatest Army he ever had of his own, but there is no Fighting against the Weather.

6. Having gone through the Affairs of the High and Low *Germany*, let us look back to other places, and first to the Rebellion of *Siena* against the Emperor. *Siena* had ever been a free City from the declining of the *Roman* Empire; but being divided into Factions, call'd in a Hundred *Spaniards* under D. *James de Mendoca*, who siding with one party subau'd both, building a Fortrefs at the Gate that looks towards *Florence*, and obliging the Townsmen to carry in their Arms; which made the *Spaniards* hated, and the People contrive how to cast off their Yoak. D. *James de Mendoca* going to

*Revolt of
Siena, and
its Reducti-
on.*

Rome, rais'd 3000 Men to secure *Siena* and other places, giving the command of them to Count *Petillano*, who was privately an Enemy to the *Spaniards*. He being corrupted by the *French* made use of these Men rais'd to oppose the *Turks*, against the *Spaniards* at *Siena*. A Letter was found among the *Spaniards*, giving Advice of the Treachery of Count *Petillano*; the Author of it desiring that half a Quatrin he sent in it, might be kept to put to the other half, which he kept, when occasion was, to discover his Loyalty. Fifty *Spaniards* were sent out upon this Advice to view the City Gate; but Count *Petillano's* Men interposing could not return, and therefore got into the Citadel, and were forc'd to steal away by Night to *Orbitello*. The Duke of *Florence*, who ought to have assisted the *Spaniards*, as being the Emperor's Creature, and to secure himself against the *Sirozzi's*, his mortal Enemies, was inclinable to give ear to some overtures made him by the *French*; but having receiv'd a Letter from the Cardinals of *Compostella* and *Burgos*, demonstrating to him how much it was against his Interest to have the *French* his Neighbours, his Eyes were open'd, and he resolv'd to stand by his Benefactor; the Emperor assisting his Forces in the reduction of *Siena*. At this same time D. *John Manrique de Lara* who was at *Rome* to treat with the Pope, rais'd Men upon his own Charge, joyn'd some Forces of Princes well affected to the Emperor, and march'd to relieve those that maintain'd the Imperial Interest at *Siena*. The Duke of *Florence* sent *Otho de Monteacuto* with 800 Men to assist the *Spaniards* at *Siena*, but they were beaten out. This oblig'd the Duke to furnish the Marquis de *Maringano* with a sufficient Force to beat off the *French* and reduce *Siena*. The Marquis surpriz'd the first Fort they had on the Frontiers, and fortify'd himself there; which done he march'd to *Ayvola*, and after battering it a short time, the Inhabitants open'd the Gates to him. Having left a Garrison there, he advanc'd and without much difficulty made himself Master of *Columba*, *Coquiola*, and *Pindo*, but *Belcaro* making some opposition, many of the Inhabitants

habitants were put to the Sword. *Roffia*, tho' strong and well Garrison'd surrender'd upon Summons. Here the Marquis receiv'd Advice that *Peter Strozzi* was come with considerable Supplies of *French* to succor *Siena*. As he was busie waſting the Country, there came a Man to him pretending to deſert from the City, and offering to betray to him the Caſtle of *Chiuſa*. *Rotolphus Baiglon* was ſent with 600 Men to take in that place, who finding the Draw-Bridge down and the Gate open, went over without any conſideration; but before they could get in at the Gate it was ſhut to, and the Bridge drawn up; ſo that they were enclos'd in a narrow ſpot of Ground and could neither go backwards nor forwards. Then they began to play ſome pieces of Cannon planted on purpoſe, which kill'd moſt of the Men, and among them their Commander *Baiglon*, Brother to the *Prior* of *Capua*, who had contriv'd this piece of Treachery, being in the *French* Service. This done, about 1000 Foot and 400 Horſe ſally'd out of the Caſtle, and fell upon a Company that brought up the Rear of thoſe that had been Slaughter'd, whom they forc'd to retire; but Count *Bagno* coming to their Relief, they repulſ'd their Enemies. Soon after this Loſs the Marquis was reinforc'd with ſome Troops from *Cortona*, and other places, to the number of 4000 Foot, and Fortify'd his Camp. The *Prior* of *Capua* who had Landed with *French* Forces near *Piombino*, was advancing to joyn his Brother *Peter Strozzi*, and burnt the Country as he went. A Peaſant ſeeing his Houſe fir'd, charg'd a Firelock and taking aim at the *Prior*, Shot him Dead, making his eſcape to the Marquis. He, for ſome Days purſu'd and da'd *Strozzi* to Fight, till underſtanding he was conſiderably reinforc'd and ſuperior to him, he retir'd to his Strength. *Strozzi* being Maſter of the Field took the Abby of *S. Bonda*, and left a Garriſon in it, but kept it not long; for the Marquis preſently ſate down before it, and *D. John Manrique* coming to his Aſſiſtance with the Troops he had gather'd, beat off thoſe that came to relieve it, and made himſelf Maſter of the place. Being

resolv'd to put a period to the War, he possess'd himself of the Ways to *Mulin* and *Rapolano*; by which means he cut off the Enemies Provisions, and made them resolve to give him Battle. At the same time, one of the Emperor's Soldiers, who was Prisoner in the *French* Camp, set fire to their Powder, which did such great Harm, that they were much discourag'd, and *Sirozzi* in revenge cruelly caus'd all the Prisoners he had to be put to Death. Want pressing him, he thought to march away undiscover'd, but the Marquis was close at his Heels, and sending a Party of *Spaniards* and *Germans* about a Hill, hemm'd him in, so that when his Men would have Run, they fell upon another Enemy; yet he who was an experienc'd Commander closing them together, got to another Hill, and there made himself Strong. Night came on to hinder further Action, and before next Morning both Sides were reinforc'd with fresh Troops coming in to them. *Sirozzi* was still for marching off, but the Marquis engag'd him again, and sent another Party to fall upon his Rear. The Fight was long doubtful, but at last the Marquis making the last Effort in Person, *Sirozzi* fled towards *Siena*, and some of the *French* to a place call'd *Pozzo*. All of them fortify'd themselves, the Marquis thinking it time enough to compleat his Victory the next Day; but that Night some *Grisons* and other Troops join'd the *French*, which made the Success almost doubtful. The next Day the Battle was renew'd, and *Sirozzi*, after he had behav'd himself with all imaginable Bravery, put to flight, most of his Men being either Kill'd or Wound'ed. The Marquis pursu'd him so close, that he shut him up in *Luzignano*, whence he stole privately away, and got into *France*, and the Town was immediately surrender'd. *Siena* was presently besieg'd; and having held out 15 Months, surrender'd on the 22th of *April* 1555, 2000 *Spaniards* taking possession of the Place. *Porto Hercoles* was next, and stood three Assaults, the last of which it was taken in *June* 1555. All other places belonging to the State of *Siena* submitted, and Cardinal *Medoca* was appointed Governor of it. The Marquis

quis de *Marignano* was receiv'd with great Honour at *Florence*, as he well deserv'd, for his brave Actions, having rais'd himself from a poor Soldier, to be General of great Armies.

7. The *Turkish* Fleet of 103 Gallies, under the Command of *Sinan* at the Sollicitation of the King of *France*, came upon the Coast of *Italy*, the French Embassador with three of his Master's Gallies keeping along with it. They run along the Coast of *Naples*, doing much Harm, Plundering and Burning the Country, and carrying away abundance of Captives. Then hearing that *Andrew Doria* was at Sea, lay lurking at the Island *Ponca*, till *Doria* passing by, they fell upon seven of his Gallies, and took them. This done, Provisions growing scarce, they return'd to *Constantinople*. This Year, Prince *Philip* held the Cortes at *Monzon*, but with no satisfaction; and Princess *Joanna* his Sister went to *Portugal* to Marry Prince *John*. Twenty eight Bishops, and seventy Divines and Canonists went from *Spain* to the Council of *Trent*.

8. The Emperor broke up the Siege of *Metz* at the beginning of the Year 1553, as was said before, and return'd to *Flanders*, ordering the Troops of *D. Albertus* of *Brandenburg* to Quarter about *Treves* till paid off; and then he, full of Money, march'd away into *Germany*, to continue the War he had commenc'd against *Nurenberg* and *Franconia*. Several Princes endeavour'd to bring him to an Accommodation, but not prevailing, they join'd in *League* against him. He with wonderful Celerity broke into *Saxony*; and *D. Maurice* who could not prevent, pursu'd him to obviate the Mischiefs he would do in the Country. They met near the River *Weser*, and came to a Battle, in which *Albertus* was routed; but the Victorious *Maurice* came off so desperately Wounded, that he soon dy'd in the prime of his Age, being but 33 Years Old. *Albertus* had almost 3000 Horse Kill'd; and his Foot seeing their Slaughter, laid down their Arms without fighting. *Albertus* gather'd all the Forces he could to try Fortune again; and Engaging with the Duke of *Brunswick*, the Confederate General, was again

Over-

Overthrown with great Loss. The Imperial Chamber declar'd him a publick Enemy, and as such Banish'd him *Germany*.

9. The War in *Picardy* between the *Imperialists* and *French*, was carry'd on with as much Desolation, as if they had been *Infidels*. This Year, before the Summer came on, *Anthony*, Duke of *Vendosme*, besieg'd and took *Hesdin*, which the Emperor resenting, he gather'd his Forces, and sent them under the Count de *Reux* to Besiege *Terouenne*. He Batter'd the Place; and having made a breach, was preparing for a general Assault, when he fell Sick, and Dy'd. *Adrian de Reux* succeeded him in Command, and Storm'd the Place: But tho' his Men behav'd themselves with the utmost Bravery, and held the Attack the space of ten Hours, they were repuls'd, and forc'd to desist. Some time after, *Philibert Emanuel* Prince of *Piemont* came into the Camp to Command as General; he rais'd two more Batteries, made Breaches, and gave the Assault; in the heat of it, the Besieg'd hung out a White Flag, and sent to Capitulate; but the *Spaniards*, without waiting the Event, broke in, and put most of the Garison to the Sword. The City was Plunder'd, and Raz'd even with the Ground; so that there is scarce any Footstep of it left. It was taken on the 10th of *June* 1553. Hence the Prince remov'd, and sat down before *Hesdin*; the Town was easily taken, but the Castle held out, which was so batter'd and undermin'd, that they were upon Surrendring, when the Powder in it took fire, and spreading into the Mines, blew all up, killing 300 Men, and leaving the Place open to the *Imperialists*, who totally destroy'd it, as they had done *Terouenne*. This hapned on the 28th of *July*. The K. of *France* was now come to his Army, and Prince *Philibert* finding himself inferior to him, retir'd to *Valenciennes*, the King following him close to that Place, where he lay till the 22th of *September*; when understanding that the Emperor was expected in the Army, which was much increas'd, he broke up, and put his Forces into Garison, the *Imperialists* doing the same, because there

was

Terouenne
taken and
destroy'd.

Hesdin le-
vell'd with
the Ground.

was no keeping the Field, by reason of the great Rains.

10. In *Lombardy*, nothing considerable was done on either side. *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* the Emperor's General, took some Places of small Note; and *Brisac* the French Commander, by Intelligence, surpriz'd the Town of *Vercelli* in *Piemont*; but the Governour and Garison retir'd into the Cittadel, where they maintain'd themselves, till *D. Ferdinand* coming to their Assistance, the Enemy quitted the City, and retir'd. When *Sinan* the Turkish Admiral return'd to *Constantinople*, as was said before, the Prince of *Salerno*, a *Neapolitan* Out-law, was sent after him, who prevail'd with the Grand Signior to send his Fleet again to the Assistance of *France*, upon very advantageous Articles to the Infidel. Accordingly *Sinan* sail'd from *Galipoli* in the beginning of *May*, with 150 Vessels of all sorts, 20 whereof were French Gallies, and 50 belonging to Pyrates. He run along the Coasts of *Apulia* and *Calabria* without doing much Harm, attempting several places in *Sicily*, but found it well provided, and therefore passing on to *Corsica*, took *Bastda* and *Bonifacio*, where they carry'd away none but such as were willing to go with them, the Cannon, 4000 Ducats in ready Money, and Hostages for 6000 more. Thus the War broke out in *Corsica*, whither Monsieur de *Termes* went with 5000 Foot. To Oppose him, 27 Gallies and 12 Ships, with 9000 Land-men, and soon after 2500 Spaniards more were sent. This Army was broke up by reason of Sicknes, yet they recover'd *Bastda* and other small Places, and the French kept *Bonifacio*, and some Villages. *Sinan* return'd to *Constantinople*, and thus ended the War for this Year.

11. This same Year a Match was propos'd and agreed upon between *P. Philip* of *Spain*, and *Q. Mary* of *England*, but not consummated till the following Year 1554, when the Prince on the 13th of *July* embark'd at *Corunna*, aboard a Fleet of 90 Sail, and attended by abundance of Nobility and Gentry. The 19th at Night he came to an Anchor in the *Ile of Wight*, and landed the next day at *Southampton*.

War in Italy.

1554.
Philip
Prince of
Spain
Marries
Q. Mary of
England.

ampton. On the 25th, the Prince and Queen were solemnly Marry'd at *Winchester*. In *Flanders*, the French divided their Forces into three parts; one the Constable Commanded, which took *Marienburg*, and raz'd the Forts of *Trelon*, *Glacon*, *Simay*, and other places. The 2d, under the Duke de *la Roche-sur-Ton*, did nothing but Ravage the open Country: And the 3d, led by the Duke of *Nevers*, took *Orchimont*, *Beaurin*, *Agimont*, and *Bouvines*, places of small note, committing all manner of Cruelties. In *July* the 3 Armies join'd, making up one of above 30000 Foot, and 6000 Horse, at the Head of which the King march'd in Person, and took *Dinant*. The Duke of *Savoy* was gathering the Imperial Army near *Namur*; thither the King mov'd; and not being able to execute his Fury on the *Imperialists*, turn'd back into *Hainault*, burning and destroying all where he came: and among the rest, two stately Houses and Gardens of the Heroical Q. *Mary's*, one at *Marimont*, the other at *Bins*. Then understanding that the Duke of *Savoy* was coming to call him to an Account for these Cruelties, he march'd off, executing the like Ravages all the way he went. The Emperor came to the Camp, and pursu'd so close, that after a short dispute, he possess'd himself of a Hill the Enemy thought to have secur'd, but they understanding the Party that guarded it was not Strong, return'd upon them, and routed them, killing a considerable number. After this, the King retir'd hastily into *France*, where he dismiss'd his *Germans*, and put his other Forces into Garison. The Emperor being indispos'd, left the Command of his Army to the Duke of *Savoy*, who over-run the *French* Frontiers, doing as much Harm as they had done before; then returning, rebuilt and fortify'd *Hedin*; whence he again broke into *Picardy*, making such miserable Desolation, as out-did what the Enemies had done. It was the middle of *December* when the Duke return'd to *Cambray*, where he broke up his Army. Nothing remarkable was done in *Piemont*, neither side being Strong, only Monsieur *Brisac* the *French* General Block'd up *Valfane*, a Garison the *Spaniards* had in *Piemont*, and reduc'd it

it to great Want ; but *Gomez de Figueroa*, left by *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, who was gone to *Flanders*, to Command in those Parts, gather'd all the Forces he could out of Garifons, and Reliev'd the place.

C H A P. XXXII.

Death of the Emperors Mother and the Pope ; the War with France ; a Truce concluded for five Years: The Turks take Bugia; the Emperor resigns up all his Dominions to his Brother and Son, and retires to a Monastery in Spain.

I Will begin this Year 1555 with the Death of great Persons; the first of these was Queen *Ioanna*, Mother to the Emperor, and rightful Heir-esses to the Crown of *Spain*, but laid aside because of her Infirmity, being altogether Distracted. Her Husband, King *Philip*, Dy'd in the Year 1506, when he was 27 Years of Age, and she liv'd near 50 a Widdow, always in perfect Bodily Health, being 73 Years Old when she fell sick, and so impatient and mad, that all her Servants were quite tir'd out. A few Days before her Death she is said to have come to her self, and made a pious End. Her Family was in a miserable poor Condition, as the Marquis of *Denia*, who had the keeping of her, acquainted the Emperor, which indeed is a great Reflection upon him. She departed this Life on the 11th of *April*. This same Year on the 23d. of *March* Dy'd Pope *Julius III.* a person of singular Piety and Virtue; when he had held that Dignity five Years compleat, *Marcellus II.* a Prelate of eminent Sanctity succeeded him, but liv'd to enjoy it only 22 Days. After him was chosen *Paul IV.* a *Neapolitan*, before he was rais'd to this Dignity look'd upon as a Saint, yet afterwards, tho' he was above 80 Years of Age, he grew fierce and headstrong, promoting Leagues and raising War against the Emperor and his Son King *Philip*; the first part we shall see, the other belongs to that Princes Life. The Emperor had soon Advice from *Rome*, that this

1555.
Queen
Ioanna
Dies.

And Pope
Julius.

Pope

Pope was his Enemy, and that there were Reasons enough to call in question the validity of his Election, but His Majesty would never give ear to it, for fear of disturbing the Peace of the Church, and sent immediately to congratulate him upon his promotion,

*Actions
in Flanders
and Italy.*

2. The Diet met at *Ausburg* the beginning of this Year, where, after much debate, it was agreed, That the *Lutherans* should not be molested on account of Religion, they continuing in their Duty to the Emperor, yet no other Sect to be Tolerated. *K. Ferdinand* held this Diet, the Emperor being then very Sickly and Hypochondriack. As soon as the Spring came on the *French* Army enter'd the Low-Countries, burning and destroying all as it went. To put an end to these Evils a Treaty was set a foot, Cardinal *Pool* assisting at it in the Pope's Name as Mediator, but nothing concluded: Whereupon both sides fell again to committing their usual Ravages, and fortifying their Frontiers. *Martin Van Rosen*, the Emperor's famous General before spoken of, dy'd about this time, and *William* of *Nassau*, Prince of *Orange* succeeded him. A Body of 1500 *French* Horse, with a greater number of Foot returning home with a rich Booty, was set upon by the *Imperialists*, and most of them cut off. The Governor of *Peronne* desiring to revenge this Loss, with the greatest Force he could make enter'd the Territory of *Arras*, and drove all the Cattle, the Governor of the place being too weak to oppose him; but he of *Bapaume* having rais'd and arm'd the Country, fell upon the *French* loaded with Booty in some narrow Passes, where, hemming them in on all sides, he made a great slaughter and recover'd all the Prey. Thus the Winter put an end to all Action on that side. In *Italy* the *Marschal de Brisac* commanded the *French* Troops, and the Duke of *Alva* had succeeded *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga* in the Government of *Milan*, where these two great Commanders did nothing considerable, the Duke being forc'd to raise the Siege he had laid to *Sanian*, and the *Marschal* took some places of very small Note, as *Vulpian*, *Moncalvo*, and *Poma*. In *August* this Year 26
French

French Men of War met 24 large *Dutch* Merchants Ships richly laden, and homewards bound from *Spain*. The *Dutch*, tho' far inferior to their Enemies, fought with much Resolution, till the *French*, fearing to loose any part of their Booty, lay'd them all aboard, when being better Mann'd, there was no possibility of holding out against them. Hereupon the *Flemings* in despair, set fire to their own Powder; some were blown up, and others all in a Flame, and the *French* being close grapp'd, far'd little better, some of them being destroy'd, others happily getting loose were sav'd: Some of the Merchant Ships half burnt made their escape, five of them in the same Condition, were taken by such of the *French* as got off, and carry'd to *Diepe*; the Advantage they made of them being very little, considering the Damage they sustain'd themselves, and that the Vessels taken were half burnt; besides that, the *Flemings* had thrown all their Wealth over Board, that it might not fall into the Hands of the Enemy.

3. Both Parties being tir'd out, and their Countries exhausted with War, Plenipotenaries met at *Cambray* to treat of Peace, which could not be agreed on; but a Truce was concluded for five Years. upon hopes it might produce a more lasting Calm. It was to commence in *February* 1556 upon these Conditions, That Hostilities cease in all parts. That both parties remain possess'd of all places they have taken. That there be a free and open Trade by Sea and Land. That whosoever broke this Truce should suffer Death. That the *Neapolitan* Out laws should receive no Benefit by this Truce. That no Violence should be committed against the Lands possess'd by the Duke of *Savoy*. That no *Frenchman* should go over to the *West Indies* upon pretence of Trade, without his Imperial Majesty's leave. That *Albertus* Marquis of *Brandenburg*, should not be comprehended in this Truce. That King *Henry* of *France* should pay what was due to Queen *Eleanor*, on account of the Settlements made on her by his Father King *Francis*. Many in *Italy* did not approve of this Truce, and particularly Pope *Paul* IV. who, inflam'd with his old Passion, was no longer

A Truce
for five
Years.

longer able to carry on that outward show of Sanctity, which had so long deceiv'd the World, but taking off the Hypocritical Mask, he disturb'd the Peace, in hatred to the Emperor, exciting the King of *Franceto Conquer Naples*. Tho' this War began in the Year 1555, it does not belong to this History, because this same Year his Imperial Majesty resign'd the Low-Countries, and his Dominions in *Italy*, as he did the Empire and Crown of *Spain* at the beginning of the ensuing Year 1556, so that this War with *Paul* the IVth, is part of the History of *K. Philip* the III.

Bugia
taken by
the Turks.

4. The City *Bugia*, seated on the Coast of *Africk*, three Leagues East of *Argier*, reckned in the time of its Prosperity to have contain'd above 20000 Houses, was taken in the Year 1510, by Count *Peter Navarro*, and had continu'd ever since under the Dominion of *Spain*. At this time, *D. Alonso de Peralta* was Governor of it, when *Salarraez*, who commanded at *Argier*, laid Siege to it with a Fleet of 22 Ships by Sea, and 40000 Men by Land. At his first approach he possess'd himself of the Imperial Castle abandon'd by the Christians as not Tenable; and having batter'd the Castle on the Sea five Days, took it by Assault, there being only Forty Men in it, who behav'd themselves with much Bravery. Thence he remov'd before the great Castle, in which *D. Alonso de Peralta* was with all the rest of the Garison and Inhabitants, and batter'd it 22 Days; at the end of which time, *D. Alonso's* Heart failing, and being mov'd to Compassion for the Women and Children, he surrender'd, upon Condition the *Infidel* should find Ships, and give them all liberty to go over to *Spain*. Upon this the Place was deliver'd, but the *Turk* broke the Capitulation, making all the Prisoners Slaves, except *D. Alonso* and twenty more, who came over into *Spain*, where by the Emperor's order, he and all that advis'd him to Surrender, were secur'd; and being try'd before the Council, *D. Alonso* was condemn'd to Death. On the 4th of *May* 1556, he was taken out of the Prison at *Valladolid* all in Armour, and so led through the great Streets, a Cryer going before and proclaiming

ing his Offence, and taking off a piece of his Armour at every corner of a Street or noted place, till being thus stripp'd of it all, and come to the great Square or Market-place, he had his Head cut off there as a Traitor. This Year his Imperial Majesty appointed D. Andrew Hurtado de Mendoza, Marquis of Canete, Viceroy of Peru, which I suppose was the last preferment the Emperor bestow'd.

5. The Emperor now grown weary of the Toils of the World, and very unhealthy, resolv'd upon an Action that should out do all those Glorious exploits which have made his Life renowned to Posterity, which was freely and voluntarily to abdicate the Empire, and all other Kingdoms and Dominions, and retire himself to lead a poor and solitary Life, like the meanest Friar, as we are now about to show. To this effect he sent for his Son King Philip out of England, who accordingly repair'd to him then at Brussels, where were also assembled the States of the Low-Countries, and the Knights of the Order of the Golden Fleece, whom he acquainted with his design of resigning his Hereditary Dominions to his Son, and the Empire to his Brother Ferdinand, reserving to himself only a small sum of Money for the maintenance of his little Family. It was so Heroick an Action for a Prince so great and so fortunate, to quit such vast Dominions, that all the World was astonish'd at it. All things being regulated and the Writings drawn for the formality of the Renunciation, on the 28th of October, after hearing Mass, in the presence of the States of the Low-Countries, and Knights of the Golden Fleece, his Imperial Majesty resign'd up to his Son Philip the great Mastership, or Sovereignty of the Order of the Golden Fleece. Then he Din'd, and after Dinner went down into a great Hall, prepar'd for this Solemnity: He was in mourning for his Mother, wore the collar of the Golden Fleece, and was attended by his Son King Philip, his Sister Queen Mary, his Nephew Emanuel Philibert, Duke of Savoy, and all the Ministers of foreign Princes, and Persons of Quality at his Court. Then he sat down on a Chair, which was a little rais'd above

The form
of the Ab-
dication.

the rest, and order'd his Son, his Sister, the Duke of *Savoy*, and some *Grandeets* to sit; all the Representatives of the Country, and other Persons of Note were admitted, the Hall being big enough to contain the Company. When they were all together, *Philibert* of *Brussels*, President of the Council of *Flanders*, stood up and made a long harangue, extolling the Fidelity of the *Flemings*, declaring the Emperor's Affection to them, giving an Account of his infirm Condition, commending the Capacity of King *Philip*, declaring that his Father resign'd over to him all his Right and Sovereignty over those Countries, requiring them to receive him as their Lawful Prince, absolving them from their Allegiance to him, recommending to them to be stedfast in the Catholick Religion, and exhorting them to continue loyal to their new Sovereign King *Philip*, his Son. When he had done the Emperor stood up, leaning upon a Staff he had in his Right Hand, and laying the other upon the Shoulder of *William* of *Nassau* Prince of *Orange*, who soon after ungratefully Rebell'd against King *Philip*; in this posture he harangu'd the Assembly much to the same effect as the President had done before, mentioning his Accession to the Sovereignty of those Provinces, the Crown of *Spain* and the Empire, protesting he aspir'd not to the last through Ambition, but for the general Benefit of Christendom, complaining how the *Lutherans* and other Princes, had, through Envy and Malice, obstructed the good effect of his Designs, putting them in mind how successful he had always been, telling them he had been nine times in *Germany*, six times in *Spain*, seven times in *Italy*, ten times in the *Low-Countries*, four times in *France*, twice in *England*, and twice in *Africk*, and had for this purpose cross'd the *Mediterranean* eight times, and the *Ocean* three times; besides that time he was to go on it to return to *Spain*; That he had been most of his time employ'd in dangerous Wars, and always against his Inclination, and much more to the same purpose as the President had said before, adding, that nothing would trouble him so much as leaving of them, but that his

sur'd them, of K. *Philip's* Affection towards them, and of his resolution to maintain the Catholick Religion, and their Liberties, and so he concluded. Next Q. *Mary* took her leave of the States, begging pardon for any Mistake she might have committed in the Government, and promising ever to bear them all possible Affection. *Masius* return'd Thanks in the name of the States for her good Government, and promis'd they would not only continue Loyal, but in all things endeavour to comply with the good Advice given them in the Emperor's Name. Thus they broke up the Assembly, and on the 27th of *October* the States meeting again took the Oath of Allegiance to K. *Phillip*, and he reciprocally Swore to maintain their Laws, Liberties, and Franchises. The Emperor sign'd a solemn act of Renunciation, by which he made over to his Son, all the Dominions of the Low-Countries, absolving all his Subjects of the Oath of Allegiance they had taken to himself, and investing all the Right and Sovereignty in K. *Philip*.

Renuncia-
tion of the
Crown of
Spain.

7. Soon after, the Emperor desiring to be quite eas'd of the Weight of the Government, which lay so heavy on his Shoulders, and to seek after a better Kingdom, call'd together all his *Spanish* Servants into his Bed-Chamber, he being then a-Bed, and acquainted them with his Resolution of resigning the Kingdoms of *Spain*, as he had done the Dominions of *Flanders*, that he might end his Days in peace, thanking them for their faithful Service, and offering either to carry them over with him into *Spain*, or prefer them with his Son. They return'd Thanks; some Wept, but more study'd how they should advance their Interest with the young King. We mention'd before how the Truce was concluded with *France* for five Years, and upon what Terms, wherefore it will be needless to repeat it. But this Cessation gave his Imperial Majesty an opportunity to embark for *Spain*; for the War with the Pope did not trouble him, whilst he was not assisted by *France*, or any other powerful Prince, tho' he carry'd himself more Loosely than became his Character or Age;
lin-

Imprifoning all the Cardinals that were of the Emperor's Faction, and not only them, but *Garcilaffo de la Vega*, the Imperial Embaffador at *Rome*. On the 16th of *January* 1556, His Majesty pafs'd the Act of Renuciation of the Crown of *Spain*, and all its Dominions, to his Son *Philip*, in the prefence of *Francis de Eraffo* his Secretary, and all the *Spaniards* then at *Bruffels*. The Instrument being of too great an extent for this Book, and not material, may be feen at large in *Sandoval* Pag. 815. Vol. 2. He only referv'd to himfelf the Right of judging and determining the Cause of *D. Ferdinand Gonzaga*, which *D. Francis Pacheco de Toledo*, and *D. Bernard de Bolca*, were gone to *Milan* to Examine, fhewing the great Affection he bore that worthy Gentleman, for good Services he had done him. His Majesty writ to all the Lords, Spiritual and Temporal of *Caftile* and *Aragon*, giving them an account of all that had befallen him fince he left *Spain*, and the reasons that had obftructed his returning thither in fo many Years, which were the Wars in *Germany* and with *France*; and acquainting them, That being now Old, Sickly, and Spent, he had refolv'd to refign thofe Kingdoms to his Son, earneftly requefting of them, That they would approve of his Refolution, and be as good and loyal Subjects to his Son as they had been to him. *K. Philip* writ alfo, confirming the power his Sifter *Joanna* had from his Father and him to Govern thofe Kingdoms. When thefe Letters came to *Valladolid*, where the Court then was, with the Princefs *Joanna*, and her Son Prince *Charles*, on the 8th of *March* 1556, at five in the Evening they rais'd the Standards for *K. Philip*, which was done by Prince *Charles* in the following manner.

8. At three in the Afternoon, on the Day aforefaid, there met in the Palace, *D. Duarte de Almeida*, Manner of Proclaiming the King Embaffador of *Portugal*; *D. Anthony de Fonseca*, Prefident of the Council; the Bifhop of *Lugo*; the Duke of *Seffa*, the Admiral of the *Indies*, the Marquis of *Alondejar*, the Earl of *Tendilla*, the Earl of *Buendia*, the Earl of *Gelves*, and many other Perfons of Quality; the Courts of Juftice, the Prefident and Judges of the Court of *Chancery*, and the Contro-

lers and Auditors of the *Exchequer*. His Highness went from the Palace to the Great Square or Market-place, attended by all these Persons, two Kings at Arms going before. In the place aforesaid was a Scaffold erected, handsomely adorn'd, with a rich Canopy, and under it an Eminence lifted three Steps above the rest, with a Chair, on which the young Prince sat: The Ambassador was placed against one of the Pillars that bore up the Canopey on the Right Hand; the Prelates, Noble Men and others, below the Steps about them, and before them two Kings at Arms, and two Serjeants with their Maces. Within a little more than a quarter of an Hour came the Magistrates of the Town, bringing a Standard with the Arms of *Spain* on it, furl'd close; then the Prince stood up, and went to a Gallery there was on the Scaffold, in the middle of the place, where he caus'd the Standard to be display'd, and taking it into his Hand, with the help of *D. Anrony de Rojas*, his Tutor and Steward, he said, *Castile, Castile for King Philip our Sovereign Lord*. Immediately the *Licentiate Contreras*, His Majesty's Sollicitor General, demanded an Affidavit should be made of that Act. And then *Alonso de Santistevan*, the Town Standard Bearer, took the Standard and carry'd it, attended by all the Magistrates of the Town through all the Streets, the two Kings at Arms going before, and his Highness went away to the Pallace.

The Em-
peror in
Spain.

9. The Emperor having resolv'd upon his departure for *Spain*, before he set out sent his Brother the Authentick Instrument of Renunciation of the Empire, pass'd the 17th of *January* 1556, and carry'd by the Prince of *Orange*. There was no reserve in it, tho' an Overture had been made that King *Philip* should be appointed Vicar of the Empire in *Italy*, which King *Ferdinand* much resented. The Emperor gave the King his Son very good Advice. *Maximilian* and his Wife Queen *Mary*, came from *Austria* to take their Leaves, and having dismiss'd the Embassadors of several Princes, His Majesty went aboard a Fleet of 60 Sail, leaving King *Philip* in *Flanders*. He put to Sea in *September* and

ON

on the 28th of the same Month arriv'd at *Laredo*, very much weaken'd by his Distemper. From *Laredo* he was carry'd sometimes in a Sedan, and sometimes in a Horse-Litter. With him were his Sisters the Queens *Ellenor* and *Mary*. *D. Peter Fernandez de Velasco*, Constable of *Castile* and *Leon*, met and entertain'd them with extraordinary magnificence. At *Burgos* they were royally receiv'd and treated by the Constable and that City. Thence they proceeded on to *Torquemada*, *Duenas* and *Valladolid*, at which last place the Emperor would not permit any publick Reception to be made him, but had it put off for his Sisters the next Day. One thing very remarkable happen'd, which was, that the Emperor having had very fair Weather at Sea, that very Night after he Landed there arose such a Storm, as endanger'd the whole Fleet in the Harbour, and actually sunk the Ship he came in. He soon found himself eas'd of the pain of the Gout after he came into *Spain*, and having stay'd only ten Days at *Valladolid*, set out for the Monastery of *Juste* without any other attendance but two Physicians, two Barber Surgeons, and a few Servants, suffering no Person of Quality to bear him Company. Thus this mighty Monarch and invincible Warrior travell'd like a private Gentleman. As it is Natural for Men to vary in their Opinions in all cases, so there were some that blam'd him for quitting his Kingdoms and Dominions, after he had endur'd and gone through such prodigious Toils to defend and maintain them. But these were such as had not felt the least Spark of that Fire, which consumes the memory of Crowns and Scepters, and of all Worldly Felicities, and enflames the Heart with the desire of those Blessings and Favours Almighty God bestows on Contemplative Souls, delights that destroy the Sense of all Worldly satisfaction. It is worth observing how expeditious the Emperor was in quitting all he had; for on the 26th of *October* 1555, he resign'd the Low-Countries; on the 16th of *January* following, which was 1556, he gave up all the Dominions of *Spain*, and on the 17th of the same Month and Year, he parted with the

Empire to his Brother *Ferdinand*, reserving nothing for himself but only 12000 Ducats a Year; thus easing himself of the weight of so great a Monarchy, that he might be the lighter to pursue his Journey to Heaven.

*Hostibus evictis, hac est victoria, sese
Vincere, perduram hanc, difficilemque puta.
Hunc tamen, evicto cum sese vicerit hoste,
Victorem dixit orbis & obtinuit.*

C H A P. XXXIII.

The Monastery of Juste, where the Emperor retir'd, describ'd; His Majesty's pious and virtuous Life there, together with his holy End; and some Heads of his Last Will and Codicil.

*Description
of the Mo-
nastery of
Juste.*

I. **W**E have here a Life quite different from that we have hitherto writ, but much shorter. In the former part, we beheld the Emperor arm'd with the Glory, Wealth, and Power of the World; in order to subdue the World; here we shall see him Poor, Humble, Solitary, Sickly, and Forsaken by his own consent, the better to Conquer Heaven. His Life and Actions, during his Retirement at the Monastery of *Juste*, were writ at large by *F. Martin de Angulo*, Prior of the Place, by order of the Princess *Joanna* his Daughter; out of which long relation, we will here insert what is most remarkable and worth observing. The Monastery of *Juste* of the Monks of the Order of *S. Jerom*, to which His Imperial Majesty withdrew himself, is in a solitary but pleasant Place, seven Leagues from *Palencia*. The nearest Town, containing about 500 Houses, and call'd *Coacos*, is within a quarter of a League, and yet not seen from it, because of a Hill that rises between them. The Monastery is seated on the side of the Hill North of the Church that is above

above it; and on the South-side of the Church, close to it, was built His Majesty's Apartment, consisting of six Ground-Rooms, and six over them. The lower Floor was us'd but little; one of the upper Chambers was even with the high Altar, where a Door was made about six Foot wide, through which he heard Mass and the Divine Office, sometimes in Bed, and sometimes up; and that way they went in to give him the Blessed Sacrament. This Room was level with the new Cloister; so that His Majesty could go to the Cloister, and thence to the Garden, without stepping up or down. Upon the same Floor, was the Apartment for the Barbers, Watchmaker, and others of the Bed-Chamber. Next the Cloister, were all the Offices, all without the Monastery, of which he only borrow'd the Chapter Room to make a Buttery, another Room for the Apothecary, and the Strangers Apartment for the Physician, Brewers, and Bakers. He had also Gardens of his own, and at the end of them, a small Hermitage, whether he would Walk to divert himself, the way being all plain; for he had only a small Gelding, and an old Mule; and was not able to Ride, because of a Swimming in his Head.

The Emperor liv'd here so poorly, that only the Room he lay in was Hung, and that with some old black Cloth; he had but one Arm-Chair, so decay'd, that it would not have yielded Half a Crown if it were to be sold; his Habit was very poor, and always black. All he had of any value, was a little Plate, which was plain, and not gilt. His Life and Actions confirm'd the truth of what he declar'd to the Prior of *Guadalupe*, and to *F. Martin de Angulo*, in the presence of his Confessor, which was, That whilst the Empress was living, they had agreed, she should retire to a Nunnery, and he to a Monastery; but that she dying, he could not perform it sooner, without leaving all *Christendom* expos'd to inevitable Ruine, which yet he had perform'd, as soon as his Son was of Age and Capacity to Govern. *F. James* of *S. Peter*, his former Confessor, and a Man of singular Piety, several Years before His Majesty withdrew, told the Prior, he knew he would leave the

The Emperor's Poverty and Humility.

World,

World, could he do it with a safe Conscience. The Emperor himself further declar'd, That had his Health permitted, his design was to be a Lay Brother, or one of the meanest to Serve the Monastery, and not to be serv'd; and since his Infirmities would not permit, he chose to be so meanly attended; that he had no Physician, but he that belong'd to the Monastery, till he was prevail'd upon, by much importunity, to admit of one, and some other Servants, his Distemper still growing upon him. The Visitors of the Order coming upon their Visitation, askt him, Whether he had any Complaint, or would have any thing alter'd? To which he answer'd, Desiring of them that no Women might be suffer'd to come near the Monastery; for there being a great Famine that Year, vast Numbers flock'd thither for Relief; and therefore it was order'd, that for the future the Alms of the Monastery should be distributed in the Neighbouring Villages. When the Visitors were to depart, they begg'd leave to charge him with Four Particulars they had against him. He consented, and the oldest Visitor said, They humbly besought him, in the first place, That he would not for the future give the Fryars any extraordinary Allowance at Meals. *2dly*, That he would never give any Fryar Money upon any account whatsoever. *3dly*, That he would never intercede for any Fryar. *4thly*, That he would never prefer any Fryar. The Emperor promis'd Obedience, and afterwards declar'd he was never in his List so much afraid, as when the good old Man said he had something to lay to his charge.

3. In the spiritual Exercises of Prayer, Reading, and Meditation, he far out-did the most perfect religious Men. He said the divine Office; and if Sicknes obstructed, his Confessor said it in his presence. Upon all Holidays he heard high Mass, and every day a low Mass, tho' he were not able to rise. He had Sermons after Dinner, and when that fail'd, a Lesson read him out of *S. Augustin*. He lov'd Musick, and had an excellent Ear, yet would allow none but the Fryars to Sing in the Choir. His Zeal for Religion was so great, that being told of the apprehending

*His Piety
& Religion.*

prehending of *Caxalla* and other Hereticks, he said, *Nothing could draw him out of the Monastery, unless there were need of him to oppose them.* He never would hear the Arguments of Hereticks, saying, He was no Scholar, and therefore they might easily instil some Error into him, which would be afterwards hard to remove; and therefore when in *Germany* the Duke of *Saxony* and *Lansgrave* sent to tell him they would submit to his decision, if he would bear a Disputation, and lead their Forces against *France*, he would not consent to it. And another time, being hard pursu'd by the *Lutherans*, so that he had but six Men with him, two of those Princes met, and offer'd him their Armies should Serve him till he was Master of *Constantinople*, provided he would hear, and not suffer them to be call'd Hereticks. He answer'd, He neither coveted *France*, nor *Spain*, nor any other Dominion of the World, but only Christ Jesus, and him Crucify'd, and so he left them. *F. Francis Borgia*, who left the Dukedom of *Gandia* to become a Jesuit, coming to Visit His Imperial Majesty, after much Discourse concerning the motives that induc'd him to enter into that Order sooner than another, and the virtuous Lives of those that entred into it, the Emperor said to him, Do you remember that in the Year 1542, when we were at *Monzon*, I told you I would retire, and do as I have done? I perfectly remember it, said *F. Francis*. Be assur'd then, reply'd His Majesty, that I told none but you, and such a Gentleman, naming a Man of Quality. I was sensible of the Favour, added the Father, and therefore never spoke of it to any body; but now I hope I may. Now I have done it, you may freely talk of it, answer'd the Emperor.

Having thus given an account of the Emperor's Life, it remains that we deliver the manner of his Death. His Majesty following that pious and holy course of Life we have already mention'd in the Monastery of *Juste*, his last Hour drew on. The Gout had left him for several days, and chang'd into an Ague of another nature than what he us'd to have before, for the Cold fit lasted twice as long as the

His Death.

Hot;

Hot; whereupon he was twice Blooded; which instead of lessening, increas'd it to such a degree, that one Fit overtook another; and thus he grew weaker and weaker; and tho' he took care of his Bodily Health, following the Phisician's Prescriptions, yet he was much more solicitous for the Concerns of his Soul, confessing often, and making his Last Will and Testament, whereof we shall give some account. Being near his End, he receiv'd the Blessed Sacrament, and desir'd the Extream Unction might be given him, which was done at Night; and the Prior thinking the Ceremony, as it was us'd to the Friars, was too tedious for him, he being in some Agony, all the Penitential Psalms, Litany, and Prayers being to be said, he bid *Lewis Quixada*, who was at the Beds-head, ask whether he would have the Ceremony at length, or shortned, and he answer'd, They should Oil him like a Friar; which was done accordingly, the Emperor answering to the Psalms Verse for Verse, as the Friars did, and then he seem'd to be somewhat better. The next day he receiv'd the Blessed Sacrament again, with great Devotion, saying, *Thou remain'st in me, may I remain in thee*. That Afternoon, before he receiv'd the Extream Unction, the unfortunate Archbishop of *Toledo Carranza* came to the Monastery, but never spoke to him, tho' he saw him, and the Emperor had long desir'd to check him about some unsound Opinion he was said to maintain, but it was too late, tho' some have maliciously reflected on His Majesty, who was ever most zealous for the Catholick Faith. That night, after he had receiv'd the second time, he grew worse; and about two of the Clock the next morning, when all were very still, he said, *It is now time, give me that Candle and Crucifix*; and tho' he was so spent, that four Men with difficulty could stir him in his Bed, he turn'd upon his Side, as readily, as if he had ail'd nothing; then taking the Crucifix in one Hand, and the Candle in the other, he continu'd a while looking on the Crucifix, without speaking a word; and then, with a Voice so loud that it could be heard in the other Rooms, he said, *O Jesus!* and so gave up his Ghost

CHARLES the Vth. Emperor, &c. 261

Ghoſt to his Redeemer. It was look'd upon as ſome-thing more than natural, that at his laſt Gaſp he ſhould utter that word ſo plain and loud. He departed this Life on the 21th of *September* 1558, having liv'd 57 Years and 5 Months; having Reign'd 43. and been Emperor 38.

5. When the Emperor was Dead, his Body without embalming, for ſo he had order'd, was put into a Leaden Coffin, and that into one of Cheſnut-tree Planks, cover'd with black Velvet, ſo heavy, that ten or twelve Men had much ado to remove it. In this manner he was laid under the high Altar, the Fryars Singing the Office with abundance of Tears. Two Days after his Death, the Corregidor (of *Placentia*) came to demand his Body, but was prevail'd with to leave it there by way of Depositem, after he had caus'd it to be taken up, and both Coffins open'd, that he might ſee the Face. His Obſequies were celebrated for three Days following, the Arch-biſhop ſinging high Maſs every Day. After the three Days, all the Servants went away to *Valladolid*, except three *Flemings* left to look after ſome Goods. The Emperor's Obſequies were alſo perform'd at *Valladolid*, where *F. Francis Borgia*, once Duke of *Gandia*, Preach'd upon theſe words of the 54th Pf. and 8th Verſe, *Behold, I have gone far away flying, and remain'd in the Wilderneſs*; Extolling his Action of quitting the Empire above all the others of his Life, as it very well deſerv'd. Among other things he ſaid in Commendation of the Emperor, one was, That he had heard him ſay, He never fail'd a Day of giving ſome ſhort time to Meditation, ſince he was 21 Years of Age. Thus ended this mighty Monarch, the Greateſt the Chriſtian World has known for many Ages, and here with him I ſhould end this Hiltory, but that the falſe Notion much inſiſted upon by Ignorant Perſons, That his Laſt Will and Teſtament was ſuppreſs'd, and never ſuffer'd to be ſeen in the World for many ſcandalous Reaſons malicious Men pretend to alledge, obliges me to give ſomething of the Heads of it, tho' very ſhort, as having already outran the Bounds I preſcrib'd my ſelf. Thoſe that are curi-

ous,

The HISTORY of

rious, may see the Will and Codicil at large in our Author *Sandoval*, who had them from the Originals sign'd by the Emperor himself, and several Witnesses of the greatest Quality: I shall reduce the whole, which is very long, to a few Lines, and so conclude.

The Heads of the Emperor's Will, sign'd by him in the Year 1554, and in the presence of Perenot Bishop of Arras, William of Nassau, Prince of Orange, John Lord of Laxau, D. Lewis, de Zuniga, D. Ferdinand de la Cerda, &c.

In the Name of God, &c. After a protestation of the Catholick Faith, and bequeathing of his Soul to God, he ordains that his Body be Bury'd in the Cathedral Church of *Granada*.

Item. He orders 30000 Masses to be said for his Soul within a Year after his decease.

Item. That 30000 Ducats be given in Alms, 10000 for redemption of Captives, 10000 for marrying poor Women; and the other 10000 for such Poor as cannot Beg.

Item. That what is not yet perform'd of the Wills of his Father and Grandfather, be speedily discharg'd.

Item. That effectual care be taken for the payment of all his Debts.

That all the Revenues of the three military Orders, Charges deducted, be for nine Years after his Death, pay'd in to his Executors, and that all Grants, prejudicial to the Crown, be recall'd and made void.

That all Crown Revenues morgag'd, be, with all possible speed, redeem'd and reunited to the Crown.

That all Life Rents granted be Reassum'd as soon as the parties Die, and not continu'd for other Lives.

He charges the Prince to be zealous for the true Religion, protect and support the Inquisition, preserve the Immunities of the Church, favour Religious Orders, and ever apply himself to the well Governing of his People, that no person may be wrong'd, and Widlows, Orphans, and all other persons in distress, may be defended and upheld.

That in case such Assignments as are left to pay Debts, fall short, the Prince make up what is re-

maining out of the Revenue of the Crown, and that the poorest be paid before the rich.

That all Crown Revenues, which the necessity of the Times oblig'd him to suffer Great Men to enjoy, be restor'd to the said Crown.

That his Son, *Prince Philip*, be his Heir, and succeed him in all his Hereditary Dominions whatsoever; that his Son *Prince Charles* succeed after him; and after the said *Charles* the Heirs Male of his Body, and for want of such, the Females; and in case the said *Charles* die without Issue, then the other Children of *Prince Philip* to inherit.

And in case neither *Prince Philip* nor his Son *Charles* should have Issue, then his Daughter *Mary*, Queen of *Bohemia*, to succeed, and her Issue after her; which also failing, *Ioanna* Princess of *Portugal*, and her Children; and for want of her, *Ferdinand* King of the *Romans*, and his Line, and in default of them, his Sister, *Ellenor* Queen of *France*, after whom, the next rightful Heir to take place in due course.

That the Empreses Will be fulfill'd in distributing what she left among her Children, and the overplus to fall to *Prince Philip*.

That what shall appear to be due to his two Daughters of their Mother's Inheritance, be paid them out of the Revenue of the Crown; as also, all Debts due to Merchants, without stopping any part of the Revenues of the military Orders, which are appropriated for the payment of other Debts.

That the 30000 Ducats he leaves for Charitable Uses, be paid immediately after his decease; out of a Chest, wherein he has laid up such a sum for that use in the Castle of *Simancas*.

That if there be any overplus in the said Chest it be spent in pious uses.

That the Duke of *Alva* loose all Right to a Grant made him in *Germany*, he having exchange'd it for another in the *West Indies*.

That *Prince Philip* be not oblig'd to make any further provision, for the Emperor's Bastard Daughter, *Margaret* Dutches of *Parma*, she having already receiv'd her Dowry.

That

The HISTORY of

That Prince *Philip* take care to have it decided who has the right to the City *Plasencia*, and if it be found to belong to the See of *Rome*, restore it immediately.

That in case Prince *Philip* should Die before him, and his Son Prince *Charles* be left under Age, there be Governors appointed to manage the Affairs of *Spain* and *Italy* for him, whom His Majesty accordingly appoints.

That the Dukedom of *Milan* devolve to Prince *Philip* and his Heirs, to hold it by investiture, as a Fief of the Empire.

Lastly, he names the Executors, Administrators, and Trustees of this his last Will and Testament.

The Codicil is sign'd at the Monastery of *Juste*, on the 19th of *September* 1558, and declares,

That the aforesaid Will shall remain in full force: only the Contents of this Codicil to be perform'd by such as he shall appoint without the interposition of the Executors.

That such Hereticks as have appear'd of late in *Spain*, be punish'd with the utmost Rigor.

That whereas he order'd himself in his Will to be Bury'd at *Granada*, his Will now is, that his Body be interr'd in the Monastery of *Juste*, and the Body of his Wife, the Empress brought to it.

The rest of the Codicil runs all upon disposing of his Body, praying for his Soul, and providing for his Servants, and leaving some Gratifications to the Monastery of *Juste*, and some other Religious Persons, who had been serviceable and assisting to him whilst Living. All which Legacies being small and inconsiderable, sufficiently show to how low a State His Majesty had brought himself, that great Warrior and mighty Monarch voluntarily reducing himself to live those latter Days, and Die like a poor Fryer.

F I N I S.

Woodhay

3-3

